



# DRAGON MARKED WAR GOD

BOOK 07

*Su Yue Xi*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Dragon-Marked War God

(龙纹战神)

by

**Su Yue Xi**

(火星引力)

# Synopsis

---

The once greatest Saint underneath the heavens has been reborn after one hundred years. He cultivates with mighty skills, and he fights to once again reach the top of the world!

Don't compete with me when it comes to concocting pills, 100% effectiveness means nothing to me.

Don't compete with me when it comes to cultivation speed, I won't be responsible when you die from embarrassment.

Don't compete with me when it comes to experience, as I'm an ancient ancestor.

The existence of Jiang Chen is destined to ridicule thousands of geniuses.....

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by ares @ [Xianxiaworld](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 601 - Zuo Yi Yang

---

Before Zuo Ling Er and the rest left the monastery, every one of them felt unpleasant seeing the monastery had become a little more than a ruin, unsightly looks were on their faces, especially the monks. This was supposed to be the place to worship their master. It was destroyed just like that, there was no way they could wipe away the feeling of pain, but fortunately, the statue remained perfectly in its shape.

\*Whoosh\* \*Whoosh\*

At this time, three formidable silhouettes flew towards them from afar. Their Qi's were very powerful, it blended with the unlimited aura of fury. They were all Combat Emperors. In the lead, was a highly dignified middle-aged man, who had reached Second Grade Combat Emperor, the other two were elders First Grade Combat Emperor.

Their facial expression changed instantly after seeing the aftermath of the battle from afar.

“Who did this?!”

The middle-aged man's voice was as loud as a thunder that carried a surge of fury, and then he landed on the monastery. Everyone bowed to him at the same time, “Master.”

Without a doubt, he was the master of the Zuo family in Yuan Yang City, Zuo Yi Yang, a Second Grade Combat Emperor. After

the seal of the spatial area in the monastery was broken, they sensed the battling Qi during their time in seclusion and rushed over hastily. Then, they saw this scene. The place of battle was the place that they held their annual ceremony of worship, it had been nicely built and portrayed a calm and peaceful feeling. There hadn't been anyone who dared to come and cause trouble here. Today was the first devastating incident that happened here, in which the monastery was destroyed. In Yuan Yang City, anyone could have guessed who was involved in this by just using their toes to think, the only one who wasn't afraid of them and dared to touch the Zuo family's foundations.

“Daddy, it was the doings of the Kong family.”

Zuo Ling Er came to her father's side and said, telling him everything that happened just now, including how Jiang Chen killed Kong Yan and how he saved them. The Kong family had suffered a great loss and most casualties, only a few of them were able to escape with their tails between their legs. Zuo Ling Er didn't forget to introduce Tyrant and his identity to her father. Zuo Ling Er's age might be young, but her way of thinking wasn't so. She knew very well the position of Great Master Ran Feng in her father's heart, so Tyrant's identity would be valuable to him.

After listening to Zuo Ling Er, the fury on Zuo Yi Yang and the other two elder's faces almost exploded. They hadn't thought that the Kong family would commit such a crime just for the two disciple quota to enter Nebula Sect. Setting up an ambush on the day that the prayer ceremony was held to wipe out the entire Zuo family, especially Zuo Ling Er. It was truly a vicious attack.

Luckily nothing bad happened to Zuo Ling Er, otherwise the Zuo family would fall into a mess. A sudden fear struck them when they thought of the consequences if that happened. They started to rejoice lightly for their good fortune and their eyes were fixed on Tyrant and Jiang Chen, full of gratitude. If these two men didn't coincidentally stayed overnight in the monastery, unacceptable things would've happen.

Zuo Yi Yang calmed his emotion before approaching Tyrant, and held his two fists in front of him.

“I didn't know that a high rank disciple of Great Master Ran Feng has arrived. Our Zuo family is lucky. Great Master Ran Feng had saved my father; today, his high rank disciple saved my daughter. Such kindness...I really don't know how to repay.”

The Zuo family already had a favorable impression of Tyrant at the beginning, but now that they knew he was a disciple of Great Master Ran Feng, and had saved their master's daughter, they felt very indebted to him.

“Patriarch Zuo is overly kind. We are just passers-by. Also these people wanted to destroy my master's statue, I won't just watch and do nothing about it. However, the one who really killed Kong Yan is my good brother, Jiang Chen.”

Tyrant said. He felt delighted seeing that the Zuo family admired his master so much. He could sense it the moment he saw how furious Zuo Yi Yang was when he was told about the Kong family's intention to get rid of them. He could imagine his master was a paramount leader to them.



Zuo Yi Yang and two elders shifted their gaze to Jiang Chen. As much as they felt thankful for his help, they also felt intimidated. For so many years that they had fought in the battles against the Kong family, they knew better than the others about Kong Yan's ability. But, he was slashed into half by this young man who was only an Eighth Grade Combat King. What kind of a genius was he? Or did he possess the power of evil? If it wasn't told by Zuo Ling Er and Kong Yan's dead body as the proof, it was impossible for them to believe it.

Furthermore, the three of them somehow felt that the name 'Jiang Chen' was familiar. They were recalling about a man whose name is also Jiang Chen in Liang Province. Liang Province's size was considered a big state in Mysterious domain, so they wouldn't miss the news. Moreover, the chaotic incident was a news that anyone would desperately spread. That news was mainly related to a Combat King that had the power to initiate catastrophe. Jiang Chen's name had been spread in many other big states of the Mysterious domain as well.

"Daddy, big brother is the hybrid devil of Liang Province...oh... no, it should be the scary genius of Liang Province."

After Zuo Ling Er finished saying, she saw Jiang Chen stuck out his tongue. Jiang Chen was speechless. His name wasn't that good after all, even a little girl knew that he was a devil and a hybrid devil at that.

"What? You are that 'Jiang Chen', the Combat King who can cause disaster and kill Combat Emperors?"



Zuo Yi Yang's impression of Jiang Chen changed. The same went to the two elders. They heard a lot of rumors related to Jiang Chen roaming outside, but the Jiang Chen standing in front of them was a remarkable event since they might not have the chance to meet him in a lifetime. They foresaw that his future would be limitless.

“It's a pleasure to meet you, Patriarch Zuo.”

Jiang Chen greeted Zuo Yi Yang with both fists.

“Brother Jiang Chen is an extraordinary talent. It is my honor to be able to meet brother Jiang. If it wasn't for your help, my daughter would be in danger. The whole Zuo family is greatly indebted to you.”

Zuo Yi Yang said solemnly, completely removing his air of a proud patriarch and treating Jiang Chen nicely as if he was his peer, like they were of the same social status. Despite the fact that he was a Second Grade Combat Emperor, he didn't look down on Jiang Chen. In his eyes, Jiang Chen wasn't an ordinary Eighth Grade Combat King. He could easily kill Kong Yan, which suggested that he might possess the ability of a Second Grade Combat Emperor. The element that had gained Zuo Yi Yang's respect the most was Jiang Chen's power.

“Daddy, big brother and I hit it off when we first met. We have become sworn brothers and sisters. You called big brother as your brother. Does that mean I should call you brother as well? Wouldn't that mix up the formal address in our family tree?”

Zuo Ling Er said it in a serious tone.

Jiang Chen staggered to his feet after hearing what she just said and everyone just rolled their eyes. This little girl had many patterns of expressions, which made everyone speechless. Jiang Chen was mostly overwhelmed by the feeling of speechlessness. No one witnessed him and Ling Er underwent any process of becoming sworn brothers and sisters, he knew that in his heart. Now, he had the feeling that he had just adopted a little sister.

Zuo Yi Yang burst into a stern fatherly mode, “Adults are talking. Go outside and play.”

After that he turned to Jiang Chen, “I have spoilt my child, she is rude and discourteous. This is shameful, please forgive her.”

“Never mind. Ling Er and I hit it off since we met and she was determined to call me ‘big brother.’ I think I will have to accept her as my little sister.”

Jiang Chen smiled. This little girl was peculiar but lovely.

“Haha...It is good that she has a brother like you. It is my daughter’s honor.”

Zuo Yi Yang laughed. He wasn’t stupid, he could see that Jiang Chen was an outstanding person amongst the others. Although Zuo Ling Er was also a gifted child, the distinction between the two

of them was obvious. A man like Jiang Chen was going to obtain a phenomenal power sooner or later. It wouldn't be a bad thing for his Zuo family to build a relationship with him.

“Patriarch, this monastery is destroyed. We better build it as quick as possible.”

One of Zuo family's elder said.

Zuo Yi Yang scanned the surrounding, his facial expression signified his concern. He strode towards Great Master Ran Feng's statue and knelt down. The rest of the Zuo family members followed him, including the monks. Tyrant wouldn't kneel down even in front of heaven or earth like any ordinary cultivator. He had sworn to kneel down to his master only, thus he also followed them and knelt down.

Only Jiang Chen and Big Yellow didn't kneel down in the hall. Jiang Chen wouldn't do that, he was afraid that Great Master Ran Feng couldn't accept his worship. Jiang Chen would kneel down before no one in this world except Jiang Zhen Hai.

As for Big Yellow, he was a heartless being. It would be impossible to ask him to worship even a Great Master. He was proud of himself, since he is a dragon-horse.

“The monastery is destroyed, but the statue of Great Master Ran Feng is still here. The Prayer Ceremony will still continue!”

Zuo Yi Yang's tone was solemn and pious. He led the rest of them to kneel down.

The prayer ceremony ended a few minutes later, then they all stood up. The Zuo family members didn't feel offended when Jiang Chen didn't follow them to kneel down. Since he was not a member of the Zuo family, it was unnecessary for him to follow the rules.

“Reconstruct the monastery immediately to its previous state, repair the statue of Great Master Ran Feng. I will just give you all one-day's time. I want to see an undamaged and perfect monastery again.”

Zuo Yi Yang ordered.

“Yes, Patriarch.”

A Ninth Grade Combat King of the Zuo family quickly responded. To the Zuo family, restoring the monastery to its previous state was an easy task.

“Patriarch, today we have lost a monastery, but the Kong family has lost a lot of men, including a Combat Emperor. Kong Yang will not let this go.”

The elder Combat Emperor of the Zuo family frowned.

“Correct. Firstly, they wanted to eliminate Ling Er this time.

Secondly, they wanted to acquire the two disciple quota to enter Nebula Sect. Both of their plans have failed. Kong Yang will not let go of this, I'm afraid that a war will happen very soon."

Another elder spoke.

"Humph, if a war really started, we, the Zuo family, will not fear them. We will return first, and wait and see what Kong Yang will do."

Zuo Yi Yang made a cold humph, but Jiang Chen could sense a slight fear in his tone. It seemed that Kong Yang wasn't an ordinary person to deal with.

"Big brother, you have promised me that you will follow me back to the Zuo family right?"

Zuo Ling Er was holding Jiang Chen's forearm, she feared that he would break his promise.

"Don't worry, big brother has promised you that I will go."

Jiang Chen smiled and patted her head gently.

Later, they left Ran Feng monastery, flying towards Yuan Yang City.

"Little Chen, I imagine that the reason you promised to pay the

Zuo family a visit is for the two disciple quota of Nebula Sect?”

On their way back, Big Yellow talked to Jiang Chen using the True Qi transmission. He knew Jiang Chen too well, this dude was going to Nebula Sect. How could he miss this opportunity?

# Chapter 602 - Kong Yang's Declaration Of Battle

---

“Act according to the situation. We must obtain the disciple quota from the Kong family.”

Jiang Chen revealed a plain smile. Anyway, it was impossible to stop the continuous battle between the Kong family and Zuo family. Therefore, it would be a waste to let go of the Kong family's disciple spot for Nebula Sect. The answer on how to achieve it was to act according to situation.

Yuan Yang City, Kong family.

As one of the two major powers in Yuan Yang City, the Kong family wasn't comparable to a minor power, such as Invincible Sect and Peerless Sword Faction in Liang Province. Yuan Yang City was a large city in Yu Province. However, the Kong family's influence wasn't as strong as the major power in Yu Province, but it was powerful enough to dominate Yuan Yang City as they had a Second Grade Combat Emperor in place.

The Kong family's territory was located at the north of Yuan Yang City, the territory was large, it had a ten miles radius. Every building of the Kong family was projecting the Qi of a high social class.

At this moment, the Kong family was having a meeting in the main hall, the atmosphere was dull. A middle-age man in fiery red clothes sat on a chair that seemed like a throne. His eyebrows were



sharp, eyes as ferocious as a tiger. Everyone could feel his extraordinary Qi, he was born with a body of grandeur. A faint glow of fiery light was flashing on his red hair, dazzling people's eyes.

Due to his anger, a plain fiery light was starting to glow on his body, increasing the temperature in the main hall. Below him, on the left and right side were two rows of people sitting. There was an elder, a First Grade Combat Emperor sitting on his left side.

The redhead wasn't a nobody, he was the Kong family's master, Kong Yang. It went without saying that he had cultivated skills and combat arts of fire properties, the Qi of fire in his body was dominant.

The dull atmosphere in the main hall was added with silence. Everybody was paying attention to Kong Yang and was afraid to speak due to the failure of the plan. Those who escaped had brought the latest news. There wasn't any reason for Kong Yang to not be angry. Luckily, most of the Combat Kings were hired, they weren't Kong family's people. So, the Kong family only lost a First Grade Combat Emperor and a few Combat Kings.

However, losing a Combat Emperor was very unpleasant, a hundred Combat Kings might not be able to replace a Combat Emperor. In the battle, a Combat Emperor was the pillar of the army, its leader. This had dealt a huge blow to the Kong family .

“This is hateful. The plan was supposed to be flawless, the young genius of the Zuo family would've died, but it was interrupted by Jiang Chen.”

A Combat Emperor elder slammed the table using his palm, breaking it into pieces.

“This man caused the Liang Province to descend into chaos, now he is in Yu Province. The place where he goes will never be peaceful. He killed our Combat Emperor, we cannot allow this matter to be left unsettled.”

“Exactly, if it wasn’t for his interference, our plan wouldn’t have failed and our loss wouldn’t be this big. But, this guy is a rare genius. I heard that he could activate the power of evil even if he was only at the Combat King realm, allowing him to kill Combat Emperors. It seems that he is hard to deal with.”

“What are you afraid of? That’s right, he can kill a First Grade Combat Emperor, but he is just a Combat King. How can he possibly fight a Second Grade Combat Emperor? Master’s Heavenly Fire Art has achieved the flame origin of a Fiery Violent Python Beast. Now, he has reached a scary level where he is at the peak of the Second Grade Combat Emperor. His Heavenly Fire Art is enough to fight an ordinary Third Grade Combat Emperor. Jiang Chen’s life is under his hands now.”

.....

The members of the Kong family were all in the state of indignity, itching to take revenge on the murderer.

“We must kill Jiang Chen to avenge Kong Yan. However, the

urgent matter now is the recruitment of Nebula Sect. Our Yuan Yang City is only given a two disciple quota. Two eligible candidates must be selected in ten days time, after that, an emissary of the Nebula Sect will come to bring them back. This is a good opportunity for our Kong family. These two disciple quotas must be in our hands. If that little devil gets to be one of the candidates, our Kong family will have a tough time ahead.”

Kong Yang was a cool-headed person, he was able to get his anger under control because he knew what mattered the most. He was very clear about Zuo Ling Er’s talent. Should she enter Nebula Sect, she would be nurtured extensively given her natural-born ability, giving her unlimited resources for cultivation. The Kong family would be done when she grew up, and Kong Yang wouldn’t allow this tragedy to happen. Therefore, getting the two disciple quotas was of utmost importance.

“You are right, Kong Yan is dead. If these two spots slips away, our loss will be considerable. And, Jiang Chen must die, but we must focus on the discipleship first.”

The elder Combat Emperor said.

“The normal process of selecting an eligible candidate will be: each family is only allowed to have one representative. The young generation of each family will battle against each other to determine the winner. But, Zuo Ling Er’s physique is special and already reached the Ninth Grade Combat King. Our younger generations are no match for her in a fight. I’m afraid that we may not even get one spot of discipleship in the Nebula Sect.”

One of them frowned. Zuo Ling Er was only twelve years old, which was why she was a rare genius. A twelve year old genius plus an extraordinary physique were the things that the Kong family's younger generation didn't have.

If the Kong family chose not to battle, their family would be able to at least have a spot for the discipleship. But if a battle was chosen, they would definitely lose their spot.

"I know but I have my plans. When I return, I will write a letter of battle to Zuo family. This time I will be the one to fight the battle. As long as they can defeat me, the two spots for the discipleship will be theirs. If no one can, the spots will be ours."

Kong Yang chuckled.

"This idea is pretty good. The Patriarch has reached the peak of Second Grade Combat Emperor. Even though Zuo Yi Yang has also achieved that, our patriarch's cultivation of Heavenly Fire Art has obtained the Fiery Violent Python Beast, which is very terrifying. Also, our Patriarch is the only one who possesses this ability in Yuan Yang City. Thus, Zuo Yi Yang is not his opponent."

Another man said. They weren't confident for their younger generations but their confidence on their Patriarch was bursting.

"However, Zuo Yi Yang isn't an idiot. If he knows that he is no match for Patriarch, he will refuse to accept the challenge."

The elder Combat Emperor said.

“Humph, this is not up to him to decide. If he refused to battle, I will declare war on Zuo family, forcing them out of Yuan Yang City.”

Kong Yang clenched his fist and the joints of his fingers cracked, his eyes shot out two beams of fiery light.

Everyone looked terrified. If war was declared, both families would suffer great losses. Even though Kong Yang could defeat Zuo Yi Yang, he wasn't a simple enemy to deal with. It was difficult to get rid of him as their overall strengths and power were almost equal. This explained why only these two families could be the strongest in Yuan Yang City. Even if the Kong family succeeded in eliminating the Zuo family, their overall force would be severely damaged. This was also why a life and death war was not initiated for so long as no one could bear the consequences.

“We will fight. If they refused to battle, we will declare war on them. Kong Yan can't die for nothing, this is something that we cannot swallow.”

A man said. If the war was started, the Zuo family should be the one to cower because Kong Yang was the greatest fighter in Yuan Yang City.

.....

A hostile atmosphere filled Yuan Yang City after the news of the destruction of Ran Feng monastery, including the death of Kong Yan, were spread. Everybody was bubbling with tense emotions, they anticipated that something bad was about to happen. Even though there had been battles between these two families, but the battle this time was especially intense. It involved a lot of casualties that had never happened before and the destruction of the Zuo family's most respected asset, Ran Feng monastery.

“Do you know that, the murderer of Kong Yan is the Jiang Chen from Liang Province?”

"Yah, I heard about it already. I never thought a devil would come to our Yu Province. He only arrived recently, and yet he's already killed one of the Kong family's Combat Emperors. He's a real twisted one, turning everything upside down like that."

“We'll see. Kong Yang won't do nothing about this. This is a big matter and it involved the matter of the discipleship of Nebula Sect. The two families will fight again.”

“I heard that Jiang Chen had initiated a disaster before. They said that he is the devil of devils that could kill a Combat Emperor even if he is only in the Combat King realm. He is really not an easy opponent to face.”

“The Patriarch of the Kong family is the strongest in Yuan Yang City. Even Zuo Yi Yang isn't confident enough to defeat him. Jiang Chen may be able to kill a First Grade Combat Emperor, but he is still in the Combat King realm, he is no match for Kong Yang.”

.....

Gossips and arguments had drowned any other noises. Jiang Chen became the main topic of the gossips everywhere he went to, it was difficult for him to avoid this as whatever he did was going to arouse everyone's attention.

The territory of the Zuo family was located at the south of Yuan Yang City, the exact opposite of the Kong family. After Zuo Yi Yang, Jiang Chen and the rest returned from Ran Feng monastery, they sat down in the main hall to have their small talks. Suddenly, a member of the Zuo family came in hastily, there was a golden spiritual talisman in his hand.

“What is flustering you?”

Zuo Yi Yang frowned.

“Patriarch, this is a letter of battle sent by Kong family.”

That person didn't attempt to make any delays, quickly passing the letter to Zuo Yi Yang once he got it. The word 'letter of battle' created a tense atmosphere, everyone turned their eyes to the talisman.

Zuo Yi Yang made a holy chant to it, the talisman instantly turned into a golden light and disappeared. His face turned ugly.



“Daddy, what’s wrong?”

Zuo Ling Er asked.

“Kong Yang wants to challenge our family. The battle will be held at the central square in Yuan Yang City three days later. In this battle, we will compete for the spots of discipleship of Nebula Sect.”

Zuo Yi Yang’s face looked unpleasant. He knew his enemy too well. This move indicated that Kong Yang would do anything to get the discipleship no matter what.

“It is unlikely that we accept his challenge.”

Someone said.

“Kong Yang said that if nobody dared to appear in the battlefield, he will declare war on Zuo family, forcing us out of Yuan Yang City and seeking revenge on Kong Yan’s murderer.”

Zuo Yi Yang revealed a bitter smile. He didn’t think that Kong Yang was kidding because the discipleship was imperative for the two families.

# Chapter 603 - Asking Him Personally

---

“What?!”

Anger permeated the air all over the main hall. Kong Yang was determined to eliminate the Zuo family.

“Furthermore, the content of the letter has been spread all over Yuan Yang City. If we refuse to battle, our reputation will suffer, and our Zuo family will become a laughingstock. This old man is really good at planning. He has spent a lot of effort just to gain the two spots for the discipleship.”

Zuo Yi Yan’s eyebrows furrowed. Either of the options would bring disadvantages to them. If they chose the first option, they would lose the battle. There is only a twenty percent chance of success and this would give the Kong family two spots for the discipleship of Nebula Sect, which would allow his younger generations to advance their grades and powers drastically within a few years. At the time, the Zuo family would no longer be able to defend their territory. The second option of not participating in the battle cause everyone to look down and mock them. Zuo Yi Yang wouldn’t want to take the Zuo family’s lives for granted, he couldn’t bear the burden.

For a moment, the atmosphere of the main hall had fallen into silence again. They were not idiots, they knew very clearly their strengths, even if they were not the head of the family. The Zuo family had to accept this battle, even if it meant losing the two spots discipleship of Nebula Sect. Although it would be very unfavorable for them in the upcoming few years, it would still be

better than having a war with the Kong family. The news of this battle had been spread to almost everyone in Yuan Yang City. Should the war be declared, many of them would stand on the Kong family's side. They would be placed in a very disadvantageous position, and this was what the members of Zuo family didn't hope to happen.

“Is that Kong Yang really good? What's so special about him?”

A voice that broke the silence came from somewhere in the main hall. It wasn't anyone from the Zou Family, it was Jiang Chen. To him, it was a golden chance.

Everyone shifted their gaze onto Jiang Chen. No one would dare to neglect him after knowing his identity and ability, plus he was now the benefactor of the Zuo family.

“Brother Jiang. Although Kong Yang and I have fought many battles all these years, I have to say, he is very fierce. His cultivation of the Heavenly Fire Art has reached the purest skill of fire properties, it is peerless. Not long ago, he acquired the fire of the Fiery Violent Python Beast's fire of origin. If I were to fight him, my chance of success will be lesser than twenty percent.”

Zuo Yi Yang shook his head and smiled bitterly. He wasn't simply using his enemy's morale to extinguish his own. He was very sincere when expressing his opinions, he didn't dare to joke around given that his decision would decide their fates.

“Pure skill of fire properties?”

Jiang Chen revealed a smile on his face. If that was the case, it just matched his wish.

“Kaka, seeing all of your melancholic faces, let me explain to you all. That letter didn’t mention that it must be a member of the Zuo family or specifically Zuo Yi Yang to fight the battle. You can ask for our brother, Jiang Chen, to join the battle then it should be done, isn’t it?”

Big Yellow laughed ‘wakaka’ after finishing his words. He was very certain about Jiang Chen’s ability. With his current power of an Eighth Grade Combat King, it was enough to fight an ordinary Second Grade Combat Emperor. Of course, Kong Yang was better than any ordinary Combat Emperor, but the bad thing for him was that his skills were of fire properties. Jiang Chen had obtained the Heavenly Earth Pure Water. His Water Dragon Seal would fully restrain Kong Yang’s Heavenly Fire Art, like the demons who were completely vulnerable under holy swords.

“What?!”

Everyone was petrified and stared at Jiang Chen inconceivably, but shook their heads afterwards. He was a matchless genius that could kill a First Grade Combat Emperor, but Kong Yang wasn’t an ordinary Combat Emperor. Even Zuo Yi Yang was no match for him, how could they expect Jiang Chen to do it? If they allowed him to fight the battle, it would really be a ridicule for the outsiders.

“Yeah daddy! You are not Kong Yang’s opponent anyway. Big Brother is a remarkable genius. If he represents our Zuo family to fight the battle, he will beat him up and eventually defeat him.”

Zuo Ling Er was very pleased. She didn’t know this big brother of her very much, but she was very confident about his ability, especially after she saw how he killed Kong Yan. She really thought that this big brother was invincible, attractive and handsome.

“Ling Er, don’t cause disturbance again.”

Zuo Yi Yang angrily glanced at Zuo Ling Er.

“These are Zuo family’s matter. I am an outsider and I don’t want to be of any inconvenience in the meeting. I will get some rest for the time being.”

Jiang Chen held his fists at Zuo Yi Yang, then turned and walked towards the exit of the main hall. Big Yellow quickly followed him, the last was Tyrant. Before Tyrant left, he turned to Zuo Yi Yang.

“Patriarch Zuo, let me give you a piece of advice. To get through this crisis, Jiang Chen’s involvement is critical. I don’t give false advice, now that he has left the main hall, the only way to get him back in is to ask him in person.”

Tyrant turned and left. His words was true and firm. Given the situation that the Zuo family have, only Jiang Chen could fight

Kong Yang.

“Erm...”

Zuo Yi Yang frowned. The monk was Great Master Ran Feng’s disciple. He believed that his advice wouldn’t harm the Zuo family.

“Daddy, all of you are doubting big brother’s ability, he must have gotten angry.”

Zuo Ling Er’s small lips pouted.

“Patriarch’s daughter, this matter is related to the life and death of our Zuo family, how can we simply assign an outsider as our representative?”

“I agree, even if Jiang Chen is a genius, he is just an Eighth Grade Combat King. How can he possibly defeat the scary Kong Yang?”

“That’s right, young men are always proud of themselves. They don’t know how scary the power of Kong Yang is. Letting him fight the battle will result in losing the two spots discipleship of Nebula Sect that is very important to Ling Er. Without a doubt, Ling Er will grow drastically once she enters Nebula Sect given her rare ability.”

.....

Most of them said, disagreeing that Jiang Chen should be the one to fight the battle. Although Jiang Chen had rescued Zuo Ling Er, that was an entirely different case than the current situation.

“You all have discussed for so long. So are you all able to find the perfect candidate now? My daddy can’t join the battle. Even if he does, he will lose, so is our spot for the discipleship.”

Zuo Ling Er’s statement made everyone shut up instantly. She was absolutely right. It was certain that the Zuo family wouldn’t find a perfect candidate for the battle. If this was the case, the conclusion would be the same even if Jiang Chen lost the battle.

Zuo Ling Er kept her small lips pouting while walking out of the main hall. She was going to find Jiang Chen. Zuo family had already prepared the bedroom for him in another compound. She knew where he was, and was heading to his room.

A dull atmosphere once again filled the main hall, as though all of them were at their wits’ end.

“Why not let Jiang Chen fight?”

One of the elder Combat Emperor suggested. The others sighed but didn’t speak.

“It seems like we are running out of options. That little master is the disciple of Great Master Ran Feng. He won’t do something that will harm us. He said that the only way to survive this crisis is to



depend on Jiang Chen's help. Beside, even if he loses, the conclusion will still be the same."

Another elder Combat Emperor said. Now is not the time for hesitation.

"But, the Zuo family is a dignified family. We can't actually assign a Combat King to fight the battle. He is also an outsider. Won't this decision make everyone laugh their teeth off? If he wins, it will be our glory. But if he loses, we will be looked down upon, throwing all of our fame and dignity away."

"That's true, honestly, can an Eighth Grade Combat King defeat Kong Yang?"

Someone was still unconvinced about Jiang Chen's participation, thinking that it was absurd to ask an Eighth Grade Combat King to fight.

"Patriarch, what do you think?"

One member faced Zuo Yi Yang.

"Just now before Jiang Chen left, his face was full of confidence, saying that he could deal with Kong Yan completely. If he wasn't, he should've declined Big Yellow's comment on the spot because he isn't an arrogant man. He has just killed Kong Yan, if he confronts Kong Yang, what would all of you think will happen?"

Zuo Yi Yang said.

“Kong Yang will definitely want to eat him alive. If the two of them are fighting, Kong Yang will certainly kill him.”

Someone said.

“You are right, Will Jiang Chen not understand about this point? He won’t simply put his own life at risk. He is a heaven defying genius. Perhaps he has extraordinary methods of fighting. I think letting Jiang Chen fight for us, no matter if he wins or loses, we should take the chance.”

Zuo Yi Yang gritted his teeth and said. He had decided to let Jiang Chen fight. He had no other option. There wasn’t anyone, including him, in Zuo family that would be able to fight Kong Yang. To gain the spots discipleship, he had to try and let Jiang Chen do it.

The others weren’t talking, trying to hide their reluctant agreement, but they all knew that what Zuo Yi Yang said was true. There was no way other than taking the chance.

It was quiet and serene inside the compound of the Zuo family. Jiang Chen, Tyrant and Big Yellow were sitting around the table with a pot of rice wine on it. They were drinking heartily while Zuo Ling Er was standing at the side, watching them.

“Big brother, can you really defeat Kong Yang?”

Zuo Ling Er's watery big eyes were staring attentively at Jiang Chen.

"Little girl, your big brother will definitely beat him until he becomes a dead dog, bah! A dead pig."

Big Yellow said.

"Big brother, can you fight for our Zuo family in this battle?"

The little girl squatted down a little and began pulling Jiang Chen's sleeve like a spoiled child.

"Little girl, regarding this matter, you don't have to worry."

Jiang Chen smiled.

"How can I not worry? This is going to cost us our lives."

Zuo Ling Er replied hastily.

"Ling Er, you should ask your dad and those elders to come here and ask Jiang Chen personally, perhaps he will promise you when he finds your sincerity."

Tyrant said.

“Okay, I will bring my daddy and the others here. I trust my big brother will defeat Kong Yang.”

Zuo Ling Er didn't know where her confidence for Jiang Chen's ability had come from, but she knew that Tyrant's advice was correct. The only way to get through this crisis was to get Jiang Chen's help.

In the main hall, everyone was still there. Zuo Ling Er rushed in, “Daddy, big brother said he knew how to defeat Kong Yang and big brother Tyrant said we need big brother's help to get through this crisis.”

“Ling Er, we have decided, we will let Jiang Chen fight the battle. Quick, go and invite him again to this hall.”

Zuo Yi Yang said.

“Why didn't you all stop him when he was leaving? Big brother Tyrant just said, Jiang Chen will only promise to fight for us if you all go and ask him personally.”

Zuo Ling Er pouted and said. But she was delighted that her daddy had agreed to let Jiang Chen fight the battle. Before that, she was afraid that these old men were too stubborn to accept the truth and in the end causing big brother to leave angrily. And at the time, the Zuo family would be over.

# Chapter 604 - The Conditions Of The Battle

---

“What? He wants us to ask him to fight the battle personally? Isn’t he too presumptuous?”

Some of them were very dissatisfied. Letting an outsider to fight their battle was already a shameful act, now they had to go and ask for the outsider personally, which was virtually lowering their standards in the Yuan Yang City.

“Fine. We are seeking for his help anyway.”

Zuo Yi Yang stood up from his seat, followed by the two Combat Emperors, they walked out of the main hall. They didn’t feel unhappy because they had to go and ask for Jiang Chen’s help personally. They felt the exact opposite. The prouder Jiang Chen was, the happier they were, because that showed Jiang Chen was really confident on defeating Kong Yang. Jiang Chen wouldn’t act high and mighty if he wasn’t.

All geniuses were proud, plus Jiang Chen was not an ordinary genius. The Zuo family had offended him, so they had to go there and ask him personally for his help as they couldn’t get a suitable candidate to deal with Kong Yang. They had to take this chance, putting all of their hopes on Jiang Chen’s shoulder.

Despite the fact that some of the elders were dissatisfied with the request, they still followed to the compound where Jiang Chen stayed at. Three Combat Emperors had already made their way to Jiang Chen, there wasn’t any better reason for their refusal

anymore.

Meanwhile, in the compound, Jiang Chen and two of his friends were enjoying their drink heartily, their faces look comfortable and happy.

“Little Chen, do you think they will come and ask for your help personally?”

Tyrant asked.

“Do you think they have any other choice other than asking for my help?”

Jiang Chen grinned. There is always a look of confidence on his face, always getting every element of the situation under his control, as though there was nothing that he couldn't solve in front of him. He was a man of great charm that could impress and attract people.

“Don't worry, Zuo Yi Yan isn't a fool. Even if he is not confident that Jiang Chen could defeat Kong Yang, he has to at least give try. It is because there is really no one else besides Jiang Chen that can face that fiery monster.”

Big Yellow was carrying the pot of rice wine on his chest while drinking it, and talked.

“Big Brother!”

As soon as Big Yellow's voice faded, a little girl's voice resounded from outside the compound. The little girl was fast, approaching them in an instant. Her pleasant facial expression was enough to tell them that the members of the Zuo family were coming over to ask for Jiang Chen's help personally.

Very soon, her arrival was followed by a group of people. The first three leading the group were all Combat Emperors. They had all come to show their sincerity.

“Brother Jiang. The Zuo family have been rude to you. Please forgive us.”

Zuo Yi Yang looked at Jiang Chen from a distance and held up both of his fists, feeling ashamed.

“Patriarch Zuo is overly concerned. Why would I mind about that? It was the matter of Zuo family, I, as an outsider shouldn't take part in the meeting.”

Jiang Chen said in a serious tone. Tyrant and Big Yellow didn't know why seeing Jiang Chen's face now was even more shameless than theirs. This dude had his ulterior motive for his action, but he was able to control it so well, hiding it in front of everyone.

“Brother Jiang, I imagine you are already informed about the crisis that our Zuo family is in right now. I will stop beating around the bush and tell you that we hoped that brother Jiang will represent our Zuo family to fight the battle. It doesn't matter how



the battle ends, we will reward you for whatever you did.”

Zuo Yi Yang went straight to the point. He knew that Jiang Chen was a smart person, speaking the points directly was the best way to get the message across.

“I am merely an Eighth Grade Combat King. Although I am able to kill a First Grade Combat Emperor, facing such a strong competitor like Kong Yang, I don’t have much assurance.”

Jiang Chen shook his head, pretending to be in a difficult situation. Tyrant and Big Yellow were starting to hate his stupid act, it was too shameless. It gave them the urge to charge at him and mark his face with their seven-foot sized footprint.

“Big brother, if you don’t fight the battle, then my daddy has to fight the battle. If my daddy lost to Kong Yang, the status of our Zuo family in Yuan Yang City will drop, plus the two spots for the discipleship would be stolen away by them. When the time comes that the Kong family has grown to a powerful level because of the advances in grades of their younger generations in Nebula Sect, our Zuo family would be finished. Big brother...”

Zuo Ling Er was pulling Jiang Chen’s arm, swaying, trying to convince him by acting like a spoiled child asking for her daddy to buy her an ice-cream.

“I know that Brother Jiang must have ways to defeat Kong Yang. As long as brother Jiang volunteer to fight the battle, I will promise you anything.”

Zuo Yi Yang said. He could only wager now, putting all his stakes on Jiang Chen.

“Okay, little sister, don’t sway me anymore, you are going to shake my arm apart.”

Jiang Chen rolled his eyes and stood up.

“Big brother you have promised us.”

Zuo Ling Er bounced as high as she could from the ground.

“Patriarch Zuo, I can fight for the Zuo family and assure you that I can defeat Kong Yang. I have never told a lie. Kong Yang is powerful, but fighting me is his bad luck. After I have killed him, Yuan Yang City will be under your Zuo family’s domination.”

Jiang Chen said it thoughtfully.

“What? You can kill Kong Yang?”

The elders of the Zuo family exclaimed in unison, as if they had seen a ghost. Zuo Yi Yang was also stunned. Hoping Jiang Chen to at least defeat Kong Yang was already their ultimate hope, no one expected that Jiang Chen would say that he could kill Kong Yang.

“Say nothing about killing Kong Yang, if you are able to defeat

him, it is good enough and, we, the Zuo family will be indebted to you.”

Zuo Yi Yang quickly held both his fists after speaking. In truth, he didn't believe that Jiang Chen could kill Kong Yang, but he was confident that Jiang Chen wasn't a liar, he should have some kind of ways to defeat Kong Yang.

“But there is a condition.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Please say brother Jiang.”

Zuo Yi Yang asked, now that they were facing a crisis that controlled their lives and death, he would promise it even it was a big condition.

“After I kill Kong Yang, I want a spot for the discipleship of Nebula Sect.”

Jiang Chen said. This had been his intention in coming to Yuan Yang City. In his battle against Kong Yang, he would utilize all his strength to kill him although it wouldn't be easy. Plus he had murdered Kong Yan, Kong Yang had to be resenting him very much. So he thought if that was the case, he had to dig up the roots of the weeds, not leaving in a bit of it to survival This had always been his method.

Zuo Yi Yang was petrified, along with the others. It was not under their expectations that Jiang Chen would make such a request. This condition wouldn't do their Zuo family any harm. Firstly, if Jiang Chen failed to defeat Kong Yang, their Zuo family wouldn't even get a spot. Secondly, if Jiang Chen successfully defeated Kong Yang, their Zuo family would be able to keep their foothold in Yuan Yang City and the two spots for the discipleship of Nebula Sect. They would still have a spot after giving Jiang Chen one.

The Zuo family's only hope was on Zuo Ling Er, so getting her in the Nebula Sect was very crucial. Whatever discipleship spot that was left wouldn't make a lot of difference, so they were willing to give it to Jiang Chen. And, if Jiang Chen and Zuo Ling Er entered the Nebula Sect together, Jiang Chen, as her big brother, would take care of her, who was only twelve years old and still a kid and that was of a great concern for her daddy.

These facts were clear to not only Zuo Yi Yang, but to every member of the Zuo family. The benefits of Jiang Chen entering the Nebula Sect were never less.

“Alright, if brother Jiang can kill Kong Yang, the extra spot will be yours. Having you and my daughter enter the Nebula Sect together will put my mind at ease.”

Zuo Yi Yang accepted his condition.

“Wow, this is fantastic, I want to go to Nebula Sect with big brother.”

Ling Er bounced repeatedly and happily, as if Jiang Chen had already defeated Kong Yang.

“Brother Jiang, the battle will commence after three days. If brother Jiang needs preparation please say it, we will try our best to provide you any support.”

Zuo Yi Yang said.

“No preparation and support are needed, I will fight the battle after three days.”

Jiang Chen responded without hesitation. He didn't have even an ounce of fear in fighting Kong Yang. If his opponent was Zuo Yi Yang, it would be the opposite. He wouldn't stand a chance as he was only an Eighth Grade Combat King. Kong Yang was much easier to confront because his Water Dragon Seal could completely confine the fiery skills of Kong Yang, making him vulnerable and weak. The strong attribute of the Heavenly Earth Pure Water was deadly to any fire enemy.

“In that case you can rest here during the three days, I will give orders that no one is allowed to come and disturb you.”

Zuo Yi Yang said before leading the Zuo family members out of the compound. The only Zuo family member left was Zuo Ling Er. She had become a plaster of a dog, impossible to get rid of without tearing it apart. It seemed that Zuo Ling Er and Big Yellow had a lot in common, she was completely involved in the fun she was

having with Big Yellow.

“Big Yellow, I heard that your head is as hard as steel. I would like to try a punch using my knuckle.”

Ling Er stood before Big Yellow, taking what she said seriously while rubbing her knuckles and fingers like she was preparing for it.

“Little girl, how can you be this impolite to your elder? You should call me ‘Uncle Big Yellow.’”

Big Yellow said. As soon as his voice faded, Jiang Chen’s leg stamped on his face.

“You dare to joke around with manners? Eat my leg sandwich!”

Jiang Chen said it bluntly. Zuo Ling Er had called Jiang Chen big brother, now Big Yellow wanted her to call him ‘uncle’, wasn’t he trying to utilize Jiang Chen’s relationship with her to get the title of ‘uncle’?

“Hey, hey...calling me brother is good enough.”

Big Yellow smiled and grimaced at the mild pain.

\*Bang\*\*Bang\*\*Bang\*

A while later, Big Yellow was using his dog head to continuously collide with Ling Er's fists. One dog and a girl continued to test their strengths on each other in the middle of the compound, it was hard to tell who was better.

“Little Chen, this little girl is only twelve years old, but her fists' strength is as strong as the weight of a big hill. Can you determine what's the mystery hidden in her body?”

Tyrant said while looking startled. He knew that not many could collide with Big Yellow's steel head. Apparently, Zuo Ling Er was a different kind.

“Her whole body consisted of an infinite amount of brute force. If my guess is not wrong, the blood that is flowing in her body is blood of the Ancient Barbarian Tribe. It has a very terrifying power, the person whose blood that belongs to this group will get stronger and stronger during advancement.”

Jiang Chen's eyes glittered. He had seen how Zuo Ling Er had killed a Ninth Grade Combat King with only a punch, from there he had found out her extraordinary physique attributes. She was merely a twelve year-old kid, her future was inestimable.

Of course, talking about talent, Jiang Chen was the rarest amongst them. He possessed the power of monstrous talent. He was only nineteen and was merely sixteen when he was reborn. In other words, he only used three years of time to reach Eighth Grade Combat King today from the basic Qi. His history of advancement would certainly frighten the whole world.

## Chapter 605 - The Half Broken Jar Has Broken Completely?

---

Yuan Yang City was bustling with noise and excitement. People were forming circles of their own to gossip about the battle. Kong Yang was recognized as the strongest or the first conqueror in Yuan Yang City. Even though Zuo Yi Yang was a Second Grade Combat Emperor and the Patriarch of Zuo family, he wouldn't be able to defeat Kong Yang. Therefore, majority of the people agreed that the Zuo family wouldn't accept the battle, because once they failed, they would lose the discipleship spots for the Nebula Sect.

A moment later, while everyone was agreeing that this was the end of the Zuo family, a news from the Zuo family was heard. It said that the Zuo family had decided to participate in the battle, on the life and death battle platform in the Central Square of Yuan Yang City. Someone in the Zuo family was going to confront Kong Yang.

“The Zuo family accepted the challenge, could it be that Zuo Yi Yang is confident in defeating Kong Yang?”

“Zuo Yi Yang has no other ways to avoid the battle. Now, everyone knows about the letter of battle between the two families, the Zuo family's refusal in participating the battle will bring them endless shame, becoming an object of ridicule of everyone in Yuan Yang City. At that time, Kong Yang will take advantage of the situation and declare war on Zuo family, causing more than half of the minor powers in the city to join the Kong family, which will bring an end to the Zuo family.



“You aren’t wrong. The reason they are fighting might be due to the Zuo family’s status or the family members’ life and death, or the discipleship of the Nebula Sect. Regardless of which reason, Zuo Yi Yang had no choice but to face the battle. Despite the fact that he isn’t Kong Yang’s opponent, he won’t easily be killed by Kong Yang as he is still a Second Grade Combat Emperor.”

“The battle has been confirmed, it will be very exciting to watch. We can’t miss this great battle between two Combat Emperors three days later in the Central Square, it will be wonderful.”

“That’s obvious! I heard that Kong Yang’s Heavenly Fire Art has reached perfection, plus he had obtained the origin of fire of the Red Fiery Python Beast, his cultivation after that will further enhance his fiery skill. I would like to see that in person. Seeing the battle of these two masters is really benefitting us.”

.....

A new wave of arguments and discussion rose, stealing away all the peace in Yuan Yang City. One could imagine that Yuan Yang City wouldn’t obtain its serenity until the great battle had ended three days later.

Kong family!

“Good, as I have expected. Zuo Yi Yang has to fight the battle. When I successfully defeat him, and obtain the two spots for the discipleship, the Kong family will grow at its fastest pace. In less than a few years, we will eliminate the Zuo family entirely. And...

is that Jiang Chen still at the Zuo family?”

Kong Yang looked proud of himself and excited without forgetting his revenge on Jiang Chen.

“He hasn’t come out since he has been to the Zuo family from the monastery.”

Someone answered.

“Very good, observe his movements closely. I must avenge Kong Yan on Jiang Chen. Humph! That amateur kid actually came to Yu Province to kill our people...The consequences for his deeds will be shredding him into pieces.”

Tongues of flames were flickering from Kong Yang’s body. He was very determined to seek revenge on Jiang Chen.

Three days flew by in a flash, the level of excitement in Yuan Yang City never decreased. The most anticipated day has finally arrived. Early in the morning, huge crowds of people started to gather at Central Square, there were many of them who didn’t sleep the other night, waiting at the battle scene to ensure a comfortable place to enjoy the battle later.

It was a wide city, the Central Square was just located right in the middle of the city. It has a ten miles radius wide, there were more than ten platforms standing at the center of the Central Square. Marks and imprints were left after each battle on the surface of the

platforms. Any party who had a conflict against the other party would resolve it in this place. This place held the glory of Yuan Yang City, every mark left on the platform was the record of the history of the city.

All of a sudden, a powerful wave moved in the sky. Slowly, it became a blurry tyrannical silhouettes that landed gracefully in the middle of the Central Square. The leader among them was a red haired middle-aged man. He was like a fire god that had descended from the heavens, his gestures were accompanied with a formidable aura, stirring up the sense of idolization amongst the bystanders.

“Look, the Kong family has arrived. That man is Kong Yang, his Qi is very powerful. The aura that emanated out from his body is the light of fire, it is blazing. It seems that he has cultivated his fiery skill to the perfection stage.”

“Too powerful, Kong Yang has reached the peak of Second Grade Combat Emperor, which is only one step away from the Third Grade Combat Emperor. Truly amazing, I wonder how Zuo Yi Yang will fight him.”

“After today’s battle, their difference in power will reveal itself. In less than a few years, Yuan Yang City will be dominated by only one family.”

.....

Kong Yang became everyone’s hot topic instantly, all the

bystanders were looking at him full of admiration.

The bystanders automatically moved aside leaving a line on the sidewalk. The members of the Kong family walked through them, their faces were filled with arrogance. As the conquerors of Yuan Yang City, they were eligible for doing so, it reminded people that they were the people you don't want to mess with or you can't afford to mess with.

The Kong family members followed Kong Yang and reached the place nearest to a battle platform, and waited for the Zuo family to arrive. However, there was no one to be seen even after more than ten minutes.

“What happened? Why hasn't the Zuo family arrived? Could it be that they are afraid to come?”

“This shouldn't happen, the Zuo family is also a conqueror of Yuan Yang City. If they aren't present today, it will bring infinite disgrace to the family, making it difficult to keep its status in the city.”

“Wait and see, since every person in Yuan Yang City has gathered here to watch the amazing battle, they will be asking for trouble if they choose not to come.”

.....

Many bystanders slowly became impatient for the Zuo family's

arrival. They had lost a part of their good impression on the Zuo family. They sensed that the Zuo family's absence until now was because of their fear to face the battle. Unlike the Kong family, who had arrived long ago with a formidable Qi, indicating their confidence for the battle.

At this very moment, a wave of stable Qi not weaker than the Kong family came from afar. Without a doubt, it was the members of the Zuo family. The bystanders heaved a sigh of relief after confirming their movement. The Zuo family arrived at last, their presence here weren't in vain.

There were two people leading the team, a middle-aged man and a young man in white. The middle-aged man was Zuo Yi Yang, everyone could recognize him. As for the young man who was dressed in white, no one had seen him before, they couldn't recall that the Zuo family ever had such genius, a genius that could stand together with Patriarch Zuo. This was enough to show that the young man's identity wasn't simple.

The Zuo family's group weren't weaker than the Kong family. Both families had brought at least forty members with them, including the high ranking members. This was a battle that involved life and death and the benefits of both families, all of them were very concerned about this battle.

The Zuo family stood in the opposite direction of the Kong family.

“Zuo Yi Yang, I thought you are afraid to come.”

Kong Yang smirked as he saw his old enemy.

“The Kong family is unlawful and shameless, sending a group of assassins to destroy my monastery secretly, and attempted to murder my daughter. You have no shame at all, this is a good time to clear off the debts.”

Zuo Yi Yang shouted. He wouldn't allow his family's morale to be lower than the Kong family even if he couldn't defeat Kong Yang.

“Bullshit, Kong Yan was killed by your family, making us lose a powerful Combat Emperor. If you are counting debts, the Kong family should be the one who will claim it first. Zuo Yi Yang, since you have accepted the battle, there is nothing else better to say. Come to the battle platform, we will decide the winner and loser in this battle. The winner will obtain the two spots for the discipleship of Nebula Sect.”

Kong Yang finished his sentence and leaped high over the platform and landed on it nicely, looking downwards while emanating a domineering aura from his body and intimidating people's feeling.

“Zuo Yi Yang, come up right now, don't waste any time. We have so many people watching this battle. If you are afraid, you can admit defeat now and pass over the discipleship.”

Kong Yang clamored.

“Kong Yang, don’t be overly confident. Our Zuo family will never let go of the discipleship. The Zuo family has promised to fight you, but it isn’t me who will fight, it will another man.”

Zuo Yi Yang smiled.

“What?!”

Everyone on the scene, including Kong, Yang exclaimed and were astonished. They couldn’t imagine these words to come out from Zuo Yi Yang’s mouth.

“What is going on? Is there someone in Zuo family who is better than Zuo Yi Yang?”

“Yeah, what’s the Zuo family trying to do? Zuo Yi Yang himself is not fighting the battle. Even if he fought himself, he won’t be able to defeat Kong Yang. Don’t even think about other people who can.”

Everyone was looking at the members of the Zuo family, trying to find the one who could match with Kong Yang’s standard, but they were disappointed to find that there is no one there that could fight Kong Yang.

“Zuo Yi Yang, are you kidding me? Does your Zuo family have someone who can fight against me?”

Kong Yang smirked coldly.

“I didn’t say that it is a member of my Zuo family who will fight this battle. I have invited Jiang Chen to fight this battle for my Zuo family.”

Zuo Yi Yang answered loudly. As soon as his voice dropped, Jiang Chen took one leap high enough to reach the platform, standing in the opposite direction of Kong Yang.

“What? Is this a joke? The dignified Zuo family asked for an outsider to fight the battle for them, this is a true disgrace!”

“So he is Jiang Chen. I heard that this man is a rare genius, who can create disaster. Although he is an Eighth Grade Combat King, he had taken Kong Yan’s life. His power is inestimable, but I don’t think he is powerful enough to fight Kong Yang.”

“The Zuo family have invited an Eighth Grade Combat King to confront Kong Yang, this is ridiculous. Isn’t this scenario like ‘A half broken jar fell and broke completely?’ Jiang Chen is undeniably powerful, but he isn’t fit to be the opponent of Kong Yang. He can kill a First Grade Combat Emperor like Kong Yan, but Kong Yan and Kong Yang are entirely different people in terms of their power, skills and grade. It isn’t comparable at all.”

“Hey, it looks like the Zuo family is abandoning the battle, by sending an outsider who doesn’t even have a slightest chance of winning. Jiang Chen is the killer of Kong Yan, but he will definitely die when battling with Kong Yang. Kong Yang will shred



him into pieces. I don't get why he chose to fight this battle, is he not afraid of death? Or he thinks that he has ways of dealing with Kong Yang?"

.....

The sudden change of expectation created another wave of noise. Who could have thought of this sudden change? Now everyone focused their attention on Jiang Chen.

# Chapter 606 - Fighting Kong Yang

---

It was beyond anyone's imaginations. Nobody had thought that the dignified Zuo family would seek help from an outsider to represent them in battle. However, it wasn't inexcusable for the Zuo family to do that. They couldn't find anyone else that could fight Kong Yang, letting Zuo Yi Yang battle would only result in failure, he would just end up losing the discipleship to the Kong family. The best solution given this scenario was to get someone else's help, someone who wasn't a member of the Zuo family. Since the letter of battle didn't specifically state that only the members of the Zuo family had to fight the battle, they could seek for Jiang Chen's help in this life and death battle.

Seeking help was good, but why would the Zuo family seek for an Eighth Grade Combat King to fight the battle? Wasn't this bringing extreme disgrace for the Zuo family?

On the battle platform, Kong Yang's attention was focused on Jiang Chen, his eyes were about to spurt out fire, and said emotionlessly:

“You are Jiang Chen?”

“I am.”

Jiang Chen said it in a monotonous tone. He knew Kong Yang thirsted to kill him, but Kong Yang was fated to be disappointed.

“It seems that you don't know how to write the word die. After

killing Kong Yan, you didn't choose to run away from this place, but appear in front of me right now, to fight me on behalf of the Zuo family. I wonder if you are an idiot or excessively confident. But, your presence today has saved me a lot of time in searching for you. Now, I will give you a chance. Commit suicide in front of me."

Kong Yang sounded gloomy, as if Jiang Chen didn't deserve his respect at all. Given his identity and grade, he wouldn't put an Eighth Grade Combat King in his eyes, he was confident that he could pinch Jiang Chen to death with only one hand.

"Why don't you commit suicide instead? This will save us both our time. Since you are definitely no match for me."

Jiang Chen said gently. After he finished his sentence, many people started to hurl all kinds of insults. They had never seen such an arrogant guy before, his arrogance was to the extreme, daring to say that in public. Perhaps only Jiang Chen could do that.

"Haha... Good, a wild young man who doesn't understand the vastness of heaven and earth. Today I will let you know the consequences of being very arrogant."

Kong Yang burst into a hearty laughter. He found Jiang Chen's response very amusing. He swore that he wouldn't allow Jiang Chen to die easily, he had to torture him intensely, making him wish he was dead.

"Zuo Yi Yang, I never realized that you have lost so many of your

brain cells, finding a person who is as foolish as you to join the battle. In this case, I will behead this frantic kid openly, then our Kong family will get the two spots for the discipleship of Nebula Sect. This kid has killed Kong Yan, killing him now will settle Kong Yan's revenge and save my time seeking him."

Kong Yang's fiery red hair were rippling like a sea of fire along with the wind. His Qi level was bursting, totally locking on Jiang Chen, not giving him even a chance of survival.

"Come on big brother, beat him to death!"

Little Ling Er was waving her fists while cheering for Jiang Chen. Her words 'beat him to death' made those who heard it dumbfounded. They were both really young and frivolous, one was just as worse than the other. Their enemy wasn't a nobody but Kong Yang, how could she say 'beat him to death'?

\*Whoosh\*

Kong Yang didn't want to waste any more time. His body flew high up into the sky, followed by Jiang Chen. At their level, they had to be off the ground to battle, as their destructive force would cause an enormous damage to the Central Square.

"Jiang Chen, I heard that you can initiate disasters even when you are just in the Combat King realm, turning Liang Province into chaos. You did play a critical role for all the incidents in Liang Province. Now, I will allow you attack me three times first before I start. I really want to see what kind of ability a man has that could

cause disasters..”

Kong Yang’s face was full of conceit.

“Letting me attack three times? Then don’t blame me for being impolite.”

Jiang Chen’s Qi shook, dragon scales were forming on his palm. Without saying anything, he struck with his Fire Dragon Seal.

\*Roar!\*

The sounds of dragons shook the heaven and earth, a fire dragon that was about 120 meters long was summoned by Jiang Chen. The giant fire dragon circled the sky, filling it with a sea of fire, the red and yellow flames scorched the spatial zone. It was like a fire dragon had just been reborn, charging towards Kong Yang and lashing him.

“A very brutal Fire Dragon Seal. This Jiang Chen is really special, he deserved to be called a genius. His fiery attack seems purer than Kong Yang’s. The flames of this fire dragon is like the fire of the sun, it is much scarier than Kong Yang’s Fiery Violent Python Beast.”

Zuo Yi Yang’s expression changed. He had detected Jiang Chen’s powerful Fire Dragon Seal and that increased his confidence for Jiang Chen.

“A very strong attack. No one would’ve thought that his fiery attack is purer than Kong Yang’s, but too bad that his grade is too low.”

“Although this Jiang Chen is only an Eighth Grade Combat King, he is not a person who can easily be dealt with. If Kong Yang really wants Jiang Chen to strike thrice first, he is getting himself into trouble.”

“It is true as the rumors said. He really is a scary little devil. Maybe, the result of today’s final battle will change.”

.....

The crowd had started to become occupied with arguments again. As the saying went ‘the so-called experts can only prove themselves after they have shown all of their skills.’ Before Jiang Chen struck, everyone thought of him as a weak enemy that could be killed by just a pinch of Kong Yang, but his attack shocked them all. His attack was very powerful, it could kill a First Grade Combat Emperor instantly. He, who could turn Liang Province upside down, really had his own ways of killing.

The most astonished person was Kong Yang. His pupil became bigger and bigger as the fire dragon approached. His major attributes were Heavenly Fire Art, his sensitivity to fire was greater than anybody. He was amazed not only by the enormous attack of the fire dragon, but also the flames that the fire dragon was spewing.

“A blazing flame, as hot as the sun, as if it originated from the earth itself. I have no idea how many times this flame is greater than my Fiery Violent Python Beast. This is a blessing in disguise, although it seems that I can’t easily kill him, I have to obtain his flame. If I can integrate such a pure flame into my Heavenly Fire Art, I will gain an enormous benefits. It will allow me to instantly break through to the Third Grade Combat Emperor, and I even have the chance to reached Fourth Grade Combat Emperor. At the time, eliminating the entire Zuo family will only be as effortless as blowing dust away.”

Kong Yang’s eyes glittered with greed. The flames were too important for him, it made him feel envious.

In the blink of an eye, the fire dragon was exactly before him. Kong Yang quickly pulled himself out from his thoughts. Now, he could already feel the frightening attack of the fire dragon. Even with his current strength, he didn’t dare to make a slightest mistake. He struck with his palm, with a ball of fire, and collided directly with the fire dragon.

**\*Bang!!\***

It shook the spatial zone, shredding it into transparent pieces. The vibration was as great as thunder. With Kong Yang’s grade, he was able to stop Jiang Chen’s Fire Dragon Seal by a simple palm attack, this was the difference between their grades.

“Shameless. He promised to let Jiang Chen struck him three times. A lie. If he can’t afford to, then don’t say it out. He is really shameful for a dignified Patriarch.”

Big Yellow growled below them. His voice was loud enough for everyone to hear.

“Haha. This is shameful, very shameful for him.”

Zuo Ling Er and Big Yellow did have a lot in common, they wouldn't miss a chance to criticize their opponent sarcastically.

Almost everyone thought that Kong Yang was going to receive Jiang Chen's three attacks like what he had promised. But in just the first attack he already defended himself. Being the conqueror of Yuan Yang City, but not keeping his words would only let people sneer at him.

“Patriarch Kong, did you hear that? If you can't afford to withstand my three attacks then don't promise it. This is making a fool out of yourself and the members of your Kong family.”

Jiang Chen's face looked relax and calm.

Kong Yang's facial expression turned ugly. He grimaced at the comments and was speechless for a moment. This was really bringing disgrace to himself and his family given his status in Yuan Yang City. But, he didn't think that Jiang Chen would be this powerful. The Fire Dragon Seal was enough to eliminate a First Grade Combat Emperor. If he didn't defend it using his palm, he would be injured seriously if the attack landed on him directly.



“Humph! I will take you down first before talking!”

Kong Yang humph coldly. He initiated to attack Jiang Chen now. He did not care for his reputation temporarily. The flames would win him back all the fame, thus, he must get Jiang Chen’s flames.

# Chapter 607 - Aggrieved Battle

---

Kong Yang was furious. Even though he still didn't pay any respect to Jiang Chen, he had stopped underestimating him. Everyone could see that a flaming suit of armor had covered Kong Yang's body, an incredibly scorching heat energy had burst out from his body, forming a sea of fire in the sky.

The member's of the Zuo family did not look too well. Although Jiang Chen had cultivated a fiery skill, his grade differed too much from Kong Yang's. Now, Kong Yang was going to launch an attack using the Heavenly Fire Art, and they had no idea whether Jiang Chen could withstand the attack.

\*Ka\* \*Ka\*

Kong Yang's blazing hands were rolling continuously, a three meters size ball was formed within. The fireball carried a massive destructive force, its scorching heat made the spatial zone crack.

“Heavenly Fire Energy!”

Kong Yang suddenly clamored. The gigantic fireball turned into a flow of light and rushed towards Jiang Chen. Besides the destructive force of the fiery energy, another scary part of it was its scorching temperature, its heat wave could make someone have difficulties in breathing in an instant.

Majority of the people witnessed this attack of Kong Yang for the first time. Since he was the strongest person of Yuan Yang City, his

attack would obviously be out of the ordinary. The energy could stifle mountains and rivers, most of them held their breaths and were worrying how could Jiang Chen, who was only an Eighth Grade Combat King, be able to withstand this attack.

“Very awesome, Kong Yang. It isn’t easy to continue cultivating Heavenly Fire Art to this level. If I haven’t cultivated the Heavenly Earth Pure Water, I am no match for you since I am only an Eighth Grade Combat King. Unfortunately, the gap of power between the Fiery Python and the Heavenly Pure Water is too big, the fire attributes will be completely restrained by the water effect.”

Jiang Chen revealed a smile. He didn’t seem nervous at all while facing such an enormous fireball. He raised his arms slowly, blood-red dragon scales were surfacing on his skin, then the dragon scale started to freeze with silvery white frost.

“Water Dragon Seal!”

Jiang Chen exclaimed. Yuan force was boiling in his body, he moved his palms forward and pushed, a silvery white dragon roared while rushing out from his palm. The moment the Water Dragon fully appeared, the temperature in the sky dropped dramatically, even the spatial zone was frozen. Frost was formed on places or things where the Water Dragon passed by. The coldness chilled everyone to the bones even though they were far away from the Water Dragon. Its emergence dispersed all the heat wave created by Kong Yang, as though it had lost all the heat to the surroundings, vanishing rapidly.

\*Roar!...Roar!\*

The roar of the giant Water Dragon continued while opening its big fierce-looking mouth. To everyone's surprise, the Water Dragon swallowed the entire fireball into its throat. The fireball was originally scorching hot, but after moving nearer to the Water Dragon its fire attributes were restrained, not a single force or power was unleashed from the fireball as the cold air was too strong, dooming almost every flame on earth. The Water Dragon was deadly to any flames because of its power to restrain or inhibit any fire attributes, reducing the power of the flame by half or more.

\*Bang!\*

After the Water Dragon had swallowed the fireball, it was blown out and turned into cold light before disappearing into the air. The remains after that was ice-cold air that bit the bones, there wasn't any heat left. The collision just now shook Kong Yang, it caused his body to sway slightly, and his face looked drawn and pale. This impact didn't create a slightest harm on his body, but both of his eyes were glaring at Jiang Chen, as though he had seen a grim reaper.

"Impossible, this is absolutely impossible. The first spell he casted was fire, how could it suddenly turn into a frost water seal? Frost and heat, they are of different properties, not to mention they are impossible to blend together. How could he integrate both elements into his body?"

His body convulsed uncontrollably because of fear. Cultivators of fiery skills knew the fire attributes more than anyone. Even if a

person possessed an exceptional body, there was no way to cultivate another element that would oppose fire. This was impractical, fire and water could not be cultivated into the same body without a clash of attributes.

Furthermore, his opponent's frost attributes were very fierce, his Heavenly Fire Art was rendered completely useless, and not even forty percent of the fiery attack was unleashed. This had shortened the gap of grade between the two, making Kong Yang feel gloomy and aggrieved.

“God...what have I just seen? Was that a Water Dragon? The water seal has an extreme cold attribute which is terrifying, as though I have sunk into an ice cave, very cold. Kong Yan's Heavenly Fire Art became totally vulnerable in front of the Water Dragon Seal. Did you all see that? This attack gave Jiang Chen the upper hand.”

“Unbelievable!. He just casted the Fire Dragon Seal that was of pure fire, and later a seal that was of frost attribute? How did he do that? Those two elements opposed each other. How can he possibly absorb those two elements into his body? Truly amazing...”

“This is the reason they called him ‘an evil initiating disasters.’ He is too scary. He has the ability to kill a First Grade Combat Emperor, and now he is restraining Kong Yang's ability, making his fiery skill useless. It is not certain how this battle will end.”

.....

Amazement flooded everyone. His attack wasn't just amazing, but also terrifying. This battle had turned into suspense, arousing the bystanders' excitement. The image of Kong Yang winning the battle was wiped out from their minds. Everyone thought that Jiang Chen had an alien body which could cultivate two opposing elements, water and fire, no one was able to confirm what miracle Jiang Chen could bring.

“Haha...Excellent, I never thought that brother Jiang is this horrifying, able to combine the cultivation of water and fire together. Very awesome.”

Zuo Yi Yang looked unexpectedly delighted. The Zuo family members should be the happiest people in the Central Square.

“That attack just now was fierce. My confidence for him was never much, but now that the situation has changed. No one knows what the conclusion will be.”

“That's right, no wonder brother Jiang was very confident before this battle. Although his combat power isn't on par with Kong Yang, he could stop Kong Yang's Heavenly Fire Art's attack. That is to say, Kong Yang can only unleash half of his combat strength to fight Jiang Chen. This will certainly increase brother Jiang's chances of winning.”

“Agree, we doubted brother Jiang's ability before. Now it seems that was unnecessary and offensive. When he said that he could fight, that meant he really had the confidence.”

.....

The elders of the Zuo family were all carrying smiles on their faces. Although Jiang Chen hadn't defeated Kong Yang yet, his performance was satisfying, giving them hope again.

“Big brother you are the best!”

Zuo Ling Er was super cute, waving her hands like doing a quick boxing performance while cheering for Jiang Chen.

Up in the sky, Jiang Chen was standing opposite to Kong Yang with steady breath. His mission today was to kill Kong Yang, not defeating him. It wasn't an easy task even if his Water Dragon Seal could limit his power. Kong Yang's actual strength and power were way stronger than him, and he is a Second Grade Combat Emperor. Therefore, to kill Kong Yang, he shouldn't be hasty. He had to completely induce confusion to Kong Yang's state of mind, causing him to have a mental breakdown, and then strike. Thus, he wanted to see Kong Yang burning with frenzy and rage.

“Kong Yang, I have said that you weren't my opponent. If you choose to die now in public, I will give you a chance. It's still better than being defeated by me and that will bring an eternal shame to you and your family.”

Jiang Chen said emotionlessly.

“You bastard!”

As expected, the bad-tempered Kong Yang became mad instantly after hearing his insult. Layers of heat wave rushed out of his body, creating another sea of fire. His aura now wasn't as strong as before, the coldness left in the air weakened the flames by thirty percent.

“Jiang Chen, don't think that restraining my fire power will allow you to defeat me. This is a ridiculous joke. I will show you the difference between our grades. Water is undeniably used to extinguish fire, but it depends on the degree of fire.”

Kong Yang was furious, his fiery red hair rippled through the wind. He then raised both of his palms, casting again the Heavenly Fire Art by pumping his maximum fiery force into it. Strange fiery seals were squeezing out of his palms continuously, gradually forming a fiery wheel.

“Heavenly Fire Gyro Wheel!”

Along with Kong Yan's sudden shout, a Fire Wheel with a size of about one hundred twenty meters emerged with a loud crash. The Fire Wheel was like an indestructible barrier of protection, sufficient enough to pulverize anything in the world. The spatial zone fractured as it passed by, leaving visible cracks. Its destructive power shook people's spirit.

“Humph! All kinds of fire will be extinguished before my Heavenly Earth Pure Water.”



Jiang Chen's face was calm. Regardless of how much fiery force was exerted, Kong Yang's fiery attack would be extinguished. Jiang Chen's white clothes rippled, his dragon claw reemerged, thirty five thousands of dragon marks undulated in his body, providing Jiang Chen boundless amount of energy. This time Jiang Chen summoned a total of three Water Dragons.

\*Roar\* \*Roar\* \*Roar\*

The Water Dragons roared violently, each was at least a hundred metre long, as if real dragons had descended from the Heavens. Three of the Water Dragons besieged the Fire Wheel with great speed, the frosty air released from their bodies buried most of the flames. The Qi of Heavenly Fire Gyro Wheel was dropping rapidly like it had confronted an enemy who appeared to be its predator.

\*Roar\*

The three Water Dragons roared once more, their long bodies twined around the Fire Wheel.

\*Bang\*

Fire and water would oppose one another. The force of this collision was tremendous, damaging the spatial zone in the sky, making the surrounding air chaotic and unpleasant.

The Heavenly Fire Gyro Wheel was invincible, but it couldn't win against its insulator, water. Under the attacks of the three

Water Dragons, it was slowly vanishing. While still retaining most of their shapes, the dragons continued to hunt for its prey, thrusting towards Kong Yang.

“What?!”

Kong Yang exclaimed and quickly stopped the Water Dragons with another strong attack to destroy them. He felt a serious blow sent to his body that made him step more than fourteen steps back to find his balance. His Qi became unstable. His emotions now was full of unexpressed complaints and blames. No one could feel his aggrieved feeling for the battle. He was supposed to be on the top of Jiang Chen when comparing their combat strength, but because of the insulation of fiery attributes, he was prevented to fully unleash his power. This type of battle was really frustrating.

...

# Chapter 608 - The Opportunity Has Come

---

\*Wah!\*

The whole crowd let out a commotion. Everybody was once again astounded. This time it was like a storm that came without notice. If Jiang Chen was lucky before because Kong Yang didn't show his full strength, this wouldn't be the case. Jiang Chen wouldn't be lucky twice. Kong Yang casted his ultimate skill but it was still crushed by Jiang Chen. Also, he was injured badly than the first round. This was crystal clear to every bystanders below.

“My god, Kong Yang failed again...By the looks of it, he is absolutely not an opponent for Jiang Chen.”

“Bad, this is sad for Kong Yang. If they are fighting using their combat strengths, Jiang Chen is definitely no match for him. But, Jiang Chen cultivated a water attribute skill that suppressed Kong Yang's Heavenly Fire Art completely. It is clear that while Kong Yang was battling with Jiang Chen, not even half of his combat strength was unleashed. This got to be frustrating for him.”

“Truly unbelievable. If Kong Yang dies under Jiang Chen's hands, that will become the biggest joke of Yuan Yang City.”

“Let's see, Kong Yang may have some more powerful skills and weapons that he hasn't shown us. He possesses a King Weapon. If he uses it with his Heavenly Fire Art, he may have a chance to turn the situation over.”

.....

At this time, the Zuo family members were more than delighted, especially those who looked down on Jiang Chen before. Those who thought that it was risky and it would put Zuo family to shame by allowing him to fight the battle. All their worries and concerns suddenly disappeared. They now considered themselves lucky that the Patriarch didn't listen to their advice, otherwise, the Zuo family would be doomed, and thus, their advices would become their guilt.

A very positive emotion permeated all over the Zuo family members as opposed to the Kong family. Everyone of the Kong family members looked pale while grimacing. None of them had ever thought that Jiang Chen would be this powerful. He had overwhelmed a Second Grade Combat Emperor because of the suppression of attributes. That was so shocking because he was only an Eighth Grade Combat King.

“How did this happen? Patriarch won't lose to Jiang Chen, right?”

“Don't talk nonsense, Patriarch's skills are not fully unleashed yet. Although Jiang Chen's a devil, he is only an Eighth Grade Combat King. I believe that our Patriarch can defeat him.”

The Kong family might appear confident about their Patriarch, but in truth, they were clueless about that, now that the disparity between the two cultivators above them were obvious. Jiang Chen who was dressed in white stood high up in the sky, calm and steady, he didn't look like he came here to fight a battle. He looked

more like a kid coming here to have fun. His face overflowed confidence.

Compared with Jiang Chen's composure, Kong Yang's was the exact opposite. His emotions had become chaotic, at this point, not only was he hurt physically, his mind was disoriented by the terrible blow. In a fight like this, mental breakdown was the most fatal part.

“How is it? I have said that you are not my opponent.”

Jiang Chen said. He knew that every word he said was going to stab into Kong Yang's fragile heart.

“What kind of water is that? How could it be this terrifying? Any ordinary water can't create an impact on my Heavenly Fire Art at all.”

Kong Yang wanted to rush Jiang Chen and shred him into pieces, but he still asked curiously. He really had no clue what kind of water in this world could be this powerful that it could suppress his fierce Heavenly Fire Art, making him vulnerable in front of an Eighth Grade Combat King.

“You want to know? This is my trump card, why would I tell you about it?”

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

“Humph! Jiang Chen, you thought suppressing my fiery attributes will help you win the battle? That’s too naïve, isn’t it? I don’t believe that your Water Dragon can be used continuously. Do you know casting such a powerful combat skill will consume a lot of your energy? When your energy is drained, I will kill you.”

Kong Yang humphed coldly, revealing an unfriendly smile on his face.

“Is that so? You can have a try.”

Jiang Chen almost smiled. During Kong Yang’s contemplation after the second attack, he figured a way to end Jiang Chen’s life. He was going to apply the war of attrition, betting on his consumption of Yuan Force. This had to be a joke. Perhaps, Kong Yang thought that he, as a Second Grade Combat King, have an abundance and a vigorous pool of Yuan Force than Jiang Chen, even his speed of recovery of Yuan Force is fast. On the other hand, Jiang Chen, an Eighth Grade Combat King, had attacked with his ultimate skills, which meant that he had used up vast amount of his Yuan Force. Kong Yang didn’t believe that Jiang Chen could keep up with him, planning to get rid of his opponent when his Yuan Force is depleted.

It seemed that it was according to Jiang Chen’s calculation. However, in reality, Kong Yang’s plan would work if Jiang Chen was an ordinary cultivator. The sad thing was that Jiang Chen had cultivated the Dragon Transformation Art, which had made him an abnormal. There were thirty five thousand dragon marks inside his body that could provide Jiang Chen a steady flow of unlimited energy, which couldn’t be used up. Anyone who tried to apply a

war of attrition on an opponent like Jiang Chen would end in tragedy.

\*Hong... Long...\*

Kong Yang took the first move, his body was burning with flames while summoning the Heavenly Fire Gyro Wheel, and thrust at Jiang Chen. This time, Kong Yang changed his combat strategy, he would fight as a guerilla, he would change his position instantly after the first attack. Hee felt that when he was in front of Jiang Chen, not only was he dominant in terms of his Yuan Force, but also his speed. He didn't believe that a tiny Eighth Grade Combat King could match his speed.

Too bad, he was disappointed again!

\*Hong... Long...\*

The following battles were in a disarray. Kong Yang was constantly launching attacks at Jiang Chen. But, Jiang Chen was merely using his previous trick, Water Dragon Seal, to defend himself against Kong Yang's continuous attack.

As for the speed, with the blessings of Spatial Shift and Wolf Shadow's Nine Shifts, Jiang Chen's speed was never behind Kong Yang, which was terrifying.

Two people was in an intense battle for half an hour. Every fiery attack launched by Kong Yang was suppressed by Jiang Chen's

Water Dragon Seal. Besides his body getting hit by the force of suppression, his clothes were drenched with sweat. His emotions became disorientated, waves of nausea urging him to cough out blood. In just thirty minutes, a Second Grade Combat Emperor turned tired and looked like a dog. Jiang Chen, on the other hand, was completely fine, brandishing his Water Seal Dragon as though he didn't have to worry about his Yuan Force level.

“Darn it! Are you a monster?”

Kong Yang couldn't help but curse at him. At this time, his emotion was really in disarray, there wasn't an ounce of energy for him to take care of his image anymore.

“This Jiang Chen is too scary. Kong Yang apparently wants to wear Jiang Chen out using the war of attrition, but he is the one who wore out eventually. What kind of monster is this Jiang Chen? Is his energy really unlimited that it can't be used up forever?”

“Who would have thought of this kind of battle. If this battle continues to progress like this, I'm afraid that Kong Yang won't be gaining any advantages.”

“He is truly a mutant. His skill was designed specifically to suppress Kong Yang's skill. This is a bad fortune that can bring down eight generations of Kong Yang.”

.....



The bystanders saw clearly how much the battle had progressed. Kong Yang wasn't doing very well, he would be defeated by Jiang Chen if he continued. In the current situation, Jiang Chen was gaining the upper hand not only because of the suppression of fire, but also in the aspect of energy, speed and emotional status. Kong Yang would be undeniably defeated, unless he still had a last trump card. Otherwise, he is powerless.

“Big brother is fantastic! Big brother is awesome!”

Ling Er was riding on Big Yellow's neck while cheering. Smiles overflowed the faces of the Zuo family members seeing that Jiang Chen was winning the battle. They weren't concerned about whether Jiang Chen could kill Kong Yang or not, what mattered most was that the Zuo family must obtain the two spots for the discipleship of the Nebula Sect.

Up in the sky, Kong Yang finally stopped. Exasperation overwhelmed his entire body and mind, his disorientated mind blurred him from the current situation. If he was intelligent enough, he would have admitted defeat or turned around and left, as Jiang Chen wouldn't be able to make him stay. But being the Patriarch of the Kong family, his dignity was more important than anything else, he thirsted to take Jiang Chen's life, regaining his pride. This was what Jiang Chen expected to see, it was his planned outcome.

“This kid is really a monster that has an infinite amount of energy. I can't continue on like this, otherwise, I will be the first to fall. It seems I have to use my ultimate skill to kill him off.”

Kong Yang's eyes were filled with flames, not forgetting about his desire to kill Jiang Chen. His arm motioned, a three meter Fiery Sharp Spear appeared in his hand, flapping sounds were produced when the red flames wrapped the entire spear. A simple wave of the spear produced a strong Emperor Aura, trembling the spatial zone. This was a powerful weapon that Kong Yang didn't want to show, he never thought that he would use it to fight an Eighth Grade Combat King.

“Jiang Chen, to be able to die under my Fiery Sharp Spear is your honor!”

Kong Yang clamored. The long spear whooshed as Kong Yang dashed forward.

Jiang Chen facial expression remained steady.

Keng The Heavenly Saint Sword appeared in his hand after the sound. The surface of the sword was wrapped with a layer of frost, lowering the temperature of the surroundings down. With Jiang Chen's ability, he was able to completely integrate the Water Dragon Seal and Heavenly Saint Sword together to launch an attack. Even if Kong Yang was using an Emperor Weapon, he would still be suppressed by Jiang Chen.

\*Howl\*

The Heavenly Saint Sword produced a loud howl and collided with Kong Yang's Fiery Sharp Spear like a long dragon. Although the Heavenly Saint Sword was a King Weapon, it had been

upgraded to the peak of King Grade Weapons, it unleashed a power that was never weaker than any ordinary Emperor weapons.

\*Bang\*

The two scary weapons crashed together, breaking the spatial zone again. Due to Heavenly Earth Pure Water's suppression, Kong Yang was knocked back even if he had used an Emperor Weapon.

“This is my chance.”

Jiang Chen's eyes sparkled, besieging Kong Yang using Wolf Shadows' Nine Shifts. He knew that Kong Yang would be dispirited after the failure of his final attack. This time would be the best chance to counter attack, he could kill Kong Yang.

...

# Chapter 609 - Yuan Yang City Was Shaken

---

\*Swoosh\* \*Swoosh\* \*Swoosh\*

In the torn spatial zone, nine figures who looked the same as Jiang Chen appeared, each of them carried a long sword. They charged at Kong Yang who was at the center.

“What?!”

Kong Yang’s face turned ugly like those who had died under Jiang Chen’s Wolf Shadow’s Nine Shifts. His messed-up emotion blurred him. If he was at his best state, he would have found which was the real Jiang Chen. It was a pity that his current condition wouldn’t allow him to do so. He was at his weakest, thus he was unable to detect Jiang Chen’s true form.

“My goodness! What skill is that? How many more skills had Jiang Chen not shown?”

“Is this a skill of replication? No, this should be a profound skill! I don’t know whether Kong Yang can withstand this attack.”

“Look, they launched the attack together.”

.....

Everyone was shocked once more by Jiang Chen. He had been

changing their beliefs every time, making it difficult for them to imagine how much power he actually had.

The Zuo family members should be the most stunned and also the happiest, especially Zuo Yi Yang, he felt relieved for his lucky and sensible decision.

“Kong Yang, welcome your death!”

When Jiang Chen’s Heavenly Saint Sword touched Kong Yang, he yelled once more with the other eight. The rumbling sound of Sonic Hawk Cry sent another panic down the already confused Kong Yang’s spine.

\*Argh!\*

Kong Yang cried. In his helpless condition, he could only counter attack like those poor fellows who also died under Jiang Chen’s Wolf Shadows’ Nine Shifts. He attacked all the figures, dispersing his combat power. He had already suffered heavy injuries from their previous confrontations. Now that his combat power was dispersed and the Qi of the Heavenly Earth Pure Water suppressing the fire attribute of his Heavenly Fire Art made him a weakling.

\*Boom!\*

Kong Yang’s attacks destroyed all the shadows, leaving only the true form who didn’t stop thrusting forward. The Heavenly Saint Sword carried boundless power and struck, destroying Kong

Yang's Fiery Sharp Spear at an incredible speed.

\*Puff!\* \*Argh!\*

It was too fast, there was no chance for Kong Yang to launch another counter attack after he was puzzled by the nine illusory images. However, only an arm was cut off, fresh blood was spurting intensely. This was because Kong Yang's reaction was quick, otherwise, his entire body would've been slashed into half like Kong Yan.

Kong Yang was frightened, finally sensing Jiang Chen's violence and felt the threat of death. He didn't attempt to stay any longer, he waved his Fiery Sharp Spear to tear open the spatial zone, flashing into it. As the Patriarch of the Kong family, as his last gasp of survival he finally chose to flee.

Unfortunately, it was too late for him. His current strength was too weak to run away from Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen's face revealed a cold smile. He struck with True Dragon Palm, enveloping Kong Yang completely and pulled him out from the spatial zone alive.

\*Wah!\*

Another commotion swept over the crowd. This time, they were petrified. Kong Yang had lost, he had lost the battle completely.

“Kong Yang is finished. Now that he has fallen into Jiang Chen’s hands. He doesn’t even have the slightest strength to defend himself. It is unexpected that the dignified and also the strongest person of Yuan Yang city was defeated shamefully in battle. This Jiang Chen is truly terrifying.”

“Do you all think that Jiang Chen will kill Kong Yang?”

“I think he will, he is a merciless person that turned the whole Liang Province into chaos. A person no one can afford to offend. Also, the conflicts between them will be left unsettled if Kong Yang is released. It will also leave a root for disaster in the future. Although one of his arm is chopped off, he is still a Combat Emperor.”

.....

Sounds of arguments flooded the air, today’s battle had excited and amazed them. The conclusion of the battle was out of their expectations.

Most of them guessed that Jiang Chen would kill Kong Yang because he didn’t fear the Kong family taking revenge on him. Would it concern him if he could even kill the Patriarch of the family, Kong Yang?

Once Kong Yang was dead, it meant the end of the Kong family. Then, the Zuo family would eliminate them all even before Jiang Chen could move a finger on them.

“Jiang Chen, I admit defeat! Please don’t kill me.”

Kong Yang begged for mercy. Before death, anything including his fame, pride, and dignity were useless, only his life was the most important.

“I didn’t permit you to admit defeat.”

Cold lights glittered from his eyes. He never intended to let Kong Yang live from the very beginning. Now that his enemy had fallen into his grips, there was only one ending for him: death.

“Presumptuous! You dare to kill our Patriarch?”

A Combat Emperor of Kong family clamored, his voice rose up to the sky. The other high ranking members of their family had the same expression, it seemed that they were preparing to fight Jiang Chen.

“Humph! You think the Zuo family is not here?”

Zuo Yi Yang made a cold humph. He wasn’t an idiot. Today, Jiang Chen had provided them an advantage and they would use it against the Kong family.

All the members of the Zuo family flew forward together, blocking the advance of the Kong family.



“Listen up, capture every member of the Kong family, and kill those who resist!”

Zuo Yi Yang’s command decided the Kong family’s fate. There was only one First Grade Combat Emperor left in Kong family and that wouldn’t help them to defend themselves against their family.

Zuo Yi Yang was a Second Grade Combat Emperor, he alone could wipe the entire Kong family out.

\*Argh...\*

Before the Zuo family launched their attacks, a shrill cry resounded above the sky. Jiang Chen’s strike was brutal and merciless, chopping off Kong Yang’s head with a slash. The Kong family’s Patriarch, the famous and strongest person of Yuan Yang City just died on the battle platform of the Central Square. Kong Yang would never have dreamt of dying under the hands of an Eighth Grade Combat King and hence, ending the prosperity and survival of the Kong family.

\*Boom!\*

Kong Yang was dead. The members of the Zuo family unleashed their powerful Qi. Zuo Yi Yang was in the lead amongst them, surrounding and pushing all Kong family members to the center.

Each of the member of the Kong family looked drawn. How could they ever fight back? Even the First Grade Combat Emperor had

given up defending himself. They were very clear that resistance would only lead to death. Kong Yang's death caused the Kong family's power to fade away, it's impossible to regain their social status again.

“Capture every one of them. Sixth Elder, you immediately bring people to invade the Kong family. From today onwards, there is only our family in Yuan Yang City. There's no more Kong family.”

Zuo Yi Yang's voice made the surrounding tremble, sentencing the entire Kong family members to death.

The battle was over. It was the biggest shock in Yuan Yang City's history. The Kong family fell and Kong Yang had died in the final battle. All the high ranked member of their family were sealed by a talisman of the Zuo family, the rest of them were forced out of the city. From now on, the Kong family is gone and only the Zuo family's power stood.

.....

“Ah, who would have thought that this will be the ending? Kong Yang's action led him to his death. He was the one who initiated the battle. If he did not send the letter of battle to the Zuo family it wouldn't end up like this.”

“The crucial element here is Jiang Chen, he is too scary. A mere Eighth Grade Combat King could kill Kong Yang who was at the peak of Second Grade Combat Emperor. I won't believe it if it wasn't my own eyes that saw it.”

“In my opinion, the blame is on the whole Kong family themselves. Their greed to obtain the two spots of discipleship for the Nebula Sect brought this to them. They set an ambush in Ran Feng monastery, planning to kill the little genius of the Zuo family. Though they successfully destroyed the monastery, they were not able to kill Zuo Ling Er due to Jiang Chen’s help.”

“The Zuo family indeed has a good fortune to be able to befriend a rare genius like Jiang Chen, it is a good blessing.”

.....

The whole Yuan Yang City was shaken by the news. Everyone was busy in their discussions. One of the strongest family had collapsed. Zuo Yi Yang was resolute to eliminate their enemy the moment Jiang Chen killed Kong Yang. He was the first to sentence them, not giving his enemy even a bit of chance to react. Especially those high ranked Combat Kings, capturing them before any of them had the chance to escape.

The Zuo family’s palace was decorated with lanterns and colored streamers. Their celebration party for conquering the entire Yuan Yang City and Zuo Ling Er’s entry to the Nebula Sect continued without stopping. In the meeting hall, Jiang Chen and Tyrant were treated as distinguished guests, sitting on the same line of seats as Zuo Yi Yang. Even the two elders who were both Combat Emperors were below them.

This was the first time the Zuo family had this kind of sitting

positions. However, there wasn't anyone who felt awkward or dissatisfied about it. In their eyes, Jiang Chen's power was enough to qualify him to be on the seat atop.

Every member looked at Jiang Chen in awe. They were very clear that he was the game-changer. If it wasn't for his participation in battle, killing Kong Yan would remain an absurd idea to them and the members of their family wouldn't stand a chance to defeat him. Perhaps the fate of the Kong family would have happened to their Family.

For the Zuo family, this kind of deed was impossible to repay. To Jiang Chen, he had helped Zuo family, but in truth he just helped himself. The reason he left the Liang Province and came to the Central Point of the Mysterious Domain was to enter the Nebula Sect. It was where the fourth fragment of Heavenly Saint Sword could be found. Jiang Chen wouldn't do nothing about it as it was his lost item, he must get it back using all his wits.

It would be extremely hard for him to enter the Nebula Sect alone. Luckily, there were two spots of discipleship for the sect that was granted in this city, solving his problems.

Zuo Yi Yang took out his Spatial Ring and brought it to Jiang Chen, "Our family had been greatly indebted to brother Jiang. These are the things we expropriated from the palace of the Kong family, you have to keep it."

Jiang Chen glanced at it, then used his Divine sense to visualize what was inside the Spatial Ring. He saw a mountain-like accumulation of Heaven Rank Restoration Pills, Heavenly Earth

Pure Spirits and many kinds of rare potions and pills that were as expensive as a city. There was at least ten million Heaven Rank Restoration Pills. Jiang Chen chuckled, he had never thought of this accidental blessings. Millions of Heaven Rank Restoration Pills were never enough to him, but the more the better.

# Chapter 610 - A Mission

---

Jiang Chen was delighted to accept the Spatial Ring, the same went to Zuo Yi Yang. Zuo Yi Yang felt that it was like presenting Buddha with flowers, no loss was incurred. In addition, he had returned Jiang Chen's big favor, which was satisfying.

.....

“Mister Jiang is really a rare genius that is hard to come by every ten thousand years. An Eighth Grade Combat King that could kill Kong Yang. It was unbelievable if I didn't witness the event.”

“I feel that the most terrifying part was that Jiang Chen was able to integrate both opposing elements, water and fire, into his body without any signs of rejection. This kind of power is something unheard of.”

“Brother Jiang is a great benefactor of our family. Today our family have gotten rid of the Kong family and conquered the entire Yuan Yang City due to Jiang Chen's help. He was the one who contributed the most.”

The Zuo family's high ranked elders were talking about him. Their faces were full of delight, showing their gratitude to Jiang Chen. They had completely forgotten how they protested when Zuo Yi Yang decided to let him fight the battle.

“That's obvious, big brother is the greatest. When I arrive at the Nebula Sect, I will see who dare to offend me with my big brother's

presence.”

Zuo Ling Er stood beside Jiang Chen and said arrogantly, as though she was the one who killed Kong Yang. Although Ling Er and Jiang Chen only knew each other for merely three days, they hit it off straight away. She was very fond of her insanely powerful big brother.

Jiang Chen's previous life can't be compared to this, he was a loner. But now he had a father, brothers, friends but no sisters. Zuo Ling Er was a girl with strange attitude but she was still very likeable. Jiang Chen had established a relationship with this sister which made him very happy.

Men should have blood, flesh, and relationship, only through it would life become full and varied. He instantly felt that he had been a complete combat freak in his past life. Even though he had reached the title of the Greatest Saint, he felt that his past life was in vain.

“By the way, the Nebula Sect's emissary will be here seven days later, they will bring both of you to their sect. Ling Er, although you are gifted, you are still too young and your grade of Combat King isn't strong enough. That sect is one of the major powers of the Mysterious Domain, it is a place where countless geniuses gather. When you reach there, do not flaunt your ability at somebody else.”

Zuo Yi Yang said it in a fatherly and serious tone. He was the one who understood his daughter the most. His daughter had a strange behavior, which would worry him a lot. The Nebula Sect was one

of the five strongest in the Mysterious Domain, the number of Combat Emperor there were innumerable, not to mention the competition.

“I know daddy.”

Zuo Ling Er pouted.

“Brother Jiang, I will hand over Ling Er to you. She’s under your care after you two reached Nebula Sect.”

Zuo Yi Yang held his fists at Jiang Chen.

“Don’t worry Patriarch, I won’t let Ling Er get hurt.”

Jiang Chen smiled while thinking about his entry into the Nebula Sect seven days later. Jiang Chen couldn’t help but gaze at Tyrant who was sitting quietly at his side and said, “Tyrant, I am going to Nebula Sect, what’s your plan?”

Jiang Chen could bring Big Yellow with him to the sect, but he couldn’t bring Tyrant along. If he offered to bring him, Tyrant would just decline. He was a true disciple of Buddha Sect who had sworn not to join any other sects. This time, Jiang Chen’s main intention wasn’t for the discipleship, he had a hidden agenda behind it.

“Now that Ran Feng Monastery has already been rebuilt I want to stay there for a while. My previous enlightenment affected me a



lot. Now, I am in need of a silent and peaceful environment to meditate. It seems that I can feel the essence of the Lotus Chant imparted by my master in Ran Feng Monastery. Since the monastery isn't very far from Zuo family's palace, we can gather here should anything happen."

Tyrant said. He had already planned what to do next. He had made up his mind to stay at Ran Feng Monastery to meditate for a period of time even if Jiang Chen wouldn't go to Nebula Sect. It was his master's monastery, which was more than suitable for him to meditate in.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow nodded together after hearing Tyrant's explanation. Both of them saw it when Tyrant achieved his enlightenment. They knew the importance of enlightenment to him and how much it had affected him. Tyrant needed a peaceful place and time to meditate and digest the essence of the Lotus Chant. It wouldn't be a concern regarding his body's sustainability as it was supported by Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pill and relics, turning his body unbreakable. After Tyrant succeeded the enlightenment this time, he might be able to advance his grade further and enter the Combat Emperor realm.

To Tyrant, it was beneficial. It was a perfect timing to stay in the monastery while his two friends left for Nebula Sect.

"This is wonderful. It will be our great honor and luck to have Great Master Ran Feng's high ranked disciple meditating in our monastery."

Zuo Yi Yang rejoiced. His family had been worshipping Great

Master Ran Feng, but they had never seen him in person. Therefore, they were naturally pleased when a high ranked disciple of him agreed to stay in their monastery.

Jiang Chen stayed in the Zuo family's compound for the rest of their days, waiting patiently and enjoying the calm environment. But the one who gained the most was Big Yellow. He was a real freak, perhaps it was because of the pressure created by Jiang Chen and Tyrant's powerful Qis, after sleeping for seven days straight, he advanced his grade to the peak of Eighth Grade Demon King.

However, there were still some potential energy left inside him after reaching the grade. Jiang Chen immediately took out large amount of Nine Solar Holy Water and poured it into Big Yellow's body, inducing another advancement, pushing his grade to the Ninth Grade Demon King.

Big Yellow's physique was a dragon-horse body, he was gifted with a remarkable ability. After achieving the Ninth Grade Demon King, obvious changes could be seen on his body. The dragon horns on his head grew large, becoming more divine. At his current grade, not even a strong Combat Emperor could stop him.

Seven days passed, two jade plates suddenly appeared in the sky above Yuan Yang City. The plates were white and shining with tiny beams of light, a word 'NEBULA' was carved on the surface.

"Come and have a look, quick, what is that?"

"That is the Jade plates of the Nebula Sect. In this recruitment,

our city was given two spots of discipleship. It was said that the emissaries will come and lead the newly-joined disciples back to the sect, but these two jade plates appeared before their arrival.”

“These jade plates are things that many people dream of.”

“Those belonged to the Zuo family, who will dare take it?”

.....

The appearance of the jade plates attracted many people's attention. Once a jade plate was on hand, that person will automatically become a disciple of Nebula Sect. It would be very honorable. But, those people who had seen the plates didn't dare to even touch them because they all knew that only the Zuo family could claim them.

Also, the Nebula Sect placed two jade plates openly in public without worrying who would claim it because there was another test awaiting them in the Nebula Sect.

Every year, when the recruitment of disciples began, they would start from the outside regions. As for the inner regions, they would just decide how many spots of disciples for each city. But to be frank, only geniuses were eligible to join the sect. For example, in Yuan Yang City, only the genius Zuo Ling Er had the rights to join the sect.

A large hand appeared in the sky above the square, grabbing the

two jade plates before disappearing. Afterwards, the sky returned to its silent atmosphere. Without guessing, it was Zuo Yi Yang's hand that took away the plates, as he was the strongest person in Yuan Yang City now.

The high ranked members gathered in the meeting hall of the Zuo family, including Jiang Chen and Zuo Ling Er. Those who were present already knew about the jade plates.

“Brother Jiang, Ling Er, the emissary of Nebula Sect hasn't arrived yet, but the identity jade plates are sent to Yuan Yang City already. These plates symbolize your identities. From now on, you two are disciples of the sect. What a great honor.”

Zuo Yi Yang passed the jade plates to Jiang Chen and Zuo Ling Er respectively.

“Haha, good, good. This is the chance to glorify and illuminate our ancestors. Ling Er has a special physique and gifted abilities even though she is just a twelve year old kid. This talent is deemed to be one of a kind even across the entire Mysterious Domain. Now that she has joined the Nebula Sect, our family's future will be placed on her hands.”

A prestigious elder was full of delight. For their family, this was more than honorable.

“But the emissary hasn't appeared. You two have to travel there by yourselves. There is a message hidden in the jade plates, saying that two of you have to arrive at Nebula Sect in a period of ten

days. Otherwise, your identity as disciples will be withdrawn.”

Zuo Yi Yang said.

“Daddy, we can reach Nebula Sect in less than a day with our speed, we don’t need ten days at all. But, this sect is really mean, they promise to welcome us for the discipleship. Unexpectedly, they didn’t, are they looking down on the Patriarch’s daughter?”

Ling Er looked and sounded haughty which made everyone laugh.

“Ling Er, even if you are the first genius of Yuan Yang City, the geniuses in that sect are uncountable, as it is one of the strongest five. When you arrive in the Nebula Sect, you must learn how to behave.”

Zuo Yi Yang said solemnly to his daughter and continued, “By the way, I haven’t finished explaining the message in the jade plates. If you wonder why Nebula Sect didn’t assign any emissary this time and let you all travel there yourselves in a period of ten days here’s the reason behind it. Recently, a tremendous amount of demons had been invading certain areas in Huang Ling Desert, murdering many businessmen that crossed the path and filling the air in the desert with a foul smell. The sect wants you two to hurry and get there to kill those demons after obtaining the jade plates. At that time, you will be rewarded based on the amount of demons that you have killed. If anyone can kill the head of the demons, it will bring much more benefits. This is a test to you all.”

After listening, Jiang Chen and Zuo Ling Er realized that entering Nebula Sect wasn't as easy as it seemed to be, proving that it was indeed one of the strongest five in the Mysterious Domain. The moment you took the jade plate, the competition began.

Jiang Chen's eyes sparkled. He liked wild ideas, even more on competitions. The more intense the competition, the more fun it would be. Therefore, his journey to the Nebula Sect wasn't only to retrieve the fragment of the Heavenly Saint Sword but also to improve himself.

# Chapter 611 - Huang Ling Desert

---

“Is it just killing demons? No big deal.”

Zuo Ling Er was waving her white and delicate fists, as if she was raring to go for the kill.

“Ling Er, don’t be reckless. Demons are violent and cruel. They’re not easy to deal with, you have to be extra careful.”

Zuo Yi Yang scolded his daughter. He had no other way to convey the message to his daughter who had a lot of nerves. His energy was all put on her. He's really concerned for her journey to Nebula Sect. Zuo Ling Er was indeed gifted, but she was too young and ignorant to know about the cruel world outside, plus her frequent naïve thoughts wouldn’t help her much. People like her would always be taken advantage of in the world outside. Luckily, Jiang Chen was with her on the journey, which had comforted him. Zuo Yi Yang knew that Jiang Chen liked his new sister very much just by looking at their interactions.

“Patriarch is right, demons aren’t the same as beasts. Demons aren’t beasts that are affected by evil enchantment, even humans can be turned into demons. They are different from Devil Religions’ devil cultivators that only focus on the cultivation of devil powers, their natural instincts are still human. Humans and beasts that were enchanted by evil, although their appearance stays the same, their nature turns evil and cruel, it is very inhuman. The combat strengths on their bodies are enhanced by a couple of times, making them a tough enemy to handle.”

Jiang Chen warned. There were many different types of beings in this world. Demons should be in the category which humans hated and resented the most. When a person was contaminated by evil, his mind would be engulfed by darkness, polluting and cleansing his natural instincts, eventually conquering every cell of his body, which made demons more terrifying than ordinary devils.

The blood demon which Jiang Chen fought was one of them.

“What brother Jiang said is true. Currently, a vast number of demons have emerged in Huang Ling Desert. If these demons aren’t taken care of, more of them will gather there. Therefore, your trip to Huang Ling Desert will be dangerous, an ordeal that you two have to face. The Nebula Sect is a powerful influence in Mysterious Domain. To be able to succeed in the sect, trainings and tests that are life threatening are unavoidable. Everyone who has succeeded was molded by many types of life and death situations.

Zuo Yi Yang had just given his daughter a lecture: this daddy seemed to be the most fatherly so far.

“Since it is so dangerous, the Nebula Sect was supposed to send someone to take us there, right? If it isn’t the case, what about those who do not need to pass through Huang Ling Desert? They can just get two demons souls from someone and present it to the Nebula Sect without having to kill any of the demons.”

Zuo Ling Er asked curiously.



“You think Nebula Sect can be easily fooled? No one dares to trick that sect unless they don’t want to live anymore. Let me tell you, ‘NEBULA SECT’ these two words have been a deterrent force in Mysterious Domain. Also, you two have to integrate your Divine Sense into the jade plate, so that it will record all your tracks and movement on your way to the sect. You will know at that time.”

Zuo Yi Yang said.

Jiang Chen and Zuo Ling Er sent their Divine Sense at the jade plates, instantly building a connection with it. The Divine Sense made the jade plates move, then it disappeared and moved into the Dantian of its owner.

“Patriarch, time is of the essence. We have to go now.”

Jiang Chen stood up and held his fists at Zuo Yi Yang.

“Excellent, please help me take care of Ling Er.”

Zuo Yi Yang replied in the same manner without ignoring Jiang Chen’s gestures.

“Hey monk, since you will be staying at Ran Feng Monastery to continue your meditation, I will send Big Yellow to find you if there’s anything.”

Jiang Chen patted Tyrant’s shoulder.

“Alright, be cautious when you arrive at Nebula Sect.”

Tyrant said. A stranger couldn't discern Jiang Chen's intention but Tyrant could. He second-guessed the purpose of his actions. After understanding Jiang Chen's personality while being with him all this time, he knew that his friend wouldn't simply join any sect as he had grown accustomed to a free life, a freedom he was used to. He didn't even make any considerations before turning Yuan Yang City upside down. His actions were not purposeless. Tyrant remembered that his friend was clueless about where to go before. However, the moment they saw the battle between a master of Nebula Sect and an unknown person, he became determined to pay the sect a visit. Tyrant hypothesized that Jiang Chen must have set his eyes on the treasured sword of that master.

Normally, people's intention in joining the Nebula Sect as disciples was to bring back glory to their ancestors and also for their future. Thus, they would treat the sect as a sanctuary. As for Jiang Chen, he had an ulterior motive for his actions. If he continued his path in the sect, he would cause conflicts there sooner or later, turning them into his enemy, and this was what Tyrant was most concerned about.

Of course, he was just imagining the worst case scenario. Tyrant was highly confident about Jiang Chen's capability and means of killing. Whatever matter he faced, he never had problems in settling them. From his past experiences until now, those who went against Jiang Chen never had a pleasant ending.

Moreover, Jiang Chen now possessed many trump cards,

especially the Combat Power Origin talisman given by Great Master Ran Feng. Therefore, it was very difficult for anyone to kill him.

A while later, Jiang Chen led the way out of Yuan Yang City, followed by Zuo Ling Er and Big Yellow. They flew towards Huang Ling Desert. He had no other ideas in bringing Tyrant with him. He could only bring along Big Yellow as there were a lot of people who had the hobby of keeping small beasts, and many of them even own powerful beasts as their mounts.

“Wakaka, it seems like Nebula Sect is going to be full of hustle and bustle soon. Fantastic! The more exciting it is, the more fun it has!”

Big Yellow was carrying Zuo Ling Er on his back and laughed hysterically. It seemed that only this dog was scared of a peaceful world. He knew very well that there would be chaos everywhere Jiang Chen went. The proof was all the incidents he faced with him. It started from Tian Xiang Mountains to the Eastern Continent, and to Liang Province then Yuan Yang City, now to Mysterious Domain. All of the places he passed by were left with his tyrannical marks.

Big Yellow couldn't help but recall the overbearing Nan Bei Chao. That dude wanted to be the conqueror and king of the region, unfortunately Jiang Chen's appearance disappointed him.

“Big brother, what kind of place is Huang Ling Desert? I heard that this desert is located far away. It was originally a deserted place, but there are always treasure and many kinds of special and

strange rocks that attracted many businessmen over. The desert then became full of sand bandits and robbers, but I never thought of the emergence of demons.”

Zuo Ling Er stared at Jiang Chen. As the young miss of the Zuo family, she had the responsibility to know about the places in the Divine Continent. As for the experience, she didn't have them yet as she was merely a twelve year old kid that seldom left her place, making it impossible for her to travel to a far place like Huang Ling Desert.

“It is certainly an isolated area. Huang Ling Desert is a big place, it's not only composed of deserts and sand, there are also mountains. It is as big as the Chaotic Ocean. We don't have to rush our way there, we will be able to get there in just half a day.”

Jiang Chen said. He had gone to countless of places in the world, almost every city or places that were in the continent.

“How did you know that Little Chen? Sounds like you have been there before.”

Big Yellow glanced at Jiang Chen. The only thing he felt was that Jiang Chen knew every single thing, all this while he always used his vast experiences. If there was someone who could find things that Jiang Chen didn't know, Big Yellow would be amazed.

“Big brother, how many disciples do you think the Nebula Sect will recruit for the inner sect disciples?”

Zuo Ling Er asked.

“As a powerful influence like Nebula Sect, most of the inner sect recruits will come from external regions. Since the spots for discipleship for every region are very limited, it will induce intense competition. For instance, there are only two spots of discipleship for Yuan Yang City and this caused the two major powers to fight for it by any means necessary. I think the sect won’t give out a lot of positions of discipleship to the regions because it is one of the strongest in Mysterious Domain. There are also some regions that were excluded for this kind of discipleship as they are under the influence of another power. Last time, those who were chosen to be the disciple of the sect were all at least in the Ninth Grade Combat Kings. This time, the the sect only chooses the gifted. As long as these newbies perform outstandingly, they will receive more attention and be nurtured further. Therefore, little sister, you have to work hard.”

Jiang Chen said and patted his little sister’s head gently. In his eyes, Zuo Ling Er’s talent could be compared to the geniuses of an inherited ancient clan in the Pure Land of Divine Continent. A twelve year old Ninth Grade Combat King was a freak to anyone. Staying at her palace for so long was because of her father, Zuo Yi Yang, who didn’t publicized his daughter’s talent. Or else she would have been taken by either one of the five major powers. Her father only allowed her to join one of the major powers after she had reached twelve years old and reached Ninth Grade Combat King.

“No worries, I will outshine every genius of the Nebula Sect. At that time, I will be the one to protect you If anyone who dares to bully my big brother, I will punch him on the face, breaking all his

teeth.”

Ling Er swirled her fists, sounding like a gangster.

Jiang Chen was speechless. His little sister’s head and body were small but her mouth was bigger than anyone. Before she even entered the Nebula Sect, she was already confident that she could be better than any of the geniuses.

On their journey, two humans and a dog were fighting like brothers and sisters cheerfully. It brought many laughs to Jiang Chen after knowing his strange little sister more. Especially the fact that Big Yellow and her were like-minded, having a lot in common. This type of group wouldn’t feel dull or boring even if they were travelling for a longer route.

.....

“These strong Qi must be similar to us. I think they’ve also been chosen by the Nebula Sect as a genius. It is similar to my thoughts earlier. All of them are Ninth Grade Combat Kings. Nebula Sect directly accepted them as disciples then nurture them, which is a lot easier than recruiting disciples of the inner sect.”

Jiang Chen smiled.

“Big brother, that person dares to provoke me, do you think I should punch him?”

Zuo Ling Er moved like a boxer, ready to attack.

“Ling Er, you are a girl anyhow, you have to learn how to be gentle. Can’t you be this barbarous?”

Big Yellow couldn’t help but ask.

“What is gentle?”

Zuo Ling Er asked attentively. It made Jiang Chen and Big Yellow stagger, they almost fell from the sky. It seemed like it was a mistake to talk about gentleness with Zuo Ling Er.

# Chapter 612 - You Look Disgusting!

---

Two humans and a dog were travelling comfortably, their speed was fast. Merely half a day's time was used for their travel. It was evening when they reached Huang Ling Desert. After passing through mountains, a wave of hot air welcomed them. The sand in the wind made them squint just to see the front, the weather also changed drastically.

A vast piece of desert stretched before them. It was a very huge land, their eyes couldn't find its end. They could hear the howl of the wind through the desert, in front of them was very blurry as if dust had blocked their view. It's a sandstorm! The storm rumbled into their ears.

This was the enormous Huang Ling Desert that was covered mostly by sand, and the rest were deserted mountains.

“So this is Huang Ling Desert? It has very bad weather...”

Zuo Ling Er frowned.

“I sense a very intense demonic aura, it seems that this place has never been safe.”

Big Yellow shook his sturdy tail as his eyes glowed, he felt intoxicated to fight with the brutal demons very soon. Now that he had reached the Ninth Grade Demon King, not even a First Grade Combat Emperor could be his opponent. His combat strength was beyond imagination, any ordinary demons would face death when



they see him.

Whoosh Whoosh

They could see light rays from time to time racing forward into the deeper region of the desert. It seemed like the other newly-joined disciples had arrived.

“Let’s go in as well.”

Jiang Chen nodded, then he led the way and flew forward.

Whoosh

After flying for about a thousand miles, a brilliant light appeared below them, racing towards Zuo Ling Er’s direction. It was yellowish, similar to the color of sand. If one wasn’t careful enough, it was impossible to discern it.

“A demon is hidden down there. Die!”

Zuo Ling Er saw it coming, she prepared to punch the incoming light.

“Be careful, this light is poisonous.”

Jiang Chen was faster than Zuo Ling Er, deflecting the light

before she could touch it. He casted his True Dragon Palm and extended his hand down to the ground. His giant Dragon Claw covered a part of the land, and pulled up a pile of sand and a twelve meter poisonous scorpion. The scorpion was of the same color as the sand, it had camouflage itself with it, making it difficult to find its existence. Its poison was lethal and deadly. However, this scorpion's grade was too weak, it hadn't even reached the Demon King realm. It struggled under the giant Dragon Claw, but it was useless. Even if it had extruded a lethal poison to the Dragon Claw, it was no use because Jiang Chen was immune to any poison.

“Big brother, kill it! It looks very disgusting.”

Zuo Ling Er grimaced.

\*Ka Cha\*

Jiang Chen exerted force on his True Dragon Palm, crushing the poisonous scorpion. It was then followed by raging flames that incinerated its entire body without leaving any remains. As for its demon soul, Jiang Chen wasn't interested in it at all. He wasn't interested in a demon soul which hadn't even entered the Demon King realm. It was just useless to obtain it, and he wasn't in need of its lethal poison.

“Big brother, even though the ugly scorpion had poison, I could easily kill it, you don't have to make any move.”

Zuo Ling Er complained for her big brother's sudden attack.

“Ke ke, I have forgotten that you are also quite powerful.”

Jiang Chen made two deliberate cough. The thing that prompted him into action was the poison he detected from the light. He was afraid that Zuo Ling Er would get hurt by it, but he forgot that Zuo Ling Er was a Ninth Grade Combat King. A tiny scorpion like that wouldn't do any harm to her.

In truth, the scorpion wasn't a demon, it was just a beast that lived on the desert. However, it was a violent creature, which could be harmful to ordinary people.

Huang Ling Desert was too large. In their journey, they hadn't met anyone besides that thing.

\*Bang!\*

After flying for another thousand miles, they sensed a battle ahead. Jiang Chen and Zuo Ling Er made eye contact and nodded to go and take a look.

There was a sand dune at the front. On the surface of it were roughly ten people that were in two separate rows. Right in the middle, a giant demon laid on the ground with its skull smashed and broken. There was a hole on its skull, and its demon soul had been acquired by the people around. There was a group of people who were wearing the same clothes, blue robes with an array of stars carved on their chest.

These people's grade weren't that powerful, they were just in the Combat King realm. The lowest was a Fifth Grade and the highest was an Eighth Grade. There were seven people on the opposite side. The leaders were an ordinary young man, and a girl who wore sexy dress with a make-up, a pushed up breast, and a fair skin. Although she wasn't comparable to Yan Chenyu and Wu Ningzhu's unmatched beauty, she was still deemed to be a beautiful woman.

On the other side, there were four men. The leader was a young man who had full of beard and looked ferocious. He was a peak Eighth Grade Combat King. By the looks of it, the larger group found the smaller group intimidating.

“Hu Lai, don't cross the line, this demon was killed by us, what's your connection to its demon soul?”

That sexy girl spoke, full of rage.

“We have contributed in killing this demon, if it wasn't for our group's help, do you think you can defeat this demon? Hand over the demon soul now!”

The bearded man seemed to be called Hu Lai, his face looked like he was smiling even though he wasn't. His gaze was fixed on the clothes of the fascinating girl, scanning it from top to bottom.

“This is absurd, you all appeared at the time when we almost killed this demon. It is obvious that you are robbing our prey away. Even without your help, the demon would still die by our hands.”

The young leader was angry, but he sounded to be in fear of Hu Lai. His tone wasn't emboldened by rage.

“Lin Kang, I warned you not to go against me, you won't have a pleasant ending.”

Hu Lai humphed coldly at Lin Kang, not putting him in his eyes.

“Hu Lai, we came here today to train in our own means, why do you want to be so hard on just a demon soul?”

The blue robed youth wanted to express his anger, but he knew that he couldn't afford to offend Hu Lai. He could only swallow the unfairness.

“To be hard on you, so what? Either you hand over the demon soul to me, or ask that blue robed girl to stay in my bedroom for a night. So how is it gonna be?”

Hu Lai's eyes sparkled with obscene light, making no effort to hide his indecent gesture, scanning the blue robed girl's body again with his bare eyes.

“Hahaha”

The three people behind Hu Lai laughed.

“You!!”

The blue robed girl was infuriated, but she still got it under control.

“Blue-robed senior sister, why not hand it over to him? His brother is a popular figure on the Earth rank that we can’t afford to provoke.”

A disciple behind the blue robed girl said.

“Little sister, if you promise to stay beside me I can guarantee your prosperity in the Nebula Sect. This is a great opportunity. You have no idea how many female disciples of the sect are interested in me.”

Hu Lai laughed lewdly. He was originally ugly and his distasteful laugh disgusted people.

“Big brother, this BIG BEARD MAN IS DISGUSTING!!!! I can’t continue to watch anymore!”

At this time, a sound erupted behind the sand dune.

“Who was that?!”

Hu Lai turned his head and clamored. There was actually someone who said he was disgusting, that person must be tired of living. Until now, there wasn’t anyone in the Nebula Sect who

dared to oppose him.

Everyone looked towards the source of the sound, trying to see who had such an audacious courage to insult Hu Lai. They saw a white robed youth walking over, beside him was a little girl that seemed about twelve years old. The girl looked like a doll, her hair was pulled back into a ponytail, it was very adorable. She walked in confidence and in big strides. There was a big yellow dog beside her. This dog looked robust and sturdy, even stronger than a fine horse which was very rare.

“You Big Beard dared to use your lewd gaze to stare at a lady. It’s absolutely shameful and disgusting. I have vomited three times already before walking out.”

Zuo Ling Er pointed at Hu Lai, sounding domineering.

Her words literally stunned everyone on the scene, especially Hu Lai. It was like a dream, a lolita came out from nowhere and pointed at his nose, scolding him... This was an insult!

The others were worried for this girl’s bold action. Who was this girl? She was too bold to be like this. Plus, did she come to Huang Ling Desert because she had nothing else to do? Didn’t her parents tell her that this was a dangerous place to be in?

However, the blue robed girl felt satisfied with the little girl’s response, she instantly felt fond of her.

“Little girl, what did you just say?!”

Hu Lai finally reacted and became very furious.

“She said that you are disgusting, My god, you certainly look ugly, even Master Dog can’t help feeling repulsed by such a distasteful face. You are very brave in letting people see you, I admire you for that.”

Big Yellow’s mouth was excellent at insulting people. To people like Hu Lai, he wouldn’t miss the opportunity to throw an insult.

“Where did this dog come from? Coming here to die?”

A disciple beside Hu Lai shouted.

“Bastard, you actually shouted in front of Master Dog? Do you believe that I will fart you to death?”

Big Yellow glanced at the disciple.

“The Nebula Sect’s disciples are here to train and take care of the demons, but you all are fighting just for a demon soul...how embarrassing...”

Jiang Chen said while he stood with his arms crossed at the back. He already knew that these were all the disciples of Nebula Sect. It seemed that not only the newly-recruited disciples like them were



here for the test, there were also many inner sect disciples who had come. He was speechless, these disciples were fighting for just a demon soul?

“Hey kid, do you know who you are talking to? You wanna die?!”

Another disciple beside Hu Lai said while pointing at Jiang Chen’s face.

“I hate those who point at my face!”

Jiang Chen humphed coldly.

\*Argh!\*

The disciple made a few steps back and coughed out blood after screaming. Everyone was shocked, this young man’s humph actually made a Fifth Grade Combat King spit blood. This was rather too shocking. Just how powerful was this young man?

...

# Chapter 613 - A Figure On The Earth

## Ranking

---

“Who are you people? You dare to attack Nebula Sect’s disciples?”

Hu Lai sounded aggressive. Although he had seen through the young man’s ability, he was still not afraid of him. First, he was a peak Eighth Grade Combat King, he was never less powerful than any of them. Second, he was a disciple of Nebula Sect, he didn’t believe anyone would disrespect the sect unless they didn’t want to live.

“I am also a disciple of Nebula Sect.”

Jiang Chen turned his hand over and a jade plate appeared on his palm. Hu Lai and the others instantly knew Jiang Chen’s identity. They were sure about it, there was no mistake. No one had ever dared to forge the jade plates.

“You are the new inner-sect disciple’s recruits? I never thought that you all have come and join the expedition before entering the sect. I am Lan Yi. It’s my pleasure to meet you, senior brother.”

She bowed slightly at Jiang Chen. The sect’s recruitment for inner-sect disciples wasn’t kept as a secret. She showed her courtesy and respect to Jiang Chen because she knew that the requirements for this time’s discipleship was just as high as before. They were the rare geniuses from many different states. As the position for discipleship was limited to each region, the

competition was intense. The ones who succeeded were undoubtedly special, they are at least at the Ninth Grade Combat King. Plus, she had seen how Jiang Chen injured a Fifth Grade Combat King with just a humph that he coughed out blood. She also felt some pressure from him, which meant that he was the strongest amongst them. Therefore, calling him 'senior brother' was a necessary courtesy.

“Junior sister is too polite.”

Jiang Chen smiled.

“So you are a newbie? Since we all belong to the same sect, I will forgive you for being disrespectful just now. As long as they hand me the demon soul, I will treat this matter as though it never happened.”

Hu Lai changed his attitude and behavior after seeing Jiang Chen's jade plate. But, according to his character, he would always get whatever he wanted. Thus, he must obtain the demon soul to retain his reputation.

“Your name is Hu Lai? You should feel sorry for your name. Today I will teach you a lesson. For the things in this world, only those who spent an effort to acquire something are privileged to have it. That demon soul is already in their possession, so it belongs to them. If you are capable enough, you can go and steal it. Sadly, your luck is bad today because you encountered me. I am a person who doesn't like to be a troublemaker. But sometimes, I care about people's stuff. To be blunt, I don't like you. I agree with what they said, you look damn disgusting! So, I advise you to

quickly disappear from my sight before I get angry.”

Jiang Chen squinted both of his eyes while speaking. It was difficult to build a good impression of somebody, but resenting someone was always easy. The thick-bearded guy in front of them was a person who naturally attracted resentment from people.

“What did you just say? It seems like you still don’t know my identity. Kid, don’t think that your combat power can help you to be arrogant here. Our sect isn’t comparable to your little tiny area. You better apologize to me immediately, or else I will let you know what is ‘regret.’”

Hu Lai was furious. He had given this kid a chance, like giving him an inch but wants to get a mile. This was unacceptable, even when a Ninth Grade Combat King met him during normal days, they would be courteous and polite.

\*Pa\*

Before Hu Lai could finish his sentence, a palm slapped his face. The slap was full of force, causing him to roll three times before stopping. Jiang Chen’s speed was too fast that Hu Lai, an Eighth Grade Combat King, couldn’t react.

\*Ke\* \*Ke\*

Hu Lai coughed painfully, coughing out two of his teeth stained with blood.

“You, you...You dared to slap me?!!”

Hu Lai mumbled his words. His rage overwhelmed his logic, he charge towards Jiang Chen.

“Get lost!”

Jiang Chen raged. One of his foot kicked and landed on Hu Lai’s big face. Hu Lai whined before he flew a hundred meters away and fell heavily to the sandy ground, forming a deep pit. After that, he fainted.

\*Hiss\*

The rest of the disciples breathed cold air while looking at Jiang Chen with terrified eyes. This youth was very strong. Hu Lai was just one step away from Ninth Grade Combat King but he couldn’t even withstand a single blow from him. Most importantly, when Jiang Chen struck Hu Lai, he was really like a newborn calf that is not afraid of the tiger. Despite all of that, they felt a sense of comfort when they saw Hu Lai was beaten up like that, it was the dream that they had longed to come true.

“I have forgotten to tell you, I hate the most when people rely on their identity to bully others!”

Jiang Chen said while darting an angry glance at Hu Lai who was lying immobile on the ground.

“You... What’s... your name?”

A disciple that followed Hu Lai said. His voice was trembling with fear.

“Jiang Chen.”

Jiang Chen declared his name openly. There was no point in hiding his identity as he was joining the Nebula Sect anyway.

“OK! Jiang Chen! When this expedition is over, you will be finished! There will be people coming to find you, to make out the bills you have incurred! No, everyone here in the desert will find you.”

He quickly carried the unconscious Hu Lai after finishing his sentence and disappeared like smoke. The other two didn’t dare to delay and immediately followed suit.

“Thank you very much for brother Jiang’s help.”

Lin Kang held his fists at Jiang Chen and the rest followed. Although Jiang Chen had just become a disciple of Nebula Sect and hadn’t even gone to the sect, they still called him senior brother. An influential sect like this never fixed anyone’s title according to the person’s seniority, it all depended on the person’s capability and strength.

“Just trying to lend a hand, I usually interfere when I see an unfair situation.”

Jiang Chen said with a carefree grin.

“But, brother has injured Hu Lai. That will bring big trouble.”

Lan Yi frowned in worry. She felt very grateful for Jiang Chen’s action. A hot-blooded personality but has a composed demeanor were very attractive to any women including this girl. His bravery in kicking Hu Lai’s ass delighted everyone. She had grown irresistibly fond of him instantly. Of course, it was just her it didn’t involved Jiang Chen’s feeling.

She thought that since Jiang Chen is a newbie and there were some things that he had to know.

“What’s the big trouble? Tell me more.”

Jiang Chen said with ease.

“Brother Jiang, there are things you don’t know about Hu Lai. He isn’t that powerful, but his brother is. His brother, Hu Song, was the number two on the Earth ranking. He entered the Combat Emperor realm recently. Although the list haven’t been updated, he is already publicly recognized as the number one. Which will make him one of the core disciples soon. Plus, Hu Song has a good relationship with the core disciples, he is not a person to be trifled with. Now that you hit Hu Lai, Hu Song won’t let this go. That was

why no one dared to offend Hu Lai.”

Someone said.

Jiang Chen nodded. He had already anticipated this situation. There had to be someone who backed him up, if not he wouldn't be such an arrogant prick.

“What ranking?”

Jiang Chen asked. He wasn't interested in Hu Song. Instead, he would like to find out more about the ranking.

“Brother Jiang has just become one of us and don't know a lot about the sect. There are a total of two list, the Sky Ranking and the Earth Ranking. The former is the list of the most powerful core disciples, a far-fetched goal for us to achieve. The latter is the list of inner-sect disciples, it is updated every year. The reason the sect built these two systems is to stimulate the disciples to train hard and be competitive. The disciples that have been ranked among the top ten in the Earth Ranking are the genius of geniuses. The sect always valued these disciples and paid extra attention to them.”

Lan Yi explained. Nebula Sect is a strong power in Mysterious Domain, no one knew how many disciples it had. Among the abundant amount of disciples, it was imaginable how competitive it would become under this circumstances. Without a doubt, only those who were talented could be listed in the Earth Rank. Hu Song was ranked second before he even entered the Combat Emperor realm. But now, his level is at the First Grade Combat



Emperor, making him eligible to be listed on the Sky Ranking system.

“That’s right, Hu Song is very strong. Since brother Jiang has beaten up Hu Lai, I’m afraid Hu Song won’t let this go easily. Also, he’s going to come to the desert because we were informed that a Combat Emperor Demon King will appear. Whoever kills that thing will be rewarded with an Emperor pill by the sect. This pill is very useful to a Combat King cultivator. If a person is at the peak of Ninth Grade Combat King, he can reach the First Grade Combat Emperor realm instantly after taking the pill. Also, any ordinary Combat King who consumes the pill can directly bring his level to a higher grade. This expedition is only limited to the inner-sect disciples, no core disciples are involved. Those geniuses on the Earth Rank have fully prepared for this hunt. Many of them formed alliances to defeat the Demon King and obtain the Emperor pill. Hu Song is still qualified to come because he hasn’t been officially acknowledged as one of the core disciples.”

Lin Kang felt terrified as he talked about Hu Song.

“An Emperor pill is already useless to a Combat Emperor, isn’t Hu Song’s participation in this expedition wasting his time?”

Jiang Chen said. He was quite interested with the Emperor pill. The refinery of the pill had to go through a difficult process as the raw materials were special. He hadn’t even have completely refined an Emperor pill. The pill had no side effects to cultivators, and it would advance the consumer’s grade by one. To the inner-sect disciples of Nebula Sect, the price was undeniably attractive.

“If Hu Song is here to kill demons, it is probably for Hu Lai.”

Lan Yi said. Hu Song is Hu Lai’s brother, he wanted to help his younger brother obtain the reward but it still was inexcusable and very unfair. As for the blue-robed disciples, they were here to kill some demons so that they could exchange the demon souls with important cultivation resources.

## Chapter 614 - As Fierce As A Lion

---

“Hehe, Little Chen, it seems like you have offended someone important. We have huge trouble ahead of us now.”

Big Yellow chuckled, his face didn't seem the least bit concerned for Jiang Chen. Lan Yi was speechless when she saw the sturdy big yellow dog. He then gave Jiang Chen a strange look. She thought that people normally keeps a fierce or rare beasts by their side, but this youth was keeping a big yellowish dog beside him. He really did have an unusual hobby.

Although Jiang Chen had shaken the entire Liang Province, that wasn't enough to let everyone in the Mysterious Domain know. His ability to initiate disaster was shocking, perhaps only some of the big powers knew about this. But, these disciples didn't, they didn't have any impressions of Jiang Chen at all. For them, he was just a stranger.

“It is them who have offended the person they shouldn't have offended.”

Zuo Ling Er said, showing her high confidence for Jiang Chen's ability.

The group's gazes fell on Zuo Ling Er, they were thinking that this girl hadn't even grown some mature brain cells before talking. Bringing a dog was already troublesome and it made them wonder why would he bring an inexperienced and naïve little girl to Nebula Sect. They knew that beasts were allowed in the Sect but

outsiders and strangers weren't. Jiang Chen didn't tell them and they didn't ask either. Since this place is Huang Ling Desert and not the headquarters of the sect, they didn't bother asking about it. But certainly, they wouldn't have guessed that the little girl was also one of the sect's newly-recruited disciples.

“What time will the Earth rank geniuses reach here?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Some of them are already here. The last should be here by tomorrow and they'll all be here. The amount of demons in Huang Ling Desert this time is unusually more and they are all ferocious and cunning, making them a very hard enemy to fight. Merely ten days' time were given to complete the mission, therefore, many disciples participated. Many of them were still outside of the deeper regions of the desert. It's because they were struggling to fight as they don't understand their enemies.”

A disciple said.

“All of them will be here tomorrow? And Hu Song wants to kill the leader of the demons? I'm afraid that he will be disappointed.”

Jiang Chen revealed a smirk on his face. He had a hidden plan in his mind. He thought that since he had provoked Hu Song, he must play along. Jiang Chen was never afraid of things going out of control.

“Keke, Little Chen, to you, competing with those people on the Earth rank is pointless, isn’t it? Even if it is that Hu Song, he is not qualified to fight you.”

Big Yellow smiled coldly. He knew well enough how powerful Jiang Chen is. He was a special Eighth Grade Combat King. An ordinary First Grade Combat Emperor wouldn’t be a match for him. Also, his friend’s techniques were numerous, making his enemy vulnerable. All the inner-sect disciples were Combat Kings, the top ten on the Earth rank were at least of the Ninth Grade Combat King. For those weak people, even Zuo Ling Er and Big Yellow could finish them in a split second.

However, Big Yellow’s words made those blue robed group roll their eyes with disbelief. They felt that the dog didn’t know how to speak his words, it did not even put Hu Song in his eyes. Jiang Chen was scary, but he was only a Combat King. It’s impossible to be compared with a Combat Emperor like Hu Song. For them they were just boasting and bull-shitting.

“I’m not saying that I want to compete with them.”

Jiang Chen smiled deeper. He looked at Big Yellow, “Big Yellow, let’s accomplish a big mission.”

“Bingo! That’s why I said I know how you think, it is going to be very exciting this time. Before those geniuses come, I won’t leave even one fur behind.”

Big Yellow had seen through Jiang Chen’s plan and he felt

incredibly thrilled. He liked Jiang Chen's decisive actions. In Nebula Sect's inner-sect disciples, he believed that there wasn't anyone that could fight Jiang Chen or anyone that could equal his strength. They would clear the entire desert, eliminating all demons, including the leader. When Hu Song came, there wouldn't be anything left. If they knew Jiang Chen was the one who eliminated all the demons, his name would become famous before he even entered Nebula Sect. How stimulating was that?

This was the way, it must be this way!

The group was stunned, they were trying to figure out what the youth and the dog was planning to do. Of course, no one would be able to, even if they squeezed all their brain juices to find out why.

\*Bang!\*

Suddenly, something was shaking heavily below the ground as if a big earthquake was going on. They could see layers of sandy ground bulging up continuously like something horrifying was drifting beneath them. It seemed that could drill itself out any time. It became waves of sands that rippled layer by layer, yellowish sand mingled with the air and strong wind, changing the weather drastically.

“Not good, this must be a giant demon, it has came under us.”

Lin Kang shouted in terror. A few of the disciples' faces turned ugly. They could sense the sudden emergence of a massive amount of demons, roughly a hundred of them including the powerful

demons. These demons clearly had sensed their existence and the dead body of a beast. They were rushing over in all directions, besieging them.

The enemy obviously outnumbered them. Even if they combined their strength, there was no way to fight with the demons. The group grimaced and feared for the incoming enemies, they automatically stayed behind Jiang Chen.

“Don’t worry, let me protect you guys. These demons are here for their death.”

Zuo Ling Er patted her chest to guarantee them. But they couldn’t listen to her, she must be kidding dangerously. They better stick to Jiang Chen, they suggested the kid to stand aside.

Sand waves dashed to the sky like yellow pillars that have appeared out of nowhere, wreaking havoc on the spatial zone.

\*Hou\*

Violent roars rumbled from all directions. The roar continued until giant monsters drilled out of the sandy ground one by one. Their body was surrounded with intense demonic aura. Their skin had shiny scales, their mouth were full of sharp tusks, and their eyes were red. After they saw the humans, they lunged forward.

A sixty meter demon charged at Zuo Ling Er. It must have thought that Ling Er’s skin and flesh were soft, it had to be nice to

eat them.

“Hee!”

Zuo Ling Er shouted. She swooshed past the incoming demon, then stop on the its head. The comparison between them was like an ant and a cat, she was absolutely tiny.

Ling Er raised her clenched fist, gold brilliant light illuminated from the fist before punching down to the demon’s head.

\*Bang!\*

\*Woo\*

The demon wailed in agony, its skull was crushed by Zuo Ling Er. Blood spurted from the cracks and a demon soul was grabbed by her. She kept it.

My God!

The blue-robed group widened their blurry eyes, and changed their impression of the little girl instantly. How could this harsh kid be that powerful? A punch can kill an Eighth Grade Demon? It was effortless. This was astonishing. They could see the Qi that was released by Zuo Ling Er, it was beyond their grades, which meant that she might be a Ninth Grade Combat King.



Damn it! A twelve-year-old girl was a Ninth Grade Combat King? Was this a joke?

However, the truth couldn't escape their eyes. Ling Er was as fierce as a lion. While they were still stunned, she had already killed four powerful demons. Every demon died under her one punch, it's as easy as killing a chicken. The current event was giving the group a big blow. They called themselves geniuses, but comparing with this girl, no one would have the courage to call themselves geniuses anymore.

They finally understood. The little girl wasn't a follower of Jiang Chen. She was likely to be one of the newly-recruited disciple of Nebula Sect. It seemed that the sect had gained a peerless genius.

\*Hou\* \*Hou\*

Demons roared insanely, charging at anyone. The ground was occupied mostly by demons, there were almost a hundred of them. There were two Ninth Grade Demon Kings amongst them. To the blue-robed group, this was a catastrophe.

“Big Yellow, attack! There's no need to be polite.”

Jiang Chen said to Big Yellow.

“Kaka, Master Dog has been frustrated and impatient.”

“Kaka!”

Big Yellow shouted, lunging forward with his head that illuminated a golden light. Everything he passed through never stood up again. Those ferocious demons weren't his opponent, Big Yellow's head directly smashed them into pieces, including the Ninth Grade Demon King. None of them could bear Big Yellow's attack at all.

The group opened their mouth as if they had seen the scariest thing in the world. This dog was crazily powerful, crashing a Ninth Grade Demon King to death just like that. Was this even logical?

“Why are you guys still standing there? Waiting for the demons to eat you all?”

Jiang Chen stared at them, a brilliant Fiery Sharp Spear appeared in his hand. It was the spear that he robbed from Kong Yang in Yuan Yang City. It was an Emperor Grade Weapon. He raised his spear and pierced it violently at the group of demons. A golden ray rushed out from the tip of the spear, carrying scorching flames. The ray was like a sharp sword, never leaving anything it touched uncut. This move pierced through more than tens of demons, forming a hole in their body, the wounded demons all died on the spot.

After another swing of the Fiery Sharp Spear, tens of demons died instantly like ants dying when they were stepped on. It seemed that the demons were letting these three slaughter them, but in truth they were just totally defenseless.

The group was extremely shocked. Weapons were ready in their hands, they fought those demons that charged at them. They had never seen such slaughtering of demons. These two people and a dog were peerless.

At the same time, they felt happy for the three's arrival. If it wasn't for their help, they could already imagine their deaths should these demons emerged.

“Haha...”

Ling Er was killing excitedly. She didn't feel a slightest bit of discomfort being in such a bloody scene, as if she was born with a violent gene and slaughtering was her hobby.

# Chapter 615 - Everybody Freeze

---

\*Pu Chi\*

The Fiery Sharp Spear had pierced into another Ninth Grade demon's skull, crushing it into pieces. The power of the Emperor Weapon increased in Jiang Chen's hands because of the combined power of True Dragon Fire and Lightning True Fire. It was even more powerful than in Kong Yang's hands, something demons couldn't endure.

“Hahaha”

“Kakaka”

Zuo Ling Er and Big Yellow became streaks of light that were continuously killing the surviving demons. They were both ferocious, slaughtering demons as if chopping gourds and melons. On the contrary, the disciples of Nebula Sect were driven frantic by the demons. They were having a hard time killing their enemies even though they were together. Two people, including Jiang Chen, had already crushed most of the enemy's forces. The others shouldn't have any problems dealing with the remaining demons.

At this very moment, many of the sect's disciples sensed the powerful waves of combat from different places in the desert. They all shifted their attention to the source. They were the newly-recruited disciples just like Jiang Chen and Zuo Ling Er.

“A very strong combat aura, I can feel the devil aura erupting to

the sky. Indeed, there are a lot of demons. Seems like our comrades have been besieged, should we go have a look?”

“Do not be hasty. The amount of demons is overwhelming. If we go there, I’m afraid we can’t do much to help to the situation. I can sense the intensity of the battle, one of the top ten geniuses has to be there.”

“Fantastic, the more the better! I’ve just joined the sect, this is a great opportunity for me to perform a mass killing.”

.....

Many of them headed to the source of the battle. A few disciples who were rookies just like Jiang Chen were desperate to achieve something big. So, they travelled faster than anyone. However, all movements they sensed before suddenly stopped, the waves of combat faded and disappeared completely, along with the sand storm.

“What happened? I could feel an intense battle just a while ago, now it is gone in just a split second. Can it be that the battle is over? So fast?”

“Let’s go and take a look.”

They doubted the matter, it was there just now. Some had already prepared for the fight. They were stunned that the battle was over. They had to find out what was going on.

\*Whizz\* \*Whizz\* \*Whizz\*

They were fast and disappeared with a flash of light. When they finally arrived, they all stood rooted to the ground. Their eyes widened, not believing what they had just seen.

Within a forty mile radius of the desert was in havoc. Big holes and pits were left after the battle, but this wasn't the scary part. They saw in terror, the dead bodies of demons were scattered all around the place. The bodies weren't complete anymore, there were different body parts here and there. Blood stained all over the ground, a stinging stench of blood mingled in the air. There were more than a hundred of strong demons there. However, without exception, all of them died.

The person had to be extraordinarily powerful to slaughter these demons within a short period of time. It was truly nerve wracking.

Then, all the attention was focused on the group of people standing at the center surrounded by the dead bodies of demons. With the exception of a white-clothed youth and a little girl, the rest were dressed in blue robes which meant they were disciples of Nebula Sect.

At the moment, Lan Yi and her comrades were looking at the bodies again, and they felt a rush of fright in their hearts. They couldn't forget these three ferocious slaughterers for the rest of their lives. Killing those demons was just like blowing dust away for them. The three of them were truly heaven defying geniuses.

Thinking back at the dog's boastful comments earlier, they realized he wasn't boasting after all.

“What the hell? So many demons? It seems like there is a Ninth Grade Demon King's body. It wouldn't be them that killed those demons, right?”

“Impossible, those two are Lan Yi and Lin Kang. I know them. They would definitely die if they met these demons. Take a look at the white-clothed young man and the little girl. I think they are new. Don't tell me that it is them who killed the demons!”

“Certainly not, the demons are too many. It's impossible for them to kill it all with such speed. I think there had to be an accident, perhaps a genius came to help them and just left.”

.....

The scene shook their minds, the people who just arrived were shocked. The demons were unbelievably many, it couldn't be gotten rid of so easily.

“See, most of the demons souls haven't been dug, Haha...I cannot be leaving those prizes there.”

“It is true, there are so many demon's souls. It is foolish not to dig them out.”

Most of them started to see what the few just noticed, it was

those demon souls that weren't dug out yet from the brutally slaughtered demons. That was because Jiang Chen was just too lazy to dig those inferior demon's souls out. He only dug out those demon souls that were at least Seventh Grade or above. He wasn't interested in the rest of them.

\*Whizz\* \*Whizz\* \*Whizz\*

About twenty to thirty people suddenly appeared in the sky, flying towards the demon's dead bodies. They were afraid that delaying would allow others to dig their targeted demon's souls away. Two or three new Ninth Grade Combat King disciples moved the fastest. To the other disciples, they were strong but were still new. They had to prove themselves by getting as many demon's souls as possible. That would be the proof of their capabilities.

“Stop!”

Jiang Chen shouted suddenly. Those disciples who were about to dig the demon souls stopped their movements and looked at him.

“Are these the dignified Nebula Sect's disciples? Are they always getting rewards without paying any contribution or effort? These demon's souls aren't related to you in any way. If you all want them, kill for them. Don't forget. This is a training, not a treasure hunt!”

Jiang Chen said bluntly. He wasn't used to seeing these kinds of people, coming here to steal their prizes and acting like Jiang Chen didn't exist. If they wanted the demon souls, they could ask for it.



He was sure he would give it to them in an orderly manner. These were all killed by them, what they just need to do was to act appropriately. Did such free things exist in the world?

“Who are you? You mean, these demons were all killed by you?”

A Ninth Grade Combat King disciple looked at Jiang Chen. His tone was a little rude. He could feel Jiang Chen's Qi, it was merely an Eighth Grade Combat King. Although they still couldn't find out who did these to the demons, they didn't believe this young man in white did it.

“It's not only me, it was us.”

Jiang Chen said. The word 'us' included Lan Yi and her comrades.

“Haha...you said you all killed them? Who will believe it? You are merely a step earlier than us. Could it be that you all want to claim all of these demon's souls? Judging by your clothes, apparently, you are one of the newbies. In that case, we all have the equal right to claim them. Why not just share them equally?”

That person laughed, neglecting Jiang Chen's comment. He pierced into the skull of the demon with the short blade in his hand.

“Trying to steal things through reason? You are a typical person that needs to be beaten up.”

Jiang Chen moved a step and came before the disciple. He raised his hand and slapped him. To deal with this kind of person, he couldn't care much to argue with him. Thus, slapping him was the best solution.

\*Pa\*

A clear and loud sound was heard. Jiang Chen's palm reached that Ninth Grade Combat King's face, making him wail in pain before he was sent thirty metres away. His body landed on a dead demon's body and bounced off to the ground. It shocked everyone. The disciple was lying motionlessly on the ground and had lost the ability to stand up. Half of his face was swollen and blood filled his mouth.

\*Wah\*

The scene caused a wave of commotion. Everyone stopped what they were doing, especially those who had looked down on Jiang Chen. Now, they looked at him in terror like they had just seen a terrifying beast.

“What the hell? Who is this guy? He is powerful. A slap from him and a Ninth Grade Combat King couldn't stand up anymore.”

“Yeah, he's very frightening. That person is a newly recruited inner-sect disciple. He must be stronger than most of us. He is a Ninth Grade Combat King, but he didn't even have the chance to react. This is shaking me, could it be that those demons were really

killed by that white-robed man?”

“Senior sister Lan Yi, who are these powerful guys?”

No one was calm. Someone asked Lan Yi through True Qi transmission.

“I have forgotten to introduce him to you all. He is one of the newly-recruited disciples, brother Jiang Chen. Also, senior sister Zuo Ling Er is one of them. You all aren’t guessing wrongly, these demons were all killed by them.”

Lan Yi said loudly. She now knew Zuo Ling Er’s name and called her senior sister without hesitation. Despite the fact that she was just a twelve-year-old girl, her level and the way she killed those demons were all witnessed by her. She wouldn’t feel reluctant at all to call her that.

“What?!”

Everyone exclaimed, their eyes were full of disbelief. They thought Lan Yi was just joking with them at first but they found out that she was telling the truth when they remembered how Jiang Chen slapped the Ninth Grade Combat King to the ground. They felt that this new disciple was too powerful.

And, Lan Yi actually called that little girl senior sister? Wasn’t that absurd?

Regardless of whether what Lan Yi said was real or fake, they wouldn't dare to touch those dead bodies anymore. Even if Jiang Chen wasn't the one who killed the demons, since he was just too frightening, no one could afford to offend him.

“Lan Yi, these demon souls are yours. You and your comrades may dig them out and distribute them equally.”

Jiang Chen talked to Lan Yi and Lin Kang. He was very clear of what kindness and fairness were. Lan Yi and her comrades were the ones who fought with him just now and he was not in need of those demon's souls. Naturally, they should be given to them, instead of giving to those appropriation freaks.

# Chapter 616 - Sweep Away The Demons (One Of Two)

---

Lan Yi and the others were pleased about what Jiang Chen had just said. They looked at him as if he was someone beyond anyone's comprehension. They never thought that he would just give the demon souls to them. They fought with Jiang Chen in the battle, but their help was meagre, they just killed a few demons. He and his friends could handle the demons even without their help. Therefore, he was the one that had saved their lives. They felt grateful for it, in return they had never expected to obtain any rewards. Although these demon's souls weren't high grade, they were still valuable. They could exchange the demon souls with the sect for rewards, exchanging them for necessary items.

It indeed surprised them that Jiang Chen agreed to give it to them without hesitation. It made them feel speechless and also petrified. But, they knew that his generosity was because he didn't need the demon souls.

“Don't just stand there. Don't tell me you guys are not in need of them? Or you want my help to dig them out for ya?”

Zuo Ling Er acted rather maturely, she felt that she was like a senior sister in front of them. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow stopped themselves from turning over their heads just to see her act that way.

“Thank you brother Jiang and senior sister Zuo.”

Lin Kang was delighted. Every one of them pulled out their icy blades and walked towards the dead bodies, breaking off the skull and digging out the demon souls. A few of them were elated. Seeing them getting the demon souls outrageously was like obtaining something for free, the rest of the disciples cursed and felt extremely envious of them.

A while later, they had successfully dug out all of the demon souls. Under Lan Yi's instruction, her comrades walked to Jiang Chen and showed him the demon souls.

Lan Yi said, "Brother Jiang, these demons were killed by you, these souls should belong to you. You have helped us twice. Especially, you have saved our lives this time. I am more than grateful to you."

"You don't need to say it. If I said I'll give it to you means will. If you don't want them, you can just throw them away and see whether the others will pick them up."

Jiang Chen said simply, he did not value these demon's souls anyway.

Lan Yi immediately kept all of the collected souls after hearing this, their impression of Jiang Chen rose again, especially so for Lan Yi. His good-looking face and attractiveness was like a devil's power. In addition, his killing techniques were awesome. How he slapped the Ninth Grade Combat King was also undeniably charming.

“Brother Jiang, you’ve saved our lives, we are completely indebted to you. Later, if there’s any help you need we will do our best to assist you.”

Lin Kang spoke. The others nodded in agreement. They weren’t idiots. With Jiang Chen and Zuo Ling Er’s talent, entering the sect wouldn’t be an issue. Even those on the Earth Rank couldn’t match Jiang Chen’s prowess. They were sure that he would be one of the core disciples very soon. Thus, following him wouldn’t be a mistake.

Jiang Chen nodded, he then scanned all forty disciples around and said loudly, “My name is Jiang Chen, a newly-recruited disciple. I am going to the deeper region of the desert to continue killing demons. You all can follow me and you will have the same benefits as they did. Or we can just fight our battles separately.”

Jiang Chen finished his statement, leading the way to the deeper region. Lan Yi and the rest didn’t delay and quickly followed him, leaving the other petrified disciples at the scene.

“Should we follow?”

“This dude is freaking proud despite the fact that he is still a newbie, he did not even put all of us worthy in his eyes. I won’t follow him. It won’t be long before the top geniuses arrive. If he continues to be that arrogant, those geniuses will handle him.”

“I think we better follow him to hunt demons for our benefits. He is very powerful. He slapped a Ninth Grade Combat King and

sent him flying away. Those demons just now, I think it was him who killed them. His ability won't be any lower than those Earth Rank geniuses. Also, he is very generous to give all the demon souls to Lan Yi and Lin Kang's group. If we follow him, not only can we get protection from them, but we'll also get enormous benefits."

"That's right, although he's arrogant, he is eligible to do so. Aren't those Earth Rank people the same? Each of them is as arrogant, they did not even bother to look at us. Our roles won't be any better if we work with them to kill demons. I decide to follow Jiang Chen."

"You all go, if you offend those geniuses of Earth rank, you'll see how's your lives gonna be later."

.....

Half of them decided to follow Jiang Chen after their discussion. The reason why they came to the desert was to acquire demon's souls after all. In addition, they all witnessed Jiang Chen's generosity and forthright attitude. If he were one of those geniuses in the Earth rank, they would be ignored.

The followers of the Earth rank's geniuses revealed cold smiles. Jiang Chen's arrogance was unacceptable, he didn't acknowledge them at all. He was just a newbie that came here and was trying to convince them to be their leader. This action would definitely lead to dissatisfaction of the top geniuses in the ranking. They weren't people to be trifled with. They knew that once they offended them, there would be no peace in their lives.



However, to Jiang Chen, he wasn't concerned about all of that. He would fight and compete for the path to supremacy no matter what. Whoever blocked his path would have a tragic ending. Now that he had become one of Nebula Sect's disciples, convincing the other disciples to join him was needed to survive in this big sect. Nebula sect wasn't comparable to a small sect like Black Sect.

Even the newbies of Ninth Grade Combat King followed Jiang Chen to kill the demons. Huang Ling Desert is a large piece of land, the deeper you went, the stronger the demons were. If one wish to seek for a genuine and meaningful training, he had to go into the deeper region.

The one who was slapped climbed to his feet. He glared at Jiang Chen's direction maliciously.

.....

\*Bang!\*

Jiang Chen brought a group of Nebula Sect's disciples to the infested area of demons. They were like an indestructible rocket, killing every demons on their path. Flames of the battle raged across the land, causing a sudden sandstorm to emerge. Waves of sand drifted in the air, bellows of pain could be heard from the demons. The demons sensed Jiang Chen's intense murderous aura that rushed to different directions. At this time, Jiang Chen and the rest were situated in the middle of the demon's forces, killing their enemies with all they got. The enemy's forces were much

larger than before. There were at least three hundred of them that made an ambush. Most of them hid under the sandy ground, making every intruder vulnerable.

These demons were ferocious and violent and with a fanged mouth that kept on biting. Some were covered with lethal poison that made no one dare to touch it.

The disciples' faces were drawn, but some became excited and killed excellently.

\*Shing\*

Jiang Chen's Fiery Sharp Spear made a sharp sound, every swing of the spear killed many demons. Zuo Ling Er's speed was at her peak, both of her fists caused misery to her enemy. Every punch of hers blasted every demon's head.

Big Yellow was much more violent than them, he was crashing directly into them like a solid sharp sword. For every area he passed, limbs flew in the sky and the stench of blood permeated the air.

“My god! These three are abnormal!”

Most of them had cold sweat running down their backs while witnessing the three abnormalities' capability. They finally believed that those demons were killed by them. These three were insane, even if there were more demons, it still wouldn't be enough for

them.

The strong demons were all attracted to Jiang Chen. The rest were weaker and were harmless to the disciples. The inner-sect's high ranked Combat Kings' techniques of killing could slaughter the demons with ease. They all killed as insanely as Jiang Chen in the battle. The sight was intoxicating.

Their blood boiled when fighting alongside with Jiang Chen. They had naturally fallen into a berserk state.

Within ten minutes' time, all three hundred demons were wiped out. Dead bodies were heaped up like small hills. Fresh blood was flowing from the top, polluting the air with the stinging smell of blood.

No one had ever dreamt of this scene appearing in their lives. They had never expected that they could get so excited by just killing demons. Obviously, Lan Yi and her comrades also felt the same. The newcomers had an unexplained excitement on their faces. They now gazed at Jiang Chen with fear and respect. They felt that sometimes being convinced was so simple.

Besides Jiang Chen, Zuo Ling Er and Big Yellow also made everyone surprised. A twelve-year-old girl could actually be so powerful? They found it hard to swallow that fact. And also, that dog's head was as hard as golden steel.

“You all better clear off the remaining dead bodies, dig out all the demons souls. There isn't a need to scramble for it, the demon

souls belong to those who can get them first.”

Jiang Chen said to the everyone. This time, he only retrieved the demon souls of the Ninth Grade Demon King, ignoring the Eighth Grades’ and below.

Delight was on all of their faces. It seemed that this was the time where they were all convinced by Jiang Chen. They felt extremely lucky that they decided to follow him and obtain so many demon’s souls. They were very sure that if they weren’t following him, the emergence of demons in the desert wouldn’t be this much even if they stayed there without him for ten days.

# Chapter 617 - Sweep Away The Demons (Two Of Two)

---

Everyone became very excited. They doubted if Jiang Chen's words were really true before, whether he would give them the demon souls like how he had promised. Now they were certain. Jiang Chen was a kind and generous man. The amount of demon souls were plentiful, each of them got at least twenty. If they were to kill on their own, killing twenty demons would require their maximum effort.

They rushed forward to the dead bodies and started digging out the demon souls from the dead demons. They were moving in an orderly manner, no one was cutting in the queues. They didn't intend to steal others' demon's souls. They knew that showing dissatisfaction on Jiang Chen's words wouldn't do them any good. The first thing they would get was to be beaten up, and then expelled from team. Which would be a great loss.

They had witnessed Jiang Chen's monstrous ability. With his power, he could wipe out the entire demon horde. As long as they followed him, they would be safe and get tremendous amount of benefits. How could they miss that chance?

The battle had drawn the attention of the other disciples who, at first, didn't follow. There were a lot of disciples that joined the training in Huang Ling Desert to make the area peaceful. They felt a surge of envy and admiration when they saw those who followed Jiang Chen were getting the precious demon's souls.

After comprehending the situation, their reactions were the same

as those previous disciples. Their eyes widened and looked at Jiang Chen in terror.

Subsequent battles were happening from time to time. With Jiang Chen as the leader, they went further into the area that had a lot of demons. They were unstoppable. Their forces became bigger. In merely a few hours, their group went up to a hundred people. Most of them were the inner-sect disciples of Nebula Sect, including newbie-disciples just like Jiang Chen. The consistent battle brought them enormous gains. Jiang Chen was so powerful that crushing the demons felt like stomping ants. He was very lavish with the demon souls, he gave it all to them whenever he killed a demon.

As for those who wanted to steal the demon souls away while they were busy fighting, they all met the same consequences. They were all beaten up by Jiang Chen and were thrown far away.

Arrogant! Barbarous! These words were carved in their hearts. But the scene made all of them feel dazzled. They all intended to follow him so that they could get what they wanted. Now they became volunteered followers.

“Little Chen, you have formed your own group before entering the sect. Haha...”

Big Yellow laughed.

“They just volunteered. The demon souls aren’t of any use to me. However, it is the exact opposite to them. They can take those

demon's souls back to the sect and exchange it for resources or things that they need. But to me, I am not really interested in Nebula Sect's resources."

Jiang Chen laughed. His only purpose in coming to Nebula Sect was for the fragment of the Heavenly Saint Sword. He wouldn't need any cultivation resources as his Dragon Transformation Art could provide him endless amount of energy. In other people's eyes, Nebula Sect was a perfect place to advance their grade, a good place full of resources for cultivation. However, for him, it was nothing special as his body had always been an irreplaceable medium to advance his grade.

Far away from the battle, a few silhouettes looked over with vengeful expressions. One of them fixed his gaze on Jiang Chen while gritting his teeth.

"This bastard. He already have so many followers even before entering the sect. But, my brother will arrive soon, he will help us fix him."

That person was none other than Hu Lai, the one that was beaten up by Jiang Chen earlier. Jiang Chen was a new recruit that's so arrogant. In just a few hours, his name became popular. You wouldn't find a person that didn't recognize him in this area. It was scary that his followers had grown to a hundred people. His followers all looked at him in admiration. However, Hu Lai couldn't achieve this, which made him very envious about it.

.....

“Big brother, we are now wantonly killing the demons. Will this draw the attention of the demon leader?”

Zuo Ling Er asked.

“It doesn’t matter. I am here for the demon leader after all. If he reveals himself, it will save me time. Let’s just continue slaughtering. We have to wipe out the entire demon forces before tomorrow.”

Jiang Chen said. He always persevered until he reached his goal. Once he had decided to do something, he would achieve it by any means necessary.

\*Howl\*

A sand storm howled continuously, battles happened everywhere. Jiang Chen held his Fiery Sharp Spear and led the army of disciples as if he was a great general. His body emanated a golden light, shining amidst the horde of demons. They were invincible. Those who followed him were inspired by his hot-blooded spirit of killing, making them more excited to kill the demons.

“Haha...Fantastic, fighting by Jiang Chen’s side is really electrifying!”

“Agreed, Jiang Chen is a rare talent. He’s super ferocious. Our



sect will have one more true genius.”

“In Mysterious Domain, I have heard a person named ‘Jiang Chen’ before. He’s a Combat King that caused a disaster in Liang Province, turning the place upside down. Could it be that brother Jiang is also him?”

“Probably. A Combat King that can initiate disaster? That is a genius that would hardly appear every ten thousand years. If that ‘Jiang Chen’ is really brother Jiang, that won’t be impossible. See, brother Jiang is merely an Eighth Grade Combat King but his power is enough to defeat all other Combat Kings. I’m afraid that those geniuses from the Earth Rank aren’t fit to be his opponents.”

.....

The continuous battles turned the doubts of the followers into conviction. Jiang Chen became more influential.

The sun had fallen, the sky was turning dark. Strong winds howled in the desert accompanied with the roars of demons as if it is the end of the world. To a high grade Combat King, night and day had no difference. Their eye sights were sharp enough to catch a fly even at night.

Another battle just ended. They were approaching into deeper region of the desert. The demons were getting more powerful. Piles of dead bodies lay on the ground, blood spilled everywhere. When the disciples were retrieving their rewards happily, a few silhouettes appeared in the sky all of a sudden. There were about

seven to eight people. They wore the Nebula Sect's uniform. There were three leaders, their Qi's were strong, and their faces were full of arrogance. One of them who stood behind the leaders was Hu Lai. He was carrying a cold smirk on his face like he was here just to watch a show.

Most of them stopped their actions upon seeing the new group's arrival. The atmosphere became silent and dull. Everyone raised their head to look at them, and felt fear in their hearts. It was clear that these three people were of high status in Nebula Sect.

“Senior brothers, it is them. The one dressed in white is Jiang Chen.”

Hu Lai said fiercely while pointing at Jiang Chen.

“Humph!”

A young man made a cold humph and fixed his gaze on Jiang Chen.

“You are Jiang Chen?”

“Who are you?”

Jiang Chen wasn't afraid at all, his eyes met the young man's. It was merely a disciple of Nebula Sect. Certainly, there was nothing to be worried about.

“Brother Jiang, he is called Guo Xudong, the number three genius on Earth ranking. His combat strength is powerful, and his a difficult enemy to fight with. The other two are Zhang Da and Zhou Hong, one is number five and the other is number nine. They are all famous figures in Nebula Sect who are all at the peak of Ninth Grade Combat King.”

Lan Yi whispered.

Jiang Chen finally realized why these three had created so much fear to others. These were the geniuses who were at Earth Rank. It seemed like Hu Lai had a good relationship with them. That’s why they were here for Jiang Chen.

Unfortunately for them, Jiang Chen didn’t fear them at all.. If these three tried to pick a fight with him, they would get themselves into trouble.

“Jiang Chen. You, a newbie, dared to form a group here? Are you trying to set up an alliance? Do you know what that means?”

Guo Xudong pointed at Jiang Chen and clamored.

“A blind person dares to talk to my big brother in such a way? Do you know how rude that is?”

Zuo Ling Er put a hand on her waist while pointing a finger at Guo Xudong. If a person was eating, the food would be spat out

instantly. This little girl was too blunt. It was no doubt that the three geniuses were speechless by her actions.

However, after witnessing how she fought in the battle, no one felt that she was just arrogant anymore. They didn't know if she could fight those geniuses, but her ability was already proven.

“Where did this kid come from? You dare speak to senior brother Guo in such a way?”

The fifth genius of the Earth rank, Zhang Da, widened his eyes.

Zuo Ling Er wanted to continue her speech but was pulled by Jiang Chen. He turned his head to the three of them and said emotionlessly, “You don't have the right to tell us what we must do. I don't care even if you are listed in the Earth Rank. If you are here to avenge that Big Beard's damaged pride, then you are no less shameful than him.”

Jiang Chen's tone was blunt and proud. He did not consider them worthy of his attention.

“Brother Jiang, they are not to be trifled with.”

Lan Yi reminded, but was given a fierce glance by Jiang Chen. It was very clear. He's also not to be trifled.

“Outrageous!”

Guo Xudong shouted. A wave of Qi surged and was released from his body, “Kid, don’t be too arrogant. A newbie that don’t know about simple rules? You have attacked one of the sect’s disciples. I suggest you to apologize to Hu Lai now and offer something to him as compensation. If not, I will use my hands to teach you a lesson. Of course, this is also for your own good. If senior brother Hu Song is here, it won’t be that simple. I suppose you can figure the consequences yourself.”

...

# Chapter 618 - The Fight That Made Them Unrecognizable To Their Mothers

---

The atmosphere became tense after hearing Guo Xudong's threat to Jiang Chen. No one spoke. Everyone were disciples of Nebula Sect. In front of them were geniuses of the Earth Rank, which were too powerful for them to oppose. If Guo Xudong wanted to cause trouble to Jiang Chen, they couldn't help much.

What's happening in front of them was obvious. It wasn't because Jiang Chen was forming alliances, but because he had beaten Hu Lai. Guo Xudong and the other two were followers of Hu Song. They headed to Huang Ling Desert ahead of him and they met Hu Lai on the way and were told that he was bullied by a newbie. They had to come over to teach the new guy a lesson. If not, they would lose all their fame even if they were one of the Earth Rank. Especially when they saw that there were so many disciples that had followed Jiang Chen. It made them angry. In Nebula Sect, except for them, no one had ever held such a big group.

"I suggest you to leave now, don't go against me. Of course, you can choose to be like them. Join my group to kill those stubborn demons."

Jiang Chen said in a domineering tone without caring how they felt.

"Kid, you are asking for death!"

Hu Lai said cruelly. His face still felt swollen and painful. As the younger brother of Hu Song, no one dared to treat him like that. Everyone was paying homage to him. He had never been insulted in such a way in his entire life. It was unacceptable, he must take his revenge on Jiang Chen.

“Senior brother Guo, Hu Lai was the one who tried to rob our demon’s souls. Brother Jiang couldn’t help but interfere. This incident started because of me. I am willing to present those demon souls to Hu Lai. I only wish that you to put this matter behind.”

Lan Yi said. She knew that Guo Xudong wasn’t easy to handle. Hu Song would be worse. Lan Yi didn’t want the one who saved her life to fall into such a dangerous situation.

Jiang Chen stared at Lan Yi and nodded slightly. He found this girl’s words very helpful. Someone like her would need a lot of courage to justify the previous event.

“Lan Yi, I will count your debts once we get back. Now, the matter is between me and Jiang Chen. If you kneel down and kowtow before me, and hand over all the demon souls, I will pretend that all of this had never happened. I guarantee that my brother will let this go as well.”

Hu Lai’s tone was domineering as if he wouldn’t accept any offers aside from his demand. It seemed like Jiang Chen would not be able to escape from this conflict today.

“Do you all think the same way?”

Jiang Chen ignored Hu Lai, and focused his gaze on the three people. He didn't want to offend anyone, but if these three wanted to offend him, he would show no mercy.

“Hu Lai already said it. I am not repeating them. Jiang Chen, as long as you follow Hu Lai's instructions and be obedient while in the desert you will have a smooth time in Nebula Sect.”

Guo Xudong smiled coldly.

Jiang Chen's eyes sparked emotionlessly after listening to him. He raised his hand and pointed his forefinger at Guo Xudong.

“What is the meaning of this?”

Guo Xudong asked.

“One skill and you'll be defeated. Just one skill is enough to defeat you!”

Jiang Chen's tone was plain but his words shocked everyone. Guo Xudong was the number three of the Earth Rank, he was powerful enough to fight all the high ranked Combat Kings. Jiang Chen's bold statement was probably a joke. Although he was extremely ferocious when killing those demons, Guo Xudong wasn't an ordinary man.



\*Bang\*

A wave of fury rushed out of Guo Xudong's body, covering the sky above him. He stared at Jiang Chen with cold eyes and said coldly, "I forgot to tell you. You aren't an official disciple of the sect yet. It has to wait until you pass the checking of Brilliant Mirror. Therefore, killing you doesn't mean killing our brothers."

"I originally wanted to finish you in one skill but now I am lazy to do that. An inferior man like you are no match even for my little sister."

Jiang Chen smiled and looked at Zuo Ling Er, "Ling Er, don't disappoint your big brother."

"Don't worry big brother, I assure you that I will beat them up until their mothers can't recognize them anymore."

Ling Er felt extremely pleased when she heard that Jiang Chen was going to let her fight. She hopped and arrived in front of Guo Xudong. Both of her hands were at her waist, and said confidently, "You are not eligible to fight my big brother. You'll have to go through me first if you wish to fight him."

It made a lot of people stunned. Even Guo Xudong rolled his eyes. This was too much. Most of them had seen how powerful this kid was, but her opponent now wasn't a demon. How could a kid fight the geniuses of the Earth Rank and even dared to say that she will beat them up until their mothers can't recognize their faces? This

was seriously a joke.

This was an insult to Guo Xudong. Jiang Chen refused to fight him, instead he wanted to let a little girl do it. What would it be if it wasn't an insult? It meant that he, Guo Xudong, wasn't qualified to fight Jiang Chen if he couldn't even defeat the little girl.

“Where did this little kid come from? Get the hell out of my way.”

The number five of the Earth Rank moved forward and waved at Zuo Ling Er.

“Who are you? You dare to talk to me like that? Come here quickly and have a fight with me. I can guarantee that your concussions will make you forget your mother.”

Zuo Ling Er had always been with Big Yellow. Therefore, she had also learnt how to speak in an arrogant and infuriating way.

“Senior brother Zhang, this girl isn't an easy enemy. She is already a Ninth Grade Combat King at such a young age.”

Hu Lai reminded him quickly. When he was following Jiang Chen's group, he witnessed her frightening ability.

“What?”

The three of them were slightly petrified after hearing that reminder. Their gazes changed. They could ignore the fact that their enemy was a Ninth Grade Combat King, but the fact that a twelve-year-old girl was a Ninth Grade was troubling. That is a monstrous talent. If she entered the sect, she would be nurtured the most, perhaps, an elder would be her mentor and promote her as a core disciple.

Astonishment was just an emotion, they had to solve what was in front of them. They were the famous geniuses of the Earth Rank. Since they had already shown their faces, they must settle the dispute or else they would be an object of ridicule. If they were scared away because of a little girl, it would be worse.

“Haha...Are you all afraid? If yes, call me senior sister.”

Zuo Ling Er laughed.

The people on the scene exuded cold sweat seeing Zuo Ling Er acting in such a way. She was really a newborn calf that didn't fear the tiger. This little girl was overly bold. It seems that she wouldn't know about the power of the geniuses before entering the sect.

Only Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were calm. They knew Zuo Ling Er all too well. These three men were of Earth Rank, at the peak of the Combat King realm, they seldom faced someone that could be their opponent. Zuo Ling Er has an Ancient Barbarian Race's blood, which possessed extreme strength. She was one of those who could not find a suitable opponent in the Combat King realm. These three people obviously weren't fit to be her opponents. The

truth is that there is a huge difference between an ordinary genius and a heaven defying genius. It made her stronger by one grade. In addition, the three of them were looking down on her, which would determine their tragic result.

“This little girl is infuriating. Let me tie her up first before handling Jiang Chen.”

The number nine of the Earth Rank, Zhou Hong, stepped out. He held his fists, making a joint-cracking sound. A golden air flowed out of his body. Without saying anything, he waved his hand and summoned a big golden palm. The palm was like a cage that enveloped Zuo Ling Er, confining her in it.

“Humph!”

Zuo Ling Er made a cold humph. The blood of Ancient Barbarian Race was flowing in her body like a natural born right. She punched, destroying the big palm and astonishing everyone. The collision created a gloomy crack on the spatial zone.

“What?!”

Zhou Hong became serious. From his past experience, his golden palm was sufficient enough to restrain an ordinary Ninth Grade Combat King. This little girl was so strong that her fist could damage his spell.

Without giving him much time to continue his contemplation,

Zuo Ling Er moved in lightning speed. She appeared before him in a blink of an eye, and sent a punch at his face.

Zhou Hong was able to react in time, he also struck with his fist and met her's.

He would certainly lose to her. Her fist was as powerful as Big Yellow's head when they were sparring in the palace of Yuan Yang City.

\*Bang!\* \*Ka Cha!\*

This was an electrifying scene, a small and a big fist collided. Everyone could hear the sharp noise 'Ka Cha' coming from Zhou Hong's arm. It was bent and snapped by Zuo Ling Er's fist.

\*Pa\*

Before Zhou Hong could wail in pain, Zuo Ling Er sent another fist to his face, breaking his nose bridge. His blood shot out like a rocket.

“Barbarous Eighteen Punches! I will beat you until you have a serious concussion.”

Zuo Ling Er's name fitted her violent punches. Her body might be small and she looked quite adorable, but she was scary in a fight.

\*Peng\* \*Peng\* \*Peng\*

Her punches were like a meteor shower that continuously fell onto Zhou Hong's face. It was a sudden eighteen punches. After she was done, Zhou Hong couldn't wait to faint away. Just as his head was about to hit the ground, Zhang Da pulled him up. Now, Zhou Hong's face was swollen and full of blood like a plump pig face. His nose was crooked and his face didn't look like the previous him anymore, it was a very pitiful sight.

Everyone was shocked. It was just as what she claimed. She had beaten him up until his mother could no longer recognize him.

# Chapter 619 - Take The Beating On The Face

---

Everybody breathed in cold air. All of their preconceptions changed seeing what Zuo Ling Er just did, it was too shocking. The little girl was so strong and her attacks were extremely violent. Zhou Hong was one of the geniuses on the Earth Rank. He was the number nine. It was a respectable position in the sect as there were only ten of them listed on Earth ranking.

Zhou Hong, the number nine genius, was beaten by a little girl before he could even make his attack. He was in a condition where his mother couldn't even recognize him. It was absurd. How strong was this little girl? Was she a reincarnation of a heaven defying genius?

Dang! She is merely twelve years old. Twelve years old!!!

The number nine genius was just defeated like that. After this incident, it seemed that Zhou Hong wouldn't be able to raise his head for a period of time.

“Why is she that powerful?”

Hu Lai was stunned. Now, he wasn't as confident as before. Although he had seen how she killed the demons, he thought that at least her power could match up the number ten genius. The thought that Zhou Hong, the number nine genius, was defeated by her punches never crossed his mind.

“The two of you. Come and fight me together!”

Zuo Ling Er provoked them. She had learnt how Jiang Chen spoke given the situation. Her finger was pointing at Guo Xudong and Zhang Da, making them almost cough out blood. This girl was seriously out of her mind to be this arrogant. She wasn't putting them in her eyes at all. But, they couldn't back off. They also couldn't jointly fight her because that would crumble their reputation as one of the top ten in the Earth Rank.

"I will handle her."

Guo Xudong stood out.

"Allow me to."

Zhang Da moved quicker. He passed Zhou Hong, who was temporarily unconscious, and Hu Lai, then rushed to the front of Guo Xudong. Although she defeated Zhou Hong, he wasn't afraid of her. He hypothesized that Zhou Hong failed because he underestimated her, he was defeated even before he could use his ultimate skill. Zhang Da didn't try to act recklessly seeing what had just happened. Regardless of everything, he was the number five genius and was more powerful than Zhou Hong. This gave him a certain level of confidence to fight her. He didn't believe she could be so powerful that he couldn't defeat her.

"Be careful. Don't become a disgrace."

Guo Xudong reminded him. If Zhang Da's face was also beaten up like a pig, everyone on the Earth ranking would lose their fame.



“Don’t worry.”

Zhang Da said, his head illuminated a golden ray of light as straight as a pillar, shining at the dark sky.

“Pillar of Light!”

Zhang Da shouted, casting his ultimate skill. The golden pillar of light turned into a lotus, radiating endless brilliance and releasing a thick combat aura. It then rushed at Zuo Ling Er.

“Senior sister Zuo be careful! This is the ultimate technique of Zhang Da and it’s not easy to deal with.”

Lan Yi quickly gave a reminder. But her eyes widened after she spoke, realizing that her reminder was useless.

Zuo Ling Er moved forward, meeting the attack with her usual punch. It looked like there was nothing special. But this time, there were plain marks of talisman on her fist, they were ancient marks. Marks that were so divine that no one could understand what they were.

\*Bang!\*

Her fist met the golden lotus. The golden lotus was strong enough that it could crumble big mountains. But, it was vulnerable

and ineffective under Zou Ling Er's fist and was broken into pieces, then disappeared into the air.

\*Wah!\*

The lotus was destroyed instantly. Zhang Da spurted out a mouthful of blood, his body was trembling and his face was pale. Obviously, the lotus was connected to him and the impact had also caused a backlash.

\*Duh!\*

Zuo Ling Er's Qi bursted out. She flew to the front of Zhang Da like a butterfly and punched his face.

“Barbarous Eighteen Punches!”

Once more, sounds of punches and wails of pain blended together. His face met the same result as Zhou Hong. He was also beaten up like hell and fainted on the spot. He fainted not only because of pain but also because of the resentment he felt against the little arrogant girl. He was put in an extremely shameful situation: a genius of the Earth Rank that was punched by a little girl until he fainted.

“My god! This girl is extremely talented. This is so shocking. Even the geniuses in the Earth Rank are no match for her.”

“Very appalling, senior sister Zuo was excellent, her attacks are

violent. Her adorable characteristics didn't match her at all. Argh, if it isn't my eyes that witnessed today's event, I won't believe it even if I used my life as a bet. The geniuses of the Earth Rank have lost their fame. Now Guo Xudong is the only one left. Do he have the guts to fight senior sister Zuo?"

"He won't retreat. He won't be able to raise up his head anymore if he retreated. He is the number three in the Earth ranking and is more powerful than Zhang Da and Zhou Hong. Perhaps, he is fit to fight her, but it seems that his wish to reclaim Hu Lai's pride is not possible anymore."

.....

Nobody was calm, Their emotions were unsteady. Most of them started calling Zuo Ling Er as senior sister. Such a talented figure wouldn't be someone they could compare with in the future, either in the state or in the sect.

"So, Xudong, it's your turn. It seems you are also going to take the beatings on your face. If you are smart enough, just stand there and wait for my punches."

Zuo Ling Er was all-over herself, totally forgetting about her father's advice to be low-profile and not to be reckless. She had probably forgotten all of them ever since she left her palace.

"Brother Guo, what do we do now? This little girl isn't an easy opponent. Why not we retreat first until my brother arrives? We'll then find them again."

Hu Lai said with fear.

Guo Xudong gave an unsatisfied glance to Hu Lai. This guy's bullshitting, shrinking back against a little girl. An utter disgrace.

\*Keng\*

Guo Xudong's arm motioned, drawing out a sword as thin as Cicada's wings. It created a pleasing whizz sound while carrying a cold-blooded and murderous aura. Guo Xudong was completely focused on his enemy. He did not attempt to underestimate her in the slightest. It seemed that he wanted to finish the battle fast by taking his weapon out even before fighting.

“So this is the number three genius. Drawing out his weapon at the beginning of the battle. A truly shameless act.”

Big Yellow sounded odd.

“Ling Er, use this to fight him.”

Jiang Chen threw a weapon at her, it was the Fiery Sharp Spear. Guo Xudong might be a strong genius after all and he was holding a weapon in his hand. Although Jiang Chen was highly confident in Zuo Ling Er's ability, he didn't know Guo Xudong well enough, and he didn't want Ling Er to get hurt.

Zuo Ling Er held the spear in her hand. Her face was full of delight. It seemed that she had been expecting the weapon to come in her hands.

...

# Chapter 620 - Eighteen Punches For Every Person

---

The atmosphere became very tense. At this time, there were already more than two hundred inner-sect disciples. Most of them had already sensed the big group in Huang Ling Desert. The source of the shockwave was in the deeper region of the desert, so it would naturally attract a lot of disciples over.

No one talked amongst the two hundred disciples. They were very focused on the little girl who held the Fiery Sharp Spear. Underestimating the little girl was a mistake. They could already imagine how she would turn out when she entered Nebula Sect. She would be a shining star in the sect and would become an important figure soon.

Zuo Ling Er was too strong, even the fifth and ninth ranked geniuses were beaten up like pig's head until they fainted. She was now challenging the third ranked genius.

How strong was Guo Xudong? He should be stronger than the other two. However, his strength wasn't the main point, it was whether he could defeat the little girl or not. No one was able to comment on that.

Hu Lai and his comrades' faces were drawn and pale, they were nervous. If Guo Xudong was defeated, the reputation of the geniuses on the Earth Rank would be lost. Most importantly, that barbarous little girl wouldn't let them go. They would probably end up just like the first two.

But, he couldn't think much of it now, his swollen face was still in pain.

\*Hu\* \*Hu\*

Strong winds howled powerfully. It was Guo Xudong, his Yuan Force was rushing out like rippling sea waves. The long sword in his hand released a very strong aura. Every step he made trembled the spatial zone near him. He, as a Ninth Grade Combat King, was truly amazing.

Guo Xudong was going to strike. Everyone held their breaths, they didn't know who would win.

“Sword Piercing Vault.”

Guo Xudong humphed coldly. Light radiated out from the sword. It shined all over the dark sky, its destructive force was so strong that the spatial zone cracked into lines. It's as if the sword could pierce through anything.

It's strike was powerful since it was combined with a sharp sword technique. This attack had already locked on Zuo Ling Er's Qi. Guo Xudong went all out to strike. It seemed that he wanted to take down Zuo Ling Er with this strike, not giving her a chance to deflect it.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow looked at each other. It was true that

the third genius of the Earth Rank was extraordinary and was not comparable to any ordinary Ninth Grade Combat King. His attack had surpassed his Combat King realm.

However, Zuo Ling Er wasn't nervous at all and everyone could feel it. The strength hidden deep inside of her little body was rippling, it move to both of her hands and into the Fiery Sharp Spear.

The spear was a weapon of fire properties. Although Zuo Ling Er didn't possess a fire property ability, the spear itself was an Emperor Weapon, which was multiple grades higher than her opponent's long sword. Ling Er's ability wouldn't be weaker than him. Now that she had the spear, she obviously gained the upper hand.

\*Whizz\*

The Fiery Sharp Spear created a sharp noise. She raised the giant spear and pierced at the direction of the incoming sword light that was aimed at her.

\*Ching\* \*Ching\*

Everyone could clearly see it, there were strange talisman marks shining at the tip of the spear. It moved like a serpent, carrying Zuo Ling Er's barbarous strength while striking the threatening metal.



\*Bang!\*

The two weapons met and collided. The spear was undoubtedly in control of the situation. The scary part was that the sword light crumbled into pieces after colliding with the spear. The spatial zone near the collision was destroyed, making it like a dark black hole that could suck every light into it.

\*Deng\* \*Deng\* \*Deng\*

Guo Xudong absorbed most of the vibration before he was pushed about 50 metres. His face was drawn, the sword in his hand was trembling intensely. Traces of blood flowed from the broken skin between his forefinger and thumb. The collision had injured him.

“What?!”

“Guo Xudong failed. He was just like Zhang Da and Zhou Hong. They were defeated by senior sister Zuo’s one attack, she is really very good.”

“Another monstrous talent arrives in Nebula Sect. The elders definitely won’t miss the chance to take her as a core disciple.”

“Guo Xudong is a very scary disciple from the fact that he made it to the third on the Earth ranking. But, it seems the weapon that senior sister Zuo used is much more powerful. It has to be an Emperor Weapon.”

.....

Everyone focused their attention to the scene in front of them. Guo Xudong was also defeated. It wasn't because the geniuses on the Earth ranking were weak, it was just that Zuo Ling Er was just extraordinarily powerful. The fact before them told them everything; after she entered Nebula Sect, she would certainly be in the top three on the Earth Rank.

“Senior brother Guo, what now?”

Hu Lai's tone was trembling because of fear. His arrogance disappeared. He wouldn't have thought that Zuo Ling Er would be this strong, even Guo Xudong was no match for her. All his backups were taken down, the only way to take his revenge was to wait for his brother's arrival.

“What else can we do now? Let's flee.”

Guo Xudong gave a cold glance at Hu Lai. It was all because of this useless man. If not for him, he would not be in such a shameful situation.

Hu Lai kept quiet after being berated.

Guo Xudong humphed coldly and twisted his body then flew away from the battlefield. He was fast, but someone was faster. A white silhouette blocked his path, it was Jiang Chen.

“What? You want to leave?”

Jiang Chen smiled.

“Jiang Chen, what do you want? Don’t cross the line.”

Guo Xudong said coldly.

“Crossing the line? It was you who crossed the line. Don’t worry, I won’t ask you all to kneel and kowtow unreasonably. You all can go, but you have to bear Zuo Ling Er’s eighteen punches. That’s the condition before you leave. Or else, I will leave you guys here to be eaten by the demons.”

Jiang Chen’s tone turned cold and cruel. He wasn’t magnanimous to those who had offended him.

“What?”

Hu Lai exclaimed. He looked again at Zhang Da and Zhou Hong’s faces. A cold chill was sent down to his spine. It had to be a joke. ‘Would I still be alive after taking those eighteen punches?’

“Jiang Chen, you dare to do this to me? My brother won’t let you go.”

Hu Lai raged.

\*Pa\*

As his voice faded, Jiang Chen slapped his face violently.

“A garbage that only knows how to threaten people with your brother.”

Jiang Chen stared at him in disdain. This type of person wouldn't gain his respect.

“Ling Er, there is no need to be polite to them.”

Jiang Chen said to her.

“Roger that, big brother!”

Zuo Ling Er ran happily to Guo Xudong. Before her opponent could react, punches had already reached his face. How could an injured man who had lost his fighting spirit fight a monstrous talent?

The sound from the impact of punches was heard. As the third genius of the Earth Rank, after bearing her Barbarous Eighteen Punches, his face turned swollen like a pig's face. His body was swaying uncontrollably. He wasn't as bad as the other two, thus he was still able to stand on his two feet.

“It's your turn.”

Zuo Ling Er followed Jiang Chen's instruction. Each of them should take her eighteen punches. She scurried to the front of Hu Lai, and a few people beside him was shocked.

"Auntie, please spare me."

Someone almost cried. This little girl was too scary, especially when they thought of her fists.

\*Peng\* \*Peng\* \*Peng\*

\*Argh\* \*Argh\* \*Argh\*

Zuo Ling Er didn't give in to their pleadings. Her fists continuously punched their faces, one by one. Their faces became irregularly shaped, their close friends wouldn't even recognize them now. Except Guo Xudong, all of them had fainted and fell to the ground. Hu Lai was the most pitiful, his pig face was the largest. It seemed that Zuo Ling Er had given him extra treatment.

Guo Xudong gritted his teeth because of the pain, but he kept quiet and didn't dare curse her. He was smart enough to know that his opponent today was so much stronger than him. Apparently, Jiang Chen wasn't a man to be trifled with. If he tried to provoke him again, perhaps, Jiang Chen wouldn't kill him. However, he might probably be tortured like hell.

The rest of the disciples of the sect held their breaths. They felt

that today's incident was like a dream. The incident that happened to Guo Xudong and the rest of their group were the result of their actions. It served as a deterrent for everybody in Nebula Sect. It seemed like there would be no peace for the upcoming days in the sect. Jiang Chen and Zuo Ling Er, not only were they heaven defying geniuses, they were as twisted as a devil. People like them wouldn't bring peace to any place.

“Let's go, we will continue killing the demons.”

Jiang Chen didn't bother to make eye contact with Guo Xudong and led the group to a deeper area of the desert. More people followed him this time. He had successfully gathered this many people in less than a day's time. These followers were volunteers that wanted to fight along with him.

This was a scenario that no one could predict. All of the inner disciples of Nebula Sect were egotistical. Even if the sect assigned a genius leader, the group wouldn't be this organized.

“Brother Jiang, leaving them here won't attract the presence of demons, right?”

Lan Yi asked worriedly.

“Don't worry, those are only bruises and skin injuries which is nothing to a Ninth Grade Combat King.”

Jiang Chen smiled. He was new to Nebula Sect after all. It was

unreasonable to murder someone during his first arrival. Also, their conflict wasn't that great that they had to chop off each other's head.

Seeing the vanishing group in the night, Guo Xudong's eyes sparkled with a cold and vengeful light. He said coldly, "Jiang Chen. When Hu Song arrives tomorrow, it will be your end. You are still not an official disciple of Nebula Sect. Hu Song will take your life. We'll wait and see how long you can retain your arrogance."

Guo Xudong wasn't wrong at all. Jiang Chen only obtained the pass to enter Nebula Sect. He wasn't accepted yet to be a disciple of the sect. He still had to go through the assessment of the sect...

# Chapter 621 - The Leader Of Demons

---

Not long after the group led by Jiang Chen left the previous battlefield, four powerful silhouettes appeared in the sky. Their Qi were as strong as theirs, except the leader's Qi, which was higher than Guo Xudong. When they saw Guo Xudong and the rest, they were shocked and landed from the sky instantly.

“What happened? Who did this?”

The leader's face changed when he saw the people lying on the ground. The other three were petrified by the injured people in front of them. Guo Xudong and the rest were one of the top ten geniuses on the Earth Rank. The leader knew how strong these guys were. He had battled with them while competing for the ranking. At that time, some even bled and broke their skulls after the battle. He couldn't believe his eyes when he saw Guo Xudong was beaten up like this.

It seemed like it wasn't the demons who beat them up as they were attacked in their face. The demons would eat human flesh, and if it was really demons who attacked them, they wouldn't have the chance to lie here. They would long since be in the demon's stomach.

“Humph! Yu Wei, you should be happy seeing our current swollen faces right?”

Guo Xudong said coldly. Meanwhile, Zhang Da and the rest had already woken up, climbing up to their feet in pain. When their



eyes met Yu Wei's, a surge of shame rushed through them.

The four who just came where also on the Earth Rank. Yu Wei was the second. Due to their conflicts against each other, Guo Xudong knew that his current situation would be an object of ridicule.

“Of course. if I don't look carefully, I won't be able to recognize you. But, I am more interested to know who's the one that beat you up like this.”

Yu Wei shrugged, the smile on his face annoyed Guo Xudong and the rest. It gave them the urge to instantly have a battle with him. Too bad their conditions were no more than a helpless man. If they still chose to challenge him, they would eventually bring endless insults to themselves.

“No harm telling you. There are two newly-recruited disciples, one is called Jiang Chen, the other one is called Zuo Ling Er. They had beaten up Hu Lai at first, and I came to settle it but a conflict happened...”

Guo Xudong didn't attempt to hide the truth. He elaborated the shameful event to them. Since all of them were there, he was left with no choice but to tell the truth. He had to spit it all out.

....

“What?!”

Yu Wei and those who just arrived with him were frightened. No one had expected that the newbies would be so powerful and at the same time arrogant. They actually dared to strike Guo Xudong, especially the twelve-year-old little girl. This was absurd, but they knew that he wasn't lying because no one would use such a disgraceful incident to lie.

“That Jiang Chen has formed a group of his own, rallying the disciples of the sect to kill the demons in the deeper region of the desert. Yu Wei, do you want to see their prowess?”

Guo Xudong looked at Yu Wei. He knew that Yu Wei, as the second rank, would be extremely curious about Zuo Ling Er and Jiang Chen's ability.

“Seeing them is definite. But I won't be as foolish as you all. My purpose in coming here is to clear off the demons, not bullying people weaker than us. Now, you have felt the consequences of bullying.”

Yu Wei said sarcastically.

“Humph! When senior brother Hu Song arrives tomorrow, I will make sure that he'll die a graveless death.”

Guo Xudong snorted. His revenge had to be executed. Otherwise, their heads weren't going to be raised up, anyone in the sect would be pointing wildly when they saw them.

“Let’s go there to have a look. They have gone to the central part of the desert, which will attract the true leader of the demons. The elder said that it will probably be at the Devil Emperor realm, which must be handled seriously. We must kill it ourselves. The four of us will jointly fight together using the Four Stars Formation. Killing one leader of Devil Emperor is enough to have a great achievement recorded.”

Yu Wei said, leading the other three to the centre of the desert. With their strengths combined, their power would be unpredictable. Their purpose here was to fight for their prize. When they succeed in killing a leader of the demons, they were assured to obtain an Emperor pill. At that time, the pill would assist one of them to push their grade to Combat Emperor. Thus becoming a core disciple, which is very beneficial to either their identity or their status in the sect.

....

\*Bang!\*

Slaughter!

In the central region, demons were crawling all over the place. The battle had turned into a large one. A few hundred inner disciples of Nebula Sect were fighting against over tens of thousands of demons. The enemy’s number was overwhelming, covering almost all the land of the region. However, most of the demons weren’t as powerful as them. They were merely at the

Combat Soul realm, which was even lower than the Combat King realm. Therefore, the threat was minimal.

However, it was still a big battle. In the night, demons were raring across the land, charging at the disciples. The scale of the battle wasn't what they had predicted back in the sect. The inner disciples were just planning to apply a guerrilla tactic to deal with the demons, where they would split into small groups to attack the demons. It would take ten days to get rid of them. As for the leader of the demons? They would totally leave it to the geniuses on the Earth Rank.

However, Jiang Chen's appearance had changed all of their plans. This was the first time Huang Ling Desert held such a large scale battle. No one expected this. Every disciple of the sect was in a frenzy while killing the demons. They were afraid that such a battle would only happen once in their lifetime. Jiang Chen, Zuo Ling Er, and Big Yellow were very strong. They had increased the fighting spirit of everyone, making them think that fighting with Jiang Chen's group was a truly intoxicating thing.

All the demons died pitifully. Jiang Chen and his friends' every attack could get rid of more than a few of them. Their actions were so inspiring that the disciples had forgotten about the danger of the demons and desired to kill more.

The battle had really boosted their morale. At this moment, all of the disciples, including the new ones, were convinced to serve Jiang Chen. He had been recognized by the disciples even before entering Nebula Sect. This was the first time it happened in the sect.

“Kill! Finish them all and the demon souls are ours.”

Someone roared with fiery eyes.

\*Boom\* \*Boom\*

Suddenly, an intense vibration could be felt on the ground. A domineering devil aura was drilling out of it, then formed a powerful sand storm. Jiang Chen's eyes were fixed on it while smirking.

“The leader of the demons, a Devil Emperor!”

Someone exclaimed. The elated expression on the disciples' faces became serious. Their focus were shifted not on the sand storm, where the big demon would climb out, but to Jiang Chen and Zuo Ling Er. They had no idea whether the two could defeat the leader. If they couldn't, all of them would be finished.

\*Roar\*

An evil roar rumbled from below, and a dark cloud of smoke drifted out. A black shadow came out of the hole, flying into the sky.

\*Argh\*

A disciple who was too near to the big demon felt its frightening Qi before wailing in pain and fear. His arm and a leg were damaged. Luckily, Jiang Chen pulled him back before his life was threatened.

“Thank...thank you brother Jiang.”

That disciple endured the pain and expressed his gratitude to Jiang Chen. He knew that if it wasn't for Jiang Chen's help, he would have died.

\*Ke...Ke...\*

A cold and malicious laugh could be heard within the black smoke. The smoke rolled and moved, turning into a black-robed guy. He seemed to be only thirty years old, he looked sturdy with black colored lips and a mark of talisman on his forehead. Obviously, this was a human, not a beast. It was just that he was contaminated by evil, the soul inside him had been turned into a devil. Therefore, he was no more than a demon.

Jiang Chen's eyes were now fixed at the leader of the demons' who had just appeared. This was a Devil Emperor demon. It seemed that it has reached the Emperor realm a long time ago. Nevertheless, Jiang Chen wasn't concerned about it, he already had the power to kill a First Grade Combat Emperor. Moreover, the Dragon Transformation Art was extremely disadvantageous for the demons.

“Seems like this isn't the only leader of demons here.”

Jiang Chen smiled. He could sense that there was more than one leader of the demons. He would kill as many as the desert had. The strongest grade would only be at the Devil Emperor, it was not some demon that couldn't be defeated. This was because the Nebula Sect wouldn't let their disciples walk into a death trap.

“A First Grade Devil Emperor, it's very scary.”

The disciples' faces turned sour.

“Everyone, calm down. I will confront it.”

Jiang Chen's voice was clear and loud. His face was full of confidence, making the rest of them believe him.

\*Roar\*

At this time, another roar came not far away from the other side. It was also a First Grade Devil Emperor. A male that had two pairs of sharp wings on its back. It was a bat and looked very frightening.

“Another Devil Emperor? How do we deal with them?”

The disciples of Nebula Sect were now scared to death. Some had already regretted for being reckless and following Jiang Chen into this dangerous region.

At this very moment, Yu Wei and his group were flying to the scene from afar. They felt the Qi of a Devil Emperor and became excited.

“The leader has showed up, prepare to fight!”

The four of them were fast, they turned into rays of light and raced to the battlefield, besieging the bat leader. The Four Star Formation was ready. Their combat strength surged, giving them enough strength to battle with a First Grade Devil Emperor.

“Quickly, look. It is Yu Wei and his group. They have come to take care of the leader of demons. Haha...this is great.”

Someone exclaimed in delight as if seeing hope.

“Keke, four weaklings wants to fight me? How naïve.”

The bat leader laughed evilly. His wings spread wide open, and all of a sudden, countless scary black bats rushed forward, trying to attack the four of them.

“Attack!”

Yu Wei shouted. As the second on the Earth Rank, he had prepared for this battle. He wasn't nervous or afraid. They drew out their combat weapons and struck the black bat.



On the other side, the demonified human made an attack on Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen extended his hands, dragon scales covering his arms, and summoning a blazing fire. It was the Fire Dragon Seal, and that was enough to deal with a First Grade Devil Emperor.

# Chapter 622 - Intense Battle

---

\*Bang\*

The intense battle continued. Yu Wei's team was besieging a demon leader in the sky. As for the other disciples of Nebula Sect, they were led by Zuo Ling Er and Big Yellow, battling with the large demon forces. Although their number were no match for the demons, their strengths were great. It's especially so for those newly-recruited disciples, as most of them were Ninth Grade Combat Kings, and some of them were geniuses from different regions. Their attacks on the demons were brutal and very harmful.

On the other side, Jiang Chen and the demonified human had started their battle. The demon was terrifying, his fingernails were long and red as blood. He lunged towards Jiang Chen. It was really an adrenaline-rushing battle. They were worried that Jiang Chen might lose to this demonified human. If he really lost, all their efforts today would be in vain.

Only Zuo Ling Er and Big Yellow weren't worried about him. Big Yellow was the one who knew him the most. He knew how scary Jiang Chen was. He witnessed the scene of Jiang Chen killing Kong Yang, a Second Grade Combat Emperor. Now, killing a First Grade Devil Emperor demon was just under his grip.

Jiang Chen didn't seem the slightest bit terrified by the demon even though it was charging at him now. He was full of confidence. The giant Fire Dragon Seal in his hand had completely condensed.

\*Roar\* \*Roar\*

Along with the roar that shook the heaven and the earth, a dragon of thirty meters long appeared in the blackness. The sky was now filled with a sea of fire. The giant Fire Dragon moved its body as if a mighty real dragon emerged.

The demon felt the destructive force from the Fire Dragon and its face turned ugly. It had realized what kind of damage the Fire Dragon could do. Most importantly, the blazing flames that were carried by the dragon was his weakness. He could only fight with half of his combat strength under this circumstance.

Originally, a First Grade Devil Emperor wasn't worthy to be Jiang Chen's opponent. Adding the unfavorable situation now, the result was predictable.

\*Bang\*

Jiang Chen ignored the shocked demon. The Fire Dragon roared and crashed into the demon's attack, totally destroying all of it. The dragon's giant body twined against the demon, an endless fiery energy rushed to it, damaging it greatly.

\*Argh\*

The demon wailed. The noise raised goose bumps. The sound was enough to tell everyone how painful it felt.

\*Bang!\*

Along with the sound of explosion, the Fire Dragon exploded as well as the body of demon. A First Grade Devil Emperor was struck to death so easily. Its body was broken into smaller portions and burnt to ashes under the blazing flames.

A silent atmosphere filled the battlefield, including the demons. They stopped all their actions. One by one, the disciples stared at the unextinguished flames in the sky, and then stared at the youth dressed in white. The feeling inside them was fluctuating in an uncontrollable manner.

A while later, the silence turned to cheers. It all came from the disciples, their eyes were only focusing on Jiang Chen with great respect, as though they had just seen a war god. He was too scary. Even for those female disciples who admired Jiang Chen's good looking face realized that there was something beyond his handsome features.

Jiang Chen was now the leader inside the disciples' heart. An undefeatable god, to follow such a war god to fight in battle was truly breathtaking.

“Mighty brother Jiang!”

A disciple used his Yuan Force to yell, followed by the shouts by the rest. They now absolutely idolized this person, a person who hadn't even entered Nebula Sect and didn't know where the entrance door was located. The sect hadn't have rallied such a

huge troop before, not even in the history of the Divine Continent.

This was a great charisma that no one had except Jiang Chen.

“He is Jiang Chen. Truly amazing.”

“Yes. He is only an Eighth Grade Combat King but he can kill a First Grade Devil Emperor with only one skill. His technique is terrifying.”

“Guo Xudong is a real idiot to offend such person. It is a miracle that he is still alive now.”

Yu Wei and his team were stunned. They originally wanted to have a big battle with this guy and were worried that he couldn't face the leader of demons. Unexpectedly, he was insanely strong, ending the Devil Emperor quickly with one skill. He's truly frightening.

They felt their energy were drained while fighting a single First Grade Devil Emperor. They were well aware of its terrifying strength. But now, they felt a surge of fear from their guts.

\*Roar\*

The bat-demon turned into berserk state after seeing his comrade's death. It looked up the sky and made a piercing screech before lunging at the four people. Its intention was to call out for the other leader to join it.

“Kill it, kill these demons.”

Lin Kang exclaimed. They returned to their battle state, charging at the demon forces and slaughtering them. The death of the demonified human leader greatly affected the morale of the demons, they weren't as aggressive as before.

\*Bang\*

Suddenly, a mountain in front of them crumbled into pieces. A three hundred-metre long figure that released a dark light could be seen, racing towards the battlefield. That giant figure came before Jiang Chen and turned into a sturdy man. Its skin was black in texture, which looked unusually frightening and evil.

There were three leaders of the demons in the deeper region of the desert. The one at the front was the strongest of them all. Jiang Chen had already determined its grade, the peak of First Grade Devil Emperor. Even if it hadn't reached the Second Grade, it's frightening aura was more powerful than the others.

“You killed my brother. You will die now!”

The strongest leader clamored, fixing his evil gaze on Jiang Chen.

“You also have to die.”

Jiang Chen summoned his Fiery Sharp Spear and pierced the demon without saying another word. He had nothing to say with this mad demon. Only a life and death battle could decide the result. This was his main purpose after all. Once he killed it off, all the demons would be eliminated completely, Huang Ling Desert would finally regain its peace.

\*Roar\*

The demon was furious, an evil enchanted big sword collided with the spear.

\*Keng\*

Both metals clashed and was released. The demon's body trembled, even though it wasn't a real knock-back, it had mostly dampened his confidence in fighting.

“What?!”

The demon was astounded. It couldn't believe that the young man before him was so powerful that he suffered a disadvantage.

The demon was in its demonic form, thus the demon aura it released was greater than devil aura. Jiang Chen's fire wouldn't create a big impact on it like the previous battle. But it didn't matter much, He was not afraid of this demon at all as it was merely a First Grade Devil King.

\*Roar\*

It roared and fought with Jiang Chen. After about forty rounds of exchange, they still weren't injured. The demon roared with fury every time it failed to attack him.

This leader was powerful, its body was also as hard as steel.

\*Argh\*

At this time, a wail was heard from the other side. The bat-demon broke the formation of the four people, seriously injuring a person. Yu Wei also felt the impact of the attack, it was the effect from losing the support of the formation. Their faces turned ugly, they had underestimated the bat-demon. Perhaps, it was just because of their bad luck. If it was an ordinary leader of demons, their combined strength was enough to take it down. The bat-demon they currently faced was a hard one. It was constantly releasing violent bats that confused them, giving it the chance to destroy their formation.

“Keke...you think that you can kill me using only your weak formation? That is absurd. I will eat you all now.”

The black bat-demon smiled coldly, its wings flapped constantly and then it charged towards Yu Wei.

“Big Yellow, go and help.”



Jiang Chen saw their dire situation and ordered Big Yellow.

\*Whoosh\*

Before Jiang Chen's voice faded completely, Big Yellow turned into a golden ray of light that penetrated the dark sky and blocked the black bat-demon.

"Another one who desires to die first."

The demon chuckled.

"Wakaka, Master Dog won't let you die easily."

Big Yellow laughed with his usual 'Wakaka' and fixed his glare at the bat-demon before lunging forward. The demon felt disdainful that a big dog dared to attack him using his head. The demon used its sharp claws to strike him. In its estimation, its claw would definitely shred Big Yellow's head into pieces.

Sadly, the result wasn't as expected.

\*Peng\*

When its claws met Big Yellow's head, its prediction crumbled. The demon felt that its claws were clawing on an indestructible rock and the intimidating aura of Big Yellow.

\*Ka Cha\*

Not only did its claws didn't manage to scratch his skin, it became crooked due to the collision. Big Yellow had already reached Ninth Grade Demon King which, for him, was sufficient enough to fight a First Grade Combat Emperor.

Very powerful!

Yu Wei and his group's faces changed. They looked in terror at the sudden emergence of the yellow dog. They did not expect the dog to be so powerful that it could seriously injure the black bat-demon.

The demon was infuriated, its four wings flapped violently. Sounds of flapping could be heard, and a larger swarm of black bats rushed out of its wings. They were so many that the sky was fully covered before they flew towards Big Yellow in a swarm. Although the threat of the bats wasn't as damaging, Yu Wei and the other three felt extremely annoyed by their chirping noises.

However, Big Yellow wasn't concerned about that at all. He twisted his body and tilted his buttocks, aiming at those black bats and warning the other four, "The four of you, get off the way!"

# Chapter 623 - Burning Hot Blood

---

Big Yellow's posture petrified the four men. They stood rooted to the ground, not knowing why he wanted them to leave the area. Wasn't this the time they should jointly face the bat-devil? Could it be that he was confident to take it down?

These questions were going to be answered very soon. The most regretful thing Yu Wei and his team did was to not follow Big Yellow's instruction to get as far away as possible.

\*Hong... Long...\*

A noise rumbled so loud that it shook the heaven and earth. A wave of green air was released from Big Yellow's butt. The green air moved like a deadly poisonous gas in the air. The frantically violent black bats wailed in pain before falling to the ground, then dying after a few twitches.

"Damn! What's that?"

Yu Wei couldn't help saying that, but he couldn't continue anymore.

"Yuck...damn smelly...my goodness. This is a dog's fart... blargh...I'm dying smelling this."

"Wah...Wah...God! A fart?"

“For God’s sake, kill me...blargh...”

Now Yu Wei and the other three weren’t standing there anymore, they ran away from their previous positions while puking along the way. There was no mistake, they were fleeing. During their confrontation with the bat-devil they didn’t attempt to run. However, the dog’s fart was unbearable. They wanted to curse Big Yellow but they couldn’t when they thought of his warning earlier, it was them that were to be blamed for not listening to him.

\*Hong... Long...\*

Another rumbling noise was created along with Big Yellow’s laugh. His Invincible Whirlwind Spirit Fart was peerless and undefeatable. More black bats died, some collapsed then died, while some were just smoked to death. Swarms of black bats were falling from the sky, they were severely injured before they died.

\*Argh\*

Even the leader of the bats gave out a long loud screech of suffering. It took the attack of the fart directly. Its body was now fully wrapped with the green air. The stubborn air stuck to its skin and into its bones, making it impossible to fling it away.

Although the Invincible Whirlwind Spirit Fart couldn’t cause its usual maximum damage at the devil leader, the suffering caused by it was not bearable by ordinary devil. Yu Wei and his comrades understood this clearly.

“...the hell...godly...”

“Perfect. I have never seen such fine quality dog. This fart’s power was invincible, not even a Devil Emperor can bear it.”

“Too scary, luckily I wasn’t near the battlefield. Or else...I don’t even want to think about it...”

.....

The disciples gave their thumb ups to Big Yellow, praising his powerful skill. But, powerful wasn’t the word to describe it, it should be invincible. Even Zuo Ling Er was frightened to open her small mouth. For all this while she only knew he had a steel head, she was totally clueless that he had such an abnormally powerful skill.

\*Wah\*

The bat-devil puked tremendously. It employed all of its effort to get rid of the green gases and flew to a direction away from the battle. Big Yellow quickly followed suit, it seemed that he wanted to test his power with the devil leader.

“Go, we’ll fight.”

Yu Wei said to the other two. The three of them held their

weapons in their hands and chased the devil leader. They wanted to end this bat-devil with Big Yellow.

The battle on the other side continued. Jiang Chen and the devil leader were having an intense fight. The devil leader kept shouting ‘Wa...Wa...’ while in the battle. However, he was many times more powerful than it, thus he was in control of every round of the battle.

“So such genius exists in the world. But, I have to kill you and stop fooling around with you.”

The devil’s face revealed a cold smile. Its body exploded suddenly, turning into a roughly three hundred metres long monster. On his body was layers of black scale, a devil aura started to spill out from its body. Its current Qi was many times stronger than his previous form, it was too strong for a First Grade Devil Emperor.

“Brother Jiang be careful, this devil leader has entered into an evil enchanted state. It will become harder to defeat.”

Lan Yi reminded.

Jiang Chen smirked.

“I’m not scared even if he entered into an evil enchanted state.”

This devil leader was hard to deal with before it turned into its

evil enchanted state as its devil aura was covered with devil aura. It made it hard for Jiang Chen to kill it, perhaps it might slip his grip and flee. Now, however, that it had entered into its current it is not much different than a devil. Its combat strength increased, but it also meant that Jiang Chen's restraining power against it increased at the same time. Apparently, this was a favorable situation for him to complete his mission.

“Kid, you are a monstrous genius. Now, I want to eat you. I'll eat your flesh and absorb its essence. Then I will advance to Second Grade Devil Emperor. Haha...”

Its laugh was as loud as thunder. Its giant body was like a mountain, lunging at Jiang Chen.

“Want to eat me? I'm afraid you can't even move your teeth to gnaw me.”

Jiang Chen's fighting spirit was unleashed. A sea of fire appeared around him, summoning the Fire Dragon Seal again. Either it was the True Dragon Fire or Lighting True Fire, they were both the enemy of devils. He had no doubt about it. The time when he was in the Devil Soul Realm, he enhanced his restraining power for devils to the maximum.

\*Roar\*

The Fire Dragon rumbled. It penetrated the spatial zone, leaving a traces of long flames and collided with the giant devil. The heaven defying devil aura from the devil changed. After meeting

the Fire Dragon, it shriveled like a mouse seeing a cat. The collision of the Fire Dragon destroyed all its devil aura in an instant. The devil stared at the Fire Dragon in terror. Fire was a natural enemy to devil aura, inhibiting all the strengths of the devil leader.

\*Hong\*

Ultimately, the dragon penetrated all its barriers and crashed into the devil leader. The roughly three hundred-metre long devil was knocked back by about hundred meters before it could find its balance. The scales on its body had been destroyed by the impact and explosion. It's obvious that the attack had severely injured it.

“What flame is this? How can it be this powerful? It even incinerated my devil aura.”

The devil's eyes widened with disbelief. Its expression changed while looking at Jiang Chen. It developed an intense feeling of fear. Or to say in another way, it wasn't afraid of Jiang Chen, but his fire.

Jiang Chen didn't give the devil leader a chance to counterattack. He held the Fiery Sharp Spear and charged forward. The spear wasn't the same as before, it was enchanted with two types of powerful fiery crows. Its strength was boosted to a higher level, completely exerting all of its potential power. The spear turned into a Fire Dragon and struck the devil leader.

\*Roar\*



The devil leader raged. It raised its hard claws hastily to defend against Jiang Chen's attack. Its claws were sharp and indestructible and were carrying a thick devil aura.

\*Pu Chi\*

Unfortunately, even its sharp claw couldn't withstand the attack of the scary spear. Under the suppression of the flames, all the devil aura were eliminated. The spear directly pierced through the claws and the scorching energy from the spear shot out, breaking it into pieces.

The devil gave out a loud cry. It was infuriated. When it prepared to launch another stronger attack, nine figures with the same features as Jiang Chen had already surrounded it. The devil's eyes were blurred, it could only see nine spears coming onto it at the same time.

The devil faced the same situation as Kong Yang and its response was also the same: it attacked any figure.

\*Pu Chi\*

The conclusion was the same as Kong Yang, the devil pulverized all of Jiang Chen's shadows but left the true Jiang Chen's attack, making it extremely vulnerable. The spear pierced through its skull, its vital part.

The strike of the Emperor Weapon was accompanied by all of his strength. It was a deadly strike to the devil leader. Its skull was left with a hole while it wailed in pain. Another motion of the spear extracted a brilliant devil soul from the skull, it then went back to Jiang Chen's hand.

Meanwhile, the bat-devil was besieged by the three men and Big Yellow. It was forced to its end, half of its body was severely injured and its wings were damaged. The moment it saw the devil leader was killed, its fighting spirit faltered completely. The two men and Yu Wei didn't wait and pierced their weapons through its body, killing it instantly.

“All devil leaders are defeated. Kill, kill all of these devils!”

“Haha...Not one of them can be spared.”

The disciples went insane, they were shouting like madmen. Their morale rose to the maximum, slaughtering the devils with ease. The three leaders of the devils had died. Where would the devils get the motivation to fight now? They were fleeing. Why would the disciples miss this golden opportunity? They hunted the devils down like hunting their prey.

A while later, shouts from slaughterers sounded, it was so loud that it shook the sky. They united to surround the entire battle field, not letting any of the devils to flee. After a few hours of battle, all of the devils were slaughtered. None was alive. The entire deeper region of Huang Ling Desert were covered with the devils' dead bodies and blood flowed like a river.

It was a heaven and earth shaking war. It lasted literally a whole night. Now the light gradually appeared from the sky. Most of the disciples' body were stained with blood, some were theirs and some from the devils'. No one felt exhausted after a night of battle. Instead, everyone was intoxicated! They had never enjoyed a battle so much.

Before they departed from Nebula Sect, the time given was ten days. No one would have thought that the mission could be completed in just a day. The task was complete, all devils were cleared off the desert, and everyone got their prizes. The biggest gains this time wasn't the devil souls, it was the heart-stirring battle. It was a burning hot-blooded battle. None of them had experienced it. Although it was only for a short moment, they could feel the hot blood burning inside of them. It was a feeling in which they couldn't describe in words.

# Chapter 624 - No Hair Left

---

After the end of the battle, the first light of the morning sun shined upon the desert. There were also sands storm that rippled the yellow sand in the air. This was always the weather of Huang Ling Desert. It wouldn't change.

At this time, everyone raised their head to look at the white-dressed young man floating in the sky. The expression in their eyes were occupied by admiration. Jiang Chen had become the war god who was seared and sealed in their memories. As aggressive young men and geniuses of Nebula Sect, it was hard for them to admire someone. Nevertheless, they felt compelled to pay their utmost respect to the youth in white before them. The female disciples' eyes sparkled along with the bright light. From their looks, they would probably do anything for Jiang Chen whenever he opened his mouth.

“Jiang Chen! Jiang Chen! Jiang Chen!”

Not knowing who first started shouting, his name continued to be shouted. It was loud and clear even in the sky. Jiang Chen, this time, carried the glory of a War God. They recognized him as the incarnation of the God of War. He let the shouting continue.

Jiang Chen raised his head to look at the rising sun from the east. His eyes shot out two beams of light. He was enjoying being at the heaven defying and supreme position. The superior glory of his previous life would recur in his current life. He was now on the path towards it, taking every step closer to the top. He believed that one day, he would regain his supreme position in the world.

That day wasn't very far away.

At this moment, Yu Wei and the other two moved and brought along with them an injured genius from the Earth Rank to Jiang Chen. The four of them then held their fists to him, "Brother Jiang is a true rare genius, and I'm impressed."

Their words were genuine. As the second genius on the Earth Rank, he had never praised anyone before. It was impossible for him to say that he was impressed with someone or something. Today, he was sincere, it wasn't flattery. They could imagine the consequences if Jiang Chen wasn't there. Their lives would likely be in jeopardy.

Jiang Chen's existence had quicken the completion of the task. It was a hot-blooded method which had boosted most of the disciples' morale. It was rare to see an Eighth Grade Combat King so strong. His current grade was able to eliminate Devil Emperors. It was unacceptable at first even though their eyes saw it.

"So you guys aren't going to thank me, Big Yellow, for what he has done?"

Big Yellow came to the side of the four men, and said while his head faced the sky.

They immediately held their fists up at Big Yellow, "If brother Dog didn't lend out his hand, we would all be in danger and it would even be impossible to retrieve the devil soul. This devil's soul must be yours to take."

Yu Wei took out the black bat-devil's soul and passed it to Big Yellow. Although he was a little reluctant, he knew it clear as day. If it wasn't for Big Yellow's sudden interference, not only would they be unable to retrieve the devil soul but their lives would also be gone.

“Master Dog don't give a damn to this toy. Give it to that kid.”

Big Yellow turned his gaze to Jiang Chen.

Yu Wei looked back at Jiang Chen, “I am Yu Wei, the second genius. The devil soul of the devil leader will be given to brother Jiang.”

Jiang Chen nodded. He had quite a good impression on Yu Wei, at least he was better than Guo Xudong.

“All of you killed it, keep it.”

Jiang Chen smiled.

“Brother Jiang, this devil soul is equivalent to an Emperor pill. It was clearly announced when the sect assigned us the quest. Whoever can retrieve the devil soul of the devil leader the reward is an Emperor pill. It's such a precious thing, brother Jiang should keep it.”

Yu Wei said.

Jiang Chen felt good about this second genius from the Earth Rank's actions. If it was someone else, he wouldn't be kind enough to give the devil soul to another person. He might even rob the devil souls away. Jiang Chen knew very well about the importance of the Emperor pills to the Earth Rank geniuses, especially Yu Wei. Once the Emperor pill was refined, his grade could immediately advance to Combat Emperor realm and become core disciple. This was their main aim of coming to Huang Ling Desert, but Yu Wei was generous to give such a precious devil soul to him. It was a very honest act.

"I already have two devil souls from the devil leaders that I can exchange for two Emperor pills. I suppose you also understand the effect of the pill. One person can only consume one pill. The next consumption of the pill will give no effect. Thus, you should keep that devil soul, take it as a gift for our first meeting."

Jiang Chen patted Yu Wei's shoulder gently. Yu Wei was delighted. The devil soul was also important to him. He didn't want to find an excuse for not accepting the devil souls that seemed unreasonable again. He kept it and said to Jiang Chen.

"Brother Jiang's kindness today will be marked in my heart. When brother Jiang arrives at Nebula Sect, whatever problem you have will be my problem as well."

Yu Wei understood that his chances of getting a devil soul from a devil leader was at the minimum through this expedition. Besides the strong and dangerous devil leader to be dealt with, there was a

highly competitive party in Nebula Sect. Hu Song had stepped into the Combat Emperor realm plus his full preparation for the expedition. Yu Wei wouldn't have the chance to retrieve anything. To his surprise, Jiang Chen's interference messed up their original plan.

The one who gained the most in the battle was Jiang Chen. He himself had gotten many high ranked devil souls. Those two devils' souls from the devil leaders would be used to exchange for two Emperor pills. Big Yellow didn't need any of it. However, he and Zuo Ling Er needed the pills. She could use the pill to step into the Combat Emperor realm. While he would use it to advance his grade, the Ninth Grade Combat King.

From afar, Guo Xudong and Hu Lai saw everything that had happened. Their faces were filled with shock and disappointment.

“Brother Guo, he is so powerful and all the devil leaders were killed. I see, opposing him isn't the right choice.”

Zhang Da said.

“This dude has killed all the devils. When my brother comes, there won't be anything left. No devil leaders to kill means no way to get the Emperor pills. This is a great loss to me.”

Hu Lai worried about his own Emperor pill.

Guo Xudong glanced irritatingly at Hu Lai. He was the garbage to



be blamed. If it wasn't for him, they wouldn't have created conflicts with Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen's action today would be highly valued by the high ranks in Nebula Sect. He and Zuo Ling Er's heaven defying abilities would attract the High Elders to take them as their core disciples. They had gone against Jiang Chen, which wouldn't bring any good fruit to them.

At this very moment, powerful Qis came from afar in the sky. The other disciples of Nebula Sect arrived at the scene. Besides the rest of the disciples on the Earth Rank, the most important figure finally showed up. He was the number one genius on the Earth Rank, Hu Song, a First Grade Combat Emperor.

“Look, Hu Song is here. I predict a good show is going to happen. Brother Jiang has beaten up Hu Lai and Guo Xudong, he won't let this matter go.”

“Even if brother Jiang doesn't seek for a fight with Hu Song. He will deliberately find Jiang Chen to settle their conflict. He is here for the devil leader. However, not even a single devil is left in the desert. He can't even get a hair. How can he be satisfied?”

“Yeah, nothing's here. This is a real joke. If Hu Song really picks a fight with brother Jiang, there is no guarantee that he can defeat him.”

# Chapter 625 - Aggressive Encounter

---

One story ended and another began. After the devils were cleared away from the desert, what would happen next would make everyone tense. They knew about the conflict between Jiang Chen and Hu Lai. Today, Hu Song had arrived and he wouldn't simply let it go. Hu Song, as a First Grade Combat Emperor, was ranked number one on the Earth Rank. His was strong, stronger than any ordinary First Grade Combat Emperor. He had prepared well for this expedition. He aimed to slaughter the devil leader, showing that he had the a way of killing a powerful devil.

Jiang Chen was able to kill the devil leaders. They all witnessed his capability from the battle. If Hu Song was going to fight Jiang Chen, it was hard to tell who would win.

Those who just came felt a surge of fright down their spine when they saw what happened to the desert. Although they had no idea about the detailed event, the dead bodies lying everywhere were sufficient to tell them that there was a heaven and earth shaking battle that happened here.

“My god! So that's the reason why I didn't encounter even one devil on the way. Could it be that all of them were killed?”

“How did this happen? All the devils of Huang Ling Desert were killed. Are we late? There is nothing here. How can this be happening? When did the inner sect disciples become this strong? What happened?”

“Don’t tell me it was the elders that killed all these devils? Impossible. If it was them, what’s the use of us in participating this expedition? Isn’t this toying with us?”

.....

They newly-arrived disciples didn’t get it, totally not knowing what had happened. But, there was one thing that they were certain: the entire devil forces were wiped out in Huang Ling Desert, none was left alive. This indicated that their journey here was in vain, not even a hair was left.

The most frustrated one should be Hu Song. With his sense, he could literally feel that nothing was left here, in other words, the devil leader was already dead because it wouldn’t allow its forces to be slaughtered freely by the disciples, it would come out to stop them.

This wasn’t the doing of the elders. More than a hundred disciples were stained with blood. That indicated that they had fought in this battle. The problem was that all the devils were eliminated but almost none of the disciples were severely injured. How could this be possible? When did the inner sect disciples become so powerful?

When Hu Lai saw his brother, he greeted him with delight. Guo Xudong followed him. Even though their injuries had almost recovered, their swollen and green-blue bruises on their face were still there, strongly suggesting that they had been beaten up by someone.

“What happened? Who beat you guys?”

Hu Song was stunned. It was clear that these were bruises created from punches. But in Nebula Sect, there was no one who dared to touch his little brother. That person was virtually seeking death. To his surprise, Guo Xudong was also beaten up. He was a genius on the Earth Rank. Who could have beaten him? Even the second ranked genius, Yu Wei couldn't do that.

“Big brother, you must help me seek justice. It was Jiang Chen. Yes, that Jiang Chen and that stupid girl.”

Hu Lai was in tears when he remembered the insult and the torture that he had suffered, leaning completely against his brother's shoulder.

“Jiang Chen? Who's Jiang Chen? Who's the stupid girl?”

Hu Song touched his head, feeling a little lost. The names that Hu Lai said were new to him, he was sure that there were no such names in Nebula Sect.

“Brother Hu, the incident is like this. The sect has opened its recruitment for inner sect disciples to many big cities and domains. Many newly-recruited disciples have joined the expedition in Huang Ling Desert. Jiang Chen and Zuo Ling Er were among them. But these two individuals were extraordinarily strong, we were no match for them...”

Guo Xudong spoke a new and overly arrogant disciple like out every detail of the event without hiding anything. From Jiang Chen slapping Hu Lai to their fight with Zou Ling Er, and then his capability to wipe out the devils and even the devil leaders.

Guo Xudong didn't try to lower his voice. The disciples who just arrived heard his entire story, their eyes dilated, as though they were dreaming. It was a dream that they have never dreamt of: a new disciple who dared to do all of this and was also able to kill all of the devils.

Now, their eyes were fixed on Hu Song. This incident was obviously a massive disgrace to him. He had declared in Nebula Sect that he would kill the devil leader for his brother to exchange for the Emperor pill. He had never thought that there would be nothing left when he got here. The feeling was like when a boy had his hair gelled, worn a nice suit, wore a pleasant cologne and had prepared everything for the date and waited in the restaurant, then the girl rejected him, how pitiful.

“Big brother, we cannot let that kid go. He attacked me and killed your devil leader., His actions was obviously belittling your role and reputation in Nebula Sect. A new and overly arrogant disciple like him must be taught some lesson. If not, he will go wild in the future.”

Hu Lai said while gritting his teeth. He resented Jiang Chen so much that he wanted to eat him alive. Now that he has his big brother, he regained his arrogance. In his heart, his big brother was invincible. Even if Jiang Chen could defeat the devil leader, it

didn't mean that he could also defeat his big brother. This was blind admiration.

Humph!

Hu Song snorted and scanned the group of disciples, and asked coldly, "Which of you is Jiang Chen? Stand out."

This was something that was fated to come. Jiang Chen smiled and landed from the sky in front of Hu Song and said in his usual composure, "I am. I heard that you are the first genius on the Earth Rank. Is there anything that I can help you with?"

Hu Song's eyes were like a torch, glaring at Jiang Chen. He hadn't expected that Jiang Chen would be so young, probably younger than twenty years old, and he had already reached such level. That shook him slightly.

"A new disciple dared to be this arrogant. You dared to attack my brother and even the geniuses on the Earth Rank. You are truly audacious."

Hu Song said with an unwelcomed tone. It was because of this young man in front of him that he had been made an object of ridicule in Nebula Sect. He said that he would kill the devil leader in Huang Ling Desert and bring the devil soul back in front of everyone. Now, there was no devil leader, not even a devil soul that he could bring back. It was all snatched by this new disciple. If he went back with empty hands, his peers would laugh at him and say that he was worse than a newbie. Even if he became a core

disciple, people would look down on him, which was unacceptable to him.

“I don’t care who the hell you are or how great you are in Nebula Sect. I warn you that I’m not a person who you can afford to offend, thus, don’t pick a fight with me.”

Jiang Chen said solemnly. Those who knew him understood that this was the gentle warning, not boasting.

Hu Song let out a puff and laughed. He felt that he had just heard the funniest joke in the whole world. A newbie just used such a tone to threaten him. If that wasn’t a joke then what was that? However, not one of the disciples laughed. They didn’t think that it was a joke, they felt Jiang Chen’s sincerity in his words. In whatever ways they see it, Jiang Chen wasn’t someone Hu Song could afford to go against. Perhaps Hu Song was powerful enough to fight Jiang Chen. But, Jiang Chen’s monstrous talent wouldn’t take long for him to overtake Hu Song and leave him so far behind.

“Without a doubt, you are arrogant. Nobody dared speak to me in such a way before. Jiang Chen, if you hand over the devil soul of devil leader to me, our conflict will be solved. I will put all of this behind. What do you say? This is my bottom line.”

Hu Song said using the tone of a noble while speaking to a commoner.

“Damn head. You are very shameless, aren’t you? If you want the souls, find it yourself. You should blame yourself for arriving late.

Let me tell you, there are no devil's souls left here, only loads of farts."

Big Yellow couldn't help but interject.

"Where did this dog came from? You want to die?"

Hu Song was furious. What was his status and position in Nebula Sect? Jiang Chen's disrespect was still passable. Now even a dog wanted to insult him?

"Brother Hu, that dog isn't ordinary."

Guo Xudong reminded.

"Big brother, kill this dog and bring it back to stew."

Hu Lai said violently.

.....

"This battle will be aggressive. It seems that it is really unavoidable. Jiang Chen won't give the souls out. He won't accommodate Hu Song's requests."

"That's right, this Hu Song is too much. Brother Jiang's achievement today was glorious, he has made a great contribution



to Nebula Sect and we have obtained many benefits just by following him. Now, Hu Song is here to rob the fruits away. Is there something this good in the world?”

“You guys said that they are going to fight one another? Then who will win?”

“It’s hard to determine. Even though Jiang Chen is only an Eighth Grade Combat King, we have witnessed his strength. Hu Song is a First Grade Combat Emperor. Moreover, he has prepared for battle for a period of time, he probably has a secret technique for his enemy. If the battle really begins, the conclusion is hard to predict. But, I hope that brother Jiang will win so his identity and path will be greater than Hu Song.”

“Agreed. I also hoped for brother Jiang to win since he has brought us so much benefits. That Hu Song only knows how to bully people, and he gave no benefits.”

.....

The disciples of Nebula Sect could see what was happening. Today’s situation was inevitable. The only solution to solve the conflict between Jiang Chen and Hu Song was through real blades and spears in the battlefield. No one is qualified enough to interfere in this battle, but their hearts were full of expectation. If the new disciple, Jiang Chen, could defeat the first genius on the Earth Rank, Hu Song, a miraculous record would be created. This was a show that they must watch. Many were expecting Jiang Chen to produce miracles.

# Chapter 626 - Contending For The First Place On The Earth Ranking

---

“Jiang Chen. You really refuse to give me the devil souls? You thought that killing a devil leader gives you the right to fight me?”

Hu Song’s eyes sparkled with a very cold and ferocious light. It seemed like this was the last chance of mercy he was giving to Jiang Chen. If he declined the offer, Hu Song wouldn’t hesitate to attack.

“Seeing that you are still so arrogant, I challenge you to a battle now. It seems like I can acquire the first place on the Earth ranking even before entering the sect. What a good idea!”

Jiang Chen pointed at Hu Song while his combat aura was slowly spilling out from his body. He had predicted that there was no way to avoid this battle. Thus, he initiated the battle first. Hu Song was the number one genius on the Earth ranking. If he defeated this man, he would replace him and would be officially listed on the ranking. It was a positive sign to enter Nebula Sect with such an achievement. Should this happened, it would become the very first in the history of the sect.

There were two types of rankings. One was the Earth ranking and the other was the Heaven ranking. Both inner sect disciples and core disciples had fought hard in order to be listed on the ranks. No newly-recruited disciple that hadn’t even gone to Nebula Sect had taken the first place ever. If Jiang Chen succeeded this time, it would leave a miraculous record in Nebula Sect. Everyone would remember this godly tale in the future days.

“Fine. Jiang Chen, since you don’t want to live, I will grant your wish. You aren’t an official disciple of Nebula Sect yet if you still didn’t pass the check of the Brilliant Mirror. Your jade plate won’t do you much help. If I killed you today it is not equivalent in killing my fellow disciple.”

Hu Song said with an overly proud tone while pointing at Jiang Chen. He wasn’t putting Jiang Chen in his eyes even if he had killed a First Grade Devil Emperor, because he was only a Combat King. Hu Song came prepared to kill the devil leader. If he used his trump card to eliminate the devil leader without Jiang Chen’s interference, there was no chance for the devil to survive.

“Brother Jiang, be careful of him. He is now a Combat Emperor, his strength can’t be underestimated. I heard that he has completed the cultivation of the Incredible Solid Physique Art which makes him invulnerable. Plus he must have prepared some kind of trump card for eliminating the devil leader.”

Yu Wei conveyed the message to him through True Qi transmission.

Jiang Chen nodded. He becomes alert when he is facing an enemy in front of him. He was only an Eighth Grade Combat King. He probably could kill some Combat Emperors like the devil leader or Kong Yang, but they were defeated because he constrained their attributes. His current strength was no match for a true Second Grade Combat Emperor. Even though he could easily get rid of an ordinary First Grade Combat Emperor like Kong Yan, Hu Song wasn’t a common Combat Emperor. He was the top genius on the

Earth ranking in Nebula Sect, which made him incomparable to Kong Yan at all.

Hu Song was a hard enemy to fight, but Jiang Chen wasn't worried at all. Instead, it ignited his desire for battle when he faced a rare, intense, and big battle like this.

“Come, show me what a newbie genius have?”

Hu Song's Qi changed and flew up to the sky. At this moment, the sun had fully risen. Due to the devils being wiped out, the weather in Huang Ling Desert turned gentle and warm. Although there were still sand mingling in the air when the wind blew.

Jiang Chen followed closely and rose up to the sky. They had chosen the sky above to be their battlefield. The disciples' eyes widened with excitement, staring at the two men without blinking. Though, the battle wasn't held in Nebula Sect it was still important because it could change the rank of the first genius.

There wasn't any change on the Earth Ranking after Hu Song's advancement. There were very little of them who competed for the position. Whether Jiang Chen could shook Hu Song's first place or not was what everyone had been waiting for. They hoped that Jiang Chen would win the battle and create another miracle like yesterday night. in which he and his group had created a miracle for Nebula Sect.

\*Ka ka\*

A surge of Yuan Force rushed out from Hu Song's body and made cracking noises from the joints of his body. His body was strong and sturdy, manlier than Hu Lai. The surface of the sword was covered with a domineering aura which was tempered from his cultivation.

From the changes of his body, it was apparent that Hu Song's cultivation had reached a very powerful stage. His muscles were as hard as a rock. It was just like what Yu Wei had said a while ago, Hu Song had advanced his Incredible Solid Physique Art to a higher level.

“Frenzy Quake Hand!”

Hu Song howled, launching an attack. He struck Jiang Chen with his mighty Frenzy Quake Hand. Its power seemed to be greater than the Boulder Cracking Hand of the Guan Family in the Eastern Continent.

A layer of golden hard rock was formed on Hu Song's palm, it was shining with extremely bright light that was embedded with mystical symbols. It arrived an inch before Jiang Chen in the blink of an eye.

The palm attack had an irresistible force that could move mountains or smash its summit into countless pieces. It was very destructive.

\*Hong\*

Jiang Chen wasn't scared. In fact, his Dragon Transformation Art made him invulnerable to physique enhancers. Since Hu Song was one of them, thus Jiang Chen was in advantage. He also wanted to test his own physique with this Physique Enhancer.

Jiang Chen sent out a punch. The surface of his fist was covered with blood-red dragon scales. It instantly turned into a giant dragon claw, welcoming Hu Song's Frenzy Quake Hand.

\*Peng!\*

Both punches clashed together, creating a loud sound like the jingling of metals. It's as though the sound didn't come from the impact of human muscles. It was like two crazy weapons that had collided with one another, discharging a big spark. They could tell how strong these two people's body were.

Jiang Chen and Hu Song both felt a strong force of resistance, pushing them three steps back.

Hu Song's face changed, eyeing Jiang Chen in terror. He was very confident in his Incredible Solid Physique Art. Not one of his peers dared to face this head on. Jiang Chen shocked him just from the fact that he could endure his hardened skin. Hu Song didn't dare to underestimate his enemy anymore. He was stunned with disbelief. How could a mere Eighth Grade Combat King become so powerful? If he compared himself to him when he was an Eighth Grade Combat King, he was just a crap. This caused him to feel the disparity between them and made him very envious of Jiang Chen.

“Amazing. Hu Song has advanced his Incredible Solid Physique Art to a high level that no one from the inner sect can match him, but brother Jiang did it, his power is as good as Hu Song.”

“Brother Jiang is a real freak. Any technique that he possess is deadly. Not only is his combat technique great, but also his physique. It is very rare to see such a monstrous talent.”

“The Incredible Solid Physique Art is Hu Song’s greatest skill. If this can’t suppress Jiang Chen, it is unlikely for him to claim his victory.”

.....

Most of them were stunned, they had followed Jiang Chen for the entire night. He had brought them along to exterminate the devils and their leader. They had seen many of his incredible techniques of killing. Who wouldn’t be shocked when they saw him that he also had an invincible physique?

“I don’t believe that your physique can match with mine.”

Hu Song’s expression became stern. All this while he had been cultivating his Incredible Solid Physique Art. He had no doubt about his body. He could accept anyone to have a stronger physique than him, but definitely not an Eighth Grade Combat King’s body.

\*Hong\*

Hu Song made another attack, using his physical attributes. His palm flew in the air, striking more than forty seal that almost cracked the spatial zone. The overspreading seal lunged at Jiang Chen.

“Azure Dragon’s Five Steps.”

Jiang Chen didn’t wait. Every step he made was graceful, every step trampled the spatial zone to pieces. His rapid five steps crushed all of Hu Song’s seal to nothing instantly. The trembling resistance force of Azure Dragon’s Five Steps was transferred to Hu Song’s body. He was forced three steps back. This time Jiang Chen only made two steps back. From the looks of it, Jiang Chen was the one who was in control of the situation.

Jiang Chen had been gaining the upper hand since the start of the battle. He wouldn’t have to worry about the consumption of his energy after cultivating the Dragon Transformation Art: there was unlimited energy. He was afraid that Hu Song couldn’t afford to play the energy consumption game with him, like Kong Yang who faced the unimaginable consequences.

“Quick, look. Hu Song was knocked back again. Truly unbelievable.”

“Very terrifying. Brother Jiang is literally not human.”

“Humph! My brother hasn’t showed his great skill yet. That Jiang Chen isn’t his opponent. Wait and see.”



People were startled once more. They didn't think that Jiang Chen could gain the upper hand of the battle. Hu Lai was still sounding all over himself but his face was not as confident anymore. His heart began to pound with apprehension. Before this, he thought his mighty big brother could easily handle Jiang Chen with only a few simple moves. He would never thought of what was happening right now.

Yu Wei sighed. As one of the geniuses of the Earth Ranking, he couldn't help giving Jiang Chen another thumbs up, sighing that he wasn't as good as him.

Guo Xudong's facial expression was full of mockery. It was self mockery, upon thinking back on how he tried to pick a fight with Jiang Chen. It was absolutely ridiculous and naïve.

Big Yellow wagged his big tail with a full grin on his face, he had never felt worried for Jiang Chen.

Zuo Ling Er was swirling her fists while making cheers for Jiang Chen, feeling excited for him.

"If you only have these tricks, then you truly are inferior, certainly no match for me."

Jiang Chen pointed his finger at Hu Song and waved with disapproval. He knew that Hu Song still had some powerful skill that he hadn't used yet. Otherwise he wouldn't be emboldened to kill the devil leader.

“Jiang Chen, I, Hu Song, have never lost to anyone before in terms of physique. Today I will show you my true Incredible Solid Physique.”

Hu Song raged, not going to hide any of his power anymore.

# Chapter 627 - Hu Song's Trump Card

---

The power of Hu Song's physique failed to defeat Jiang Chen. In turn, it irritated him and had dealt a terrible blow to his mentality. It was unbearable to him. But his Incredible Solid Physique hadn't been fully unleashed. Jiang Chen would be defeated once Hu Song fully activated his art.

Everyone was terrified while looking at Hu Song's body that had begun to transform. On his skin, layers of hard rock emerged in golden color with lines of talisman symbols. His body grew larger until he was roughly three meters tall, eventually becoming a golden giant.

At this moment, Hu Song had become a golden rocky giant. There was a golden armor that covered his entire body. It's the Incredible Solid Physique. He had successfully cultivated the art to a point where he could transform. His physical endurance increased further after the transformation.

“Haha...do you see it? My big brother has transformed. This is the true body of the Incredible Solid Physique, unbreakable and can even destroy a big mountain.”

Hu Lai laughed with satisfaction. Now that his big brother had transformed himself into another giant with solid physique a simple attack was enough to end Jiang Chen's life.

“He now have a very powerful physique after the transformation. Both his muscle strength and endurance increased tremendously.

If brother Jiang continues to use his physique to fight with him, I'm sure that he'll lose."

"Yes, Hu Song is indeed powerful. There is none under the Earth ranking to equal him."

"Look, brother Jiang doesn't look afraid at all. He doesn't even have the slightest concern Hu Song's transformation and enhancement. I think he has something even more powerful than his opponent."

.....

Hu Song's transformation drove many people in terror once more. They could feel the destructive aura coming from his insane physique, they started to feel worried for Jiang Chen.

"Jiang Chen. My Incredible Solid Physique is indestructible. Do you still want to fight me directly?"

Hu Song's voice rumbled like thunder while clamoring at Jiang Chen.

"Why don't I?"

Jiang Chen said with a carefree tone.

"Haha, Jiang Chen. I have to say. Your physique is also an

extraordinary one but too bad, you aren't comparable to mine. You want to die clashing directly at me?"

Hu Song laughed with mockery. His face looked like the one who had just won a battle. His transformation had given him a lot of confidence and room to be proud of.

"You can transform? Did you think that I can't?"

Jiang Chen smiled and shouted, " Firethorn Combat Armor!"

\*Hong\*

After the sound was heard, a golden armor appeared on Jiang Chen's skin. The armor was sharp on its edges and it shined with a brilliant light. Slowly, the unusually sharp spikes could be seen emerging from it.

"What?!"

Hu Song exclaimed in terror after seeing what was going on in front of him. He could feel the formidable aura that was released from the armor. And those metal spikes, it gave him a chill down his spine. The armor had the perfect combination of attack and defense.

"Look, brother Jiang has also transformed. His Qi is on par with Hu Song now, this is hard to imagine. His techniques are countless and absolutely endless."

“I never thought brother Jiang has also cultivated a technique for enhancing his physique. His armor looked even scarier than Hu Song. Do you all see its sharp metal thorns? It will definitely be lethal if it is a head on clash.”

“Truly scary. This time Hu Song can’t be proud anymore. His opponent is totally capable to fight him... his pride must be badly hurt.”

.....

Another wave of fright was sent down to the people’s spine. The feeling was more intense than when Hu Song transformed because everyone had already known about his physique but not Jiang Chen’s. It was true that they had seen how Jiang Chen killed during the massacre of devils and they thought that it was his limit. However, his sudden cast of physique transformation stunned them, as if his techniques was renewable.

The supposedly happy Hu Lai was stunned as well. He found it very worrisome when he sensed the formidable Qi of Jiang Chen’s armor.

Again, the two of them matched each other’s power. Everybody was looking forward to their next round of battle that was about to begin.

“Bring it on!”

Jiang Chen shouted. With his Firethron Combat Armor, he lunged forward to Hu Song at an incredible speed. Like a ray of light, he reached his enemy in a blink of an eye.

“Humph!”

Hu Song humphed coldly. Jiang Chen chose the old fashion way and attacked directly, which was what he expected. His Incredible Solid Physique had been fully activated, he didn't believe that Jiang Chen's armor could be stronger than his.

\*Hong... Long...\*

Both men collided with their bodies. The sound that was created was literally equal to the sound of the collision between two big mountains. The tremor was greater than the quaking of the earth. A visible cavity formed in the spatial zone which released a cold-engulfing force that chilled everyone.

## Chapter 628 - Ninth Grade Combat King

---

Hu Song had consumed the Taboo Pill, helping advance to the Second Grade Combat Emperor, albeit temporarily. Pushing his level from First Grade to Second Grade was out of Jiang Chen's expectations. Nevertheless, it still made sense when he thought of Hu Song's preparation to fight the devil leader, it wasn't unnatural for him to have such a trump card.

Seeing his enemy became formidable after the sudden change, Jiang Chen knitted his brows. As an Eighth Grade Combat King, there was no way he could defeat Hu Song which was now a Second Grade Combat Emperor. There wasn't any advantage of restraining force or inhibiting of attributes now, which wasn't equal to his fight with Kong Yang. If the two Combat Emperors were compared, Hu Song was now many times stronger than Kong Yang.

“Not good, brother Jiang's life is endangered. The Taboo Pill is supposed to be used when facing the devil leader, but Hu Song used it to fight him.”

Yu Wei's expression changed. No one had expected that Hu Song's trump card would be this. An increase of grade was enough to defeat Jiang Chen, even if it was only for a short period of time.

“How? Big brother will lose to him.”

Zuo Ling Er was worried and looked anxious.



“No need to worry. This guy must have ways. In this world, there are no things that are unsolvable to him.”

Big Yellow said. He was very confident in Jiang Chen. He had followed him all this while from Red City. No one understood Jiang Chen better than him. Along the way, Jiang Chen had faced many different kinds of danger, and confronted a lot of formidable opponents. It was no big deal comparing his current situation to the past.

“Jiang Chen! You forced me to consume the Taboo Pill. It is indeed unacceptable. Today, I must teach you a lesson. If I accidentally kill you in battle, it is still fine since you aren’t an official disciple of Nebula Sect yet.” Hu Song’s shouted while saying this to his hateful opponent.

Jiang Chen’s cultivation of Great Soul Derivation Technique made his senses sharper. He could sense the murderous aura coming directly from Hu Song. He had decided to kill Jiang Chen. This caused Jiang Chen’s eyes to become cold-blooded. Every time someone wanted to kill him, they always end up in unpleasant circumstances.

To Hu Song, Jiang Chen was terrifying. Today he had completely spited Jiang Chen. There was no turning back, he had to kill him this time. He only had one Taboo Pill which gave him only one chance to eliminate this extraordinary being. Otherwise, he would lose his chance to kill Jiang Chen forever. He feared that Jiang Chen’s insane talent would attract a lot of attention from the high ranks in Nebula Sect. At that time, he wouldn’t get any benefits from the elders like he used to.

Therefore, Hu Song directed his murderous aura on Jiang Chen. He wasn't afraid of killing Jiang Chen even if there were a few hundred pairs of eyes watching him. Every newbie who came to Nebula Sect for the first time would need to go through the Brilliant Mirror check and detention. In other words, Jiang Chen still wasn't an official disciple of Nebula Sect. It would be foolish to not kill him now. The punishment he would get the most when he got back to the sect would be a few words of scolding from an elder.

“You think you can really kill me?”

Jiang Chen said with a cold tone.

“Haha...you still have a greater technique to fight me? Even if you have, it will be useless. I am now a Second Grade Combat Emperor. My strength is many times stronger than my previous form, killing you will be effortless.”

Hu Song laughed in delight. He was sure that he had reached a level where Jiang Chen would have no choice but to succumb, as the gap of grade couldn't be easily overcome.

“Of course, I do.”

Jiang Chen said in a plain tone. Now, he had only two ways to defeat Hu Song. One was to muster the force of the Saint Bone, emptying out all its power to fight him but it would cost a vast amount of his energy. The crucial point was that there were too

many people here, more than a few hundred pairs of eyes. When today's battle ended, everything that happened during the fight would be conveyed to Nebula Sect. His Saint Bone was his secret, he didn't want to expose it in front of everyone, no one should know about it.

It seemed that only the second way will work for him. He would refine all the devil and devil souls in his Dantian, which would push his grade to the Ninth Grade Combat King. This would allow him to defeat Hu Song easily. But, this kind of advancement would bring some detrimental effects to his foundation.

“In my hand, there are two devil leader souls which will be exchanged for two Emperor Pills. One for Ling Er and the other one for me. This makes the advancement to the Ninth Grade worth it. It is because it's an Emperor Pill. Not only can it advance my grade further to the Combat Emperor realm, it can also offset all the negative effects created by the advancement using devil souls.”

Jiang Chen went into a monologue. Emperor Pills were very valuable to him. Even a large sect like the Nebula Sect wouldn't simply give it to just anyone. People normally needed it when they had successfully reached the Ninth Grade Combat King and it would push their grade to the Combat Emperor realm. If the pill was used in any level before Ninth Grade, it would be deemed wasteful. If Jiang Chen used the Emperor Pill while he was a Eighth Grade Combat King, it would increase his pool of energy and push his level to the Ninth Grade. And, He would still need a period of time to step into the Combat Emperor realm. He was now having a life and death battle with Hu Song, he had no other alternatives other than to push his grade to the Ninth Grade by refining the devil souls. Once he was done with this obstacle, he

would obtain the Emperor Pill and continue his advancement to transcend the Combat King realm.

Jiang Chen wasn't an indecisive guy, he is a guy with conviction. He would get what he wanted once the goal was set. He adjusted the spaces in his Dantian. All the devil souls flew out together and started refining them. During the conversion of energy of the Dragon Transformation Art, the souls crumbled into nothing and turned into an enormous amount of intangible energy that penetrated into his limbs and bones.

Jiang Chen had stored a lot of souls, especially during the extermination of those Ninth Grade devils. His consumption of energy while advancing to the Ninth Grade Combat King was great but the amount of souls was enough to satisfy the need. He left the two devil souls of the Devil Emperor aside as they were the items used to exchange for Emperor Pills.

\*Buzz\* \*Buzz\*

Everyone beside the battlefield were witnessing the event. Jiang Chen was undergoing the same process as Hu Song. His Qi was rising continuously. Inside his body, new dragon marks started to form with great speed. It was hard to imagine the speed of formation with so much energy pumping into his body.

Very soon, a thousand dragon marks were formed. Before, Jiang Chen had thirty five thousand dragon marks, now it increased to thirty six thousand dragon marks at the Ninth Grade Combat King. Also, Heaven Rank Restoration Pills were something that couldn't be lacked in the process of advancement. Thus, a lot of the pills

were swallowed by him as if they were free.

\*Hong\*

A formidable aura rushed out of Jiang Chen's body, and he immediately reached the Ninth Grade Combat King. The change stunned everyone again, this was another miracle created.

“What? Ninth Grade Combat King? He actually advanced to the Ninth Grade. Is it even possible?”

“Mother of god, this is absurd, isn't it. Pushing to the Ninth Grade in the blink of an eye. When has advancement of grade become so easy? Is this the true meaning of 'abnormal'?”

“He is mad. Brother Jiang has created another miracle. And do you all realize that Hu Song's advancement was only temporarily supported by the effect of the pill. Once the effect is over, his power will return to his original state and his body will be affected negatively. Brother Jiang's scenario is entirely different, his advancement doesn't seem like he will slip back to his previous grade at all.”

.....

The scene made their hearts quiver, leaving them no peace. At first, everyone expected Jiang Chen to lose the battle. To their surprise, Jiang Chen advanced his grade instantly, without showing any signs of it.

Of course, the distinction between a Ninth Grade Combat King and a Second Grade Combat Emperor was very large. But, the situation changed when Jiang Chen came into the picture. Both of them successfully advanced by one grade, this suggested that Hu Song was very unlikely to defeat Jiang Chen, and would probably be defeated.

Hu Song was the one who was stunned the most. He saw it with his own eyes when Jiang Chen was advancing. He doubted that there were problems in his eyesight when he saw how an Eighth Grade Combat King could advance to Ninth Grade Combat King so easily. He saw it clearly that Jiang Chen wasn't using the same kind of pill he swallowed when he advanced.

“Hu Song, are you confident to kill me now?”

Jiang Chen looked at him with his cold-blooded eyes.

“Humph! So what if you have advanced by a grade? You are still a Combat King. But I am a Second Grade Combat Emperor. Killing you is still as easy.”

Hu Song made a cold humph.

“Then do it now. If you wait, the effect of the pill will fade away.”

Jiang Chen said. He was now a Ninth Grade Combat King. He felt

unusually charged up, the desire for a large battle was burning inside of him.

\*Hong\*

Without waiting for Hu Song to attack, Jiang Chen initiated by casting his True Dragon Palm. The giant dragon claw was forty meters long, big enough to cover the sky above his head. It then lunged towards and clawed at Hu Song.

“Frenzy Quake Hand!”

Hu Song exclaimed. He also sent another attack, and at the same time his Incredible Solid Physique resurfaced.

Hong Long!

The Frenzy Quake Hand collided with the True Dragon Palm but it was destroyed instantly. Hu Song’s body trembled and he was pushed back three steps. Although the two of them had advanced their grades and their gap still remained, the attack proved almost everything. Hu Song was defeated in their attack just now, he wasn’t powerful enough to defeat Jiang Chen!

In truth, relying on the effect of the Taboo Pill wasn’t a solid plan. Hu Song’s Second Grade Combat Emperor wasn’t his true power. He wasn’t comparable to Jiang Chen’s advancement which was real and permanent.

“Why is he so powerful?”

Hu Song’s face turned very ugly. He started to get nervous and his heart beat like it wanted to escape his chest, ripping away his confidence for the very first time.

“Azure’s Dragon Five Steps.”

Jiang Chen ignored his opponent’s state, he instantaneously made the first step to cast his technique on Hu Song.

...



# Chapter 629 - Leave One Of Your Arms

---

\*Dong!\*

Another explosion occurred in the spatial zone. Something azure formed under Jiang Chen's feet, it carried unrecognizable talisman marks that trampled the spatial zone and crushed it into pieces. His entire body was illuminating a dazzling light, and it then locked on Hu Song's Qi before he stepped on him.

Hu Song could feel the enormous pressure from Jiang Chen's leg. His face turned ugly, the impact just now had caused him to back away and had dealt a terrible blow on him. Now, his confidence had totally faded away. A certain fear crept inside of him everytime he looked at his intimidating opponent.

Hu Song didn't wait to be defeated, he quickly struck with his Frenzy Quake Hand like before. Countless of palm seals that covered the sky were summoned, rushing towards Jiang Chen. Every palm seal carried destruction, destroying everything it passed.

\*Hong\*

Nevertheless, Jiang Chen's Azure Dragon's Five Steps were more domineering. When he made the second step, raging shadows of dragons could be seen. It trampled on those palm seals, creating a rumbling sound. It's as if the spatial area nearby was having a large explosion. Endless burning flames were seen, the destructive power of the battle shook the sky above them. The disciples who

stood below were frightened and started to panic. It was certain that if they stood in the center of the battle field, they would be destroyed immediately.

Hu Song had already used up all his energy, exerting whatever's left in him to make an attack. When Jiang Chen made the third step, Hu Song felt absolutely exhausted, as though every hit was a big mountain. He could feel that he was suffocating.

\*Dong!\*

Jiang Chen made the fourth step along with the roar of a dragon. He was like a War God that had descended from the heaven and then trampled Hu Song's skull.

“Incredible Solid Physique!”

Hu Song shouted and transformed again. This time his physique was a lot stronger than before. He punched as hard as golden steel drill. He didn't believe Jiang Chen's leg would be that powerful, he would use all his effort to punch through his enemy's leg.

\*Dong!\* \*Ka Cha!\*

Unfortunately, the Azure Dragon's Five Steps was something Hu Song could not easily predict. He only got to the Second Grade Combat Emperor artificially, using the effect of a pill. Thus, it's very unstable. As for Jiang Chen, he had truly achieved Ninth Grade Combat King.

Lines of cracks appeared on Hu Song's Incredible Solid Physique as soon as the fourth step was made. It seemed that it would break at any time.

“How could this happen? It shouldn't be like this. My brother is matchless, he won't lose to a newbie.”

The face of the one who had been watching the battle attentively, Hu Lai, became unpleasant and depressed. His mood today was like a roller coaster, going up and down and eventually fell to the bottom. Now, even his big brother was no match for Jiang Chen, how could he possibly avenge himself?

Guo Xudong who stood beside heaved a big sigh. Hu Lai still couldn't see through the battle, but he could. According to the development of the battle, Hu Song was no match for Jiang Chen. Although he was now a Second Grade Combat Emperor and could still withstand Jiang Chen's violent attack, the effect of the pill inside his body would disappear soon. At that time, he would return to his original grade, a First Grade Combat Emperor. Then he would be beaten up by Jiang Chen like a naughty and helpless dog. Perhaps, he might also be beaten up when he's still a Second Grade Combat Emperor.

“Hu Song, this is my last step. If your Incredible Solid Physique remains unbreakable, I will let you go with your body intact.”

Jiang Chen said as he made the fifth step. Under his feet, a giant dragon shadow emerged, it looked real and alive.

Hu Song snarled and lunged forward with his Incredible Solid Physique. Jiang Chen was undeniably powerful in his technique and power, but his physique wasn't made of glass. Hu Song believed that his opponent couldn't crush his hard physique, it was just impossible.

\*Hong\*

The truth was always cruel. When Jiang Chen's fifth step touched Hu Song's body, the Incredible Solid Physique was extremely vulnerable and defenseless, it cracked and crumbled into pieces after a loud rumbling sound. Hu Song bounced away from his original position, he was spurting blood from his mouth while flying and a sound of 'Peng' was heard when he touched the ground. A big hole was created in the ground, yellow sand and black smoke rustled in the air.

A silent atmosphere filled the crowd. They were looking at the big pit and leaving their mouth wide open in shock. Hu Song was defeated, no one had ever imagined that this would be the result of the battle. Jiang Chen's last step was truly powerful. Hu Song couldn't bear the attack. Luckily he was a Second Grade Combat Emperor. If he was a First Grade Combat Emperor, they were afraid that he would be crushed to death, no chance of living at all.

“Brother!”

Hu Lai shouted and was the first one to dash in the deep hole. Guo Xudong and the rest followed suit. They saw Hu Song

climbing out of the deep hole slowly and with difficulty. Hu Song's face now was full of shame, the clothes on his body was torn and ragged. His good-looking face was covered with blood stains. He was still coughing blood, his entire body was shivering. The destruction of his Incredible Solid Physique dealt a great damage to him.

\*Swoosh\*

Jiang Chen turned into a light and came before Hu Song. His face had a suppressed smile.

Hu Song's attention was put on Jiang Chen. Besides the feeling of enmity towards Jiang Chen, many overwhelming feeling also filled his head. Today was the most disgraceful day ever, but he had to admit that this was the most abnormal being that he had ever encountered. A Second Grade Combat Emperor was just defeated by him.

“Hu Song is defeated. The first place will now belong to Jiang Chen.”

“Brother Jiang is too great. I can already imagine what will happen in the future. As long as brother Jiang enters the sect, he will be greatly valued by many elders. His social status at that time will naturally be different from us.”

“We will follow brother Jiang from today onwards. If it wasn't for his help in this expedition, the trial won't be settled so fast. Plus, each one of us obtained great rewards. And most importantly,

none of us suffered any casualties and injuries. These were all due to his contribution.”

.....

Everyone’s face was full of delight. Without a doubt, they felt blissed-out. Jiang Chen won the battle. It felt like they all had won the battle themselves. In truth, after one night of intense battle with the devils, Jiang Chen had already won the disciples’ hearts. Most of them were cheering for Jiang Chen while he was battling with Hu Song.

“Jiang Chen, you have won. But this matter will never be settled. We will settle this once we are back at Nebula Sect.”

Hu Song left a cold message and turned to leave.

“Hold on.”

Jiang Chen blocked his path, “I didn’t say that you can go.”

“What do you want?”

Hu Song raised his head and glared at Jiang Chen.

“Did you not declare to kill me in front of them? These words were clearly heard by everyone. Besides that, the murderous aura you released wasn’t a joke. Since you want to kill me so badly, I

have no reason to release you. I, Jiang Chen, don't like to leave a future trouble that is unsolved. You want to kill me, then you are my enemy. What reason do I have to allow my enemy to live freely?"

Jiang Chen said emotionlessly.

Everyone's, including Hu Song, facial expression changed. The entire atmosphere was suppressed by a heavy weight. It seemed that Jiang Chen was determined to kill Hu Song. The nature of the event would change, the consequences would turn serious.

In the law of Nebula Sect, inner sect disciples were forbidden to kill each other. If there were unsolved conflicts, they could resolve it on the life and death combat platform. In truth, internecine killing was prevalent, but those were not unveiled and done secretly. Now, Jiang Chen wanted to kill Hu Song in front of all these disciples, there were a few hundreds of them.

"You want to kill me?"

Hu Song's eyes released a tyrannical light.

"Only you are permitted to kill me? And, if I kill you now, it will be a piece of cake since you have no more trump cards in your hands."

Jiang Chen said with a cool tone.

“Brother Jiang, don’t act rashly. Killing Hu Song here will bring you a considerable amount of consequences. You haven’t entered Nebula Sect yet and is not yet deemed to be an official disciple. If you kill Hu Song, then the matter won’t just be about killing him but also offending the whole Nebula Sect.”

Lan Yi quickly moved forward to stop him, she feared that Jiang Chen would slap Hu Song to death, in turn, worsening the situation.

“Haha. Jiang Chen, did you hear that? If you dare to kill a soon-to-be core disciple in front of so many people, it will be deemed as making Nebula Sect your enemy. You will be hunted by the sect.”

Hu Song laughed pleasantly, not having even the slightest fear for Jiang Chen. He was certain that Jiang Chen wouldn’t kill him. Killing him in front of so many people would mean seeking death.

Jiang Chen squinted his eyes, trying to hide the overwhelming stream of cold light that almost beamed out. From the moment Hu Song intended to take his life, he had put the death sentence on Hu Song. But he couldn’t kill Hu Song now, he would have killed him just now in the battle, saving his time listening to Hu Song’s arrogant speech.

Killing Hu Song was a fast solution, but it came with a great consequence. Jiang Chen would lose the chance to enter Nebula Sect, both of the Emperor pills, and, most importantly, the chance of finding the fragment of his Heavenly Saint Sword. He would definitely offend the sect. His grade won’t allow him to challenge the whole Sect. It was a foolish choice.



“As you wish, I won’t kill you. Leave one arm of yours, then I will let you go.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes were as sharp as blade while staring at Hu Song.

“What?”

Hu Song and Hu Lai both exclaimed out of shock. They doubted that they had listened wrongly. Jiang Chen really wanted him to leave his arm here?

“Jiang Chen, don’t be a fool. Despite losing to you today, I’m one of the inner-sect disciples, you dare to... argh...”

Before Hu Song could finish his sentence, a great wail of pain was heard. No one knew when, but a long sword appeared in Jiang Chen’s hand. After a sound of ‘Pu Chi’ one of Hu Song’s arm was chopped off, blood pumped out of the wound like a fountain.

## Chapter 630 - The Brilliant Mirror

---

The sword was like a cold light. Hu Song's arm fell to the ground, twitching continuously. Hu Song's eyes were filled with blood. He stared intently at his own arm. At that moment, no one could imagine how he felt except himself. He didn't even think that Jiang Chen would be so audacious: cutting off an inner sect disciple's arm.

Hu Song didn't have the strength to concern about Jiang Chen's audacity. He had lost an arm. It would bring negative impacts to him in the future. Even if he was a Combat Emperor, he didn't have the power to grow another arm. In other words, his bright future is probably destroyed by this event which he found unacceptable.

The others suppressed their breath and kept their silence. Everyone stared with their big eyes on Jiang Chen and the sword in his hand. He was really a ruthless man. He would do whatever he said, giving no quarters to anyone. Offending someone like him was really a serious mistake.

In truth, after a night of massacre, the disciples had already seen through that Jiang Chen was a very ruthless person. There was nothing he didn't dare to do. If it wasn't for the connection Hu Song had with the core disciples, he would be long dead by now. Jiang Chen wanted him to leave his arm here as a punishment.

“Too brutal. Hu Song is finished this time. Not only did he lost an arm, he will also be engulfed by the after-effects of the Taboo Pill which will make him and his grade worse.”

“I can see that he got what he deserved. He had been extremely arrogant in Nebula Sect. Today, he wanted to bully Jiang Chen but didn’t expect that he is the one who is being bullied. He failed and is badly injured. I am sure that if there are less people here, Hu Song’s life would definitely be taken away by brother Jiang.”

“That is crystal clear. Brother Jiang is a decisive killer. He had never hesitated in eliminating his enemy. Hu Song only lost an arm because of his own doing. But brother Jiang has crippled one disciple before entering Nebula Sect. I’m afraid that he will encounter more trouble because of this.”

“Who knows? At that time, I will be a witness for brother Jiang. It was Hu Song who declared to kill brother Jiang and was just forced to fight back. Jiang Chen only wanted his arm, it is lesser than what he had demanded.”

.....

Jiang Chen’s formidable aura had gone deeper into everyone’s heart. His cruel means of killing showed no mercy to Hu Song. This is Jiang Chen. If it was someone else, someone who was just a new disciple and had cut down an arm of the first genius of the Earth ranking, people would think that it was outrageous and would make him pay.

“Jiang Chen, you, you dare cut down my arm?! ”

Hu Song gritted his teeth, he hated him so much that he wanted

to eat him alive. He hadn't hated someone so badly.

“You say another word and I will cut down another arm.”

Jiang Chen said with an emotionless tone. But his words were heavy, not even Hu Song dared to doubt it now. If he really did say another word, Jiang Chen would cut off his other arm.

Even though he was very angry, he didn't dare to try and oppose the dominant opponent. He turned his head and left, some followed him. When they looked at Jiang Chen, they heaved a sigh simultaneously and stepped into the sky and left. All of the devils were exterminated, it was pointless to stay here any longer. They knew that Nebula Sect would have no peace after this event.

“Big brother, that dude resented you so much and wanted to kill you. Why didn't you end his miserable life?”

Zuo Ling Er said, and sounded annoyed.

“Sister Zuo, brother Jiang did that just to get rid of future obstacles. You all aren't considered official disciples of Nebula Sect yet. Killing off Hu Song will bring devastating effects to you all. Even if brother Jiang has only cut an arm off of Hu Song, I'm afraid brother Jiang will face numerous troubles after he arrives in the sect.”

Lan Yi said, thinking that Jiang Chen's act of cutting down Hu Song's arm was very rash.

“Although it will bring some troubles, it is still better than killing Hu Song. Brother Jiang is a gifted talent, Nebula Sect won’t put a lot of pressure on him. Brother Jiang is someone valuable of nurturing.”

Yu Wei said.

“Alright, now that the matter in Huang Ling Desert has ended. Let’s go to Nebula Sect.”

Jiang Chen said. He flew into the sky and led the way to Nebula Sect, an army of disciples followed behind him.

The disciples of Nebula Sect seldom come in a united manner. There were always violent disagreement amongst them. It was impossible to see them move together in such a large scale. But now, they all volunteered to follow Jiang Chen. The thought that they were going back to the sect put a flowery smile on their faces. They were so pleased because the fruit they reaped this time was unusually great. Every one of them obtained numerous devil souls. Once they arrived in the sect, the souls would be exchanged for precious items.

“Lan Yi, what is the Brilliant Mirror?”

On the way, Jiang Chen asked Lan Yi curiously. Not only had he heard these two words from Hu Song’s mouth, but also from many others. It seemed like every new disciple who entered the sect must went through this process. They had to go through the check of the

Brilliant Mirror. He also heard that he and Zuo Ling Er, who were listed on the Hall of Fame in a city was exempted from the checking.

“Brother Jiang, there is something you don’t know. The Brilliant Mirror is a precious treasure of Nebula Sect. I have never seen what the mirror looks like. It is just a projection of light from above. For every disciple that enters, the first required step is to walk through the projection of its light. The Brilliant Mirror carried some magical power, it is used to test the degree of loyalty. If there is someone who comes with an ulterior motive, his intention will be revealed by the mirror and the person will be attacked and be executed by it. Of course, most of the disciple had been safe after passing the test. Nebula Sect is one of the five major powers, no one will dare to come with bad intentions unless the person is seeking for death. Having the chance to enter the Nebula Sect is great honor, it is every young man’s dream. Most of the people have come for future advancement and cultivation with no ulterior motives, having no qualms for themselves. Thus, they won’t be troubled by the Brilliant Mirror.

Lan Yi explained. Telling everything she knew about the Brilliant Mirror.

After hearing what she said, Zuo Ling Er felt nothing special about it. But Jiang Chen and Big Yellow’s faces changed dramatically and was slightly unpleasant.

“Little Chen, it seems entering the sect isn’t an easy task after all. Your intention to enter the sect isn’t a good one. If that is unveiled by the mirror, you won’t be getting out of the sect even if you can

escape death.”

Big Yellow used the True Qi transmission to convey his message, he sounded a bit worried.

“If I’m not mistaken, the mirror is blended with the power to unveil people’s evil intention. Anyone’s bad intention will be revealed by the mirror. As long as there is an ulterior motive to join the sect, the person will certainly be attacked and killed. But I may have ways to deal with it.”

Jiang Chen replied.

“What means do you have? Don’t tell me you can hide your ulterior motive?”

Big Yellow said.

“Don’t forget, I have cultivated the Illusion Heart Sutra and it is related to people’s evil desire. It can ignite the deepest desire of humans which seemed more powerful than the Brilliant Mirror. Although I have no ways to hide my own intention and thoughts, I can use Illusion Heart Sutra to secretly disrupt the process, making the mirror ineffective.

Jiang Chen revealed a smile on his face.

“Will that work?”

Big Yellow's heart was pounding. The Brilliant Mirror was a precious treasure of Nebula Sect, not lesser than a Minor Saint Weapon. It wasn't easy to deal with even if it was just a projection of light. Jiang Chen was merely a Ninth Grade Combat King, which wasn't near to a Minor Saint. Even if the Illusion Heart Sutra could help Jiang Chen, it didn't seem that he could disrupt the power of the mirror.

"We have to move on and make prompt actions depending on the situation. We can't be going backwards, right? Since we have come this far, we'll have to continue even if it is a dangerous dragon pit."

Jiang Chen never felt afraid about it. As the Greatest Saint in his previous life, he could deal with any matter even if it was out of his expectation. Now that he has reached this far, he wouldn't retreat because of one mirror. It wasn't his style at all.

"That didn't do any good to relieve my concerns."

Big Yellow sniffed.

"There's nothing you should concern about. You are a pet beside me, no, a beast ok? The Brilliant Mirror will be shining upon me, not you."

Jiang Chen stared at Big Yellow, not believing what the stupid dog had just said. He was a ruthless being, he had no problems causing a great mess in Nebula Sect and he was pleased to do so.



Very soon, a few hundred disciples appeared outside of the sect. If you look from afar, there was a dense fog and thick auspicious clouds that surrounded the top of the buildings, like a human paradise. The sect was sitting on a giant mountain which they called the Nebula Mountain. The area was roughly a thousand miles. Outside the door of the mountain, there stood a very large rock monument. It was a three hundred meters long monument carved with two blue-colored words 'Nebula Sect,' it was magnificent. Inside the door of Nebula Sect, buildings made richly of jade were everywhere. At the center, there was a large main hall that's suspended in mid-air. There was a giant tower with all of its side glittering in gold and jade that was suspended in between the rainbow and thick clouds, it was splendid and beautiful.

The Yuan Force of Heaven and Earth was richer here than any other places in the outer world. This is a suitable place for cultivation and advancement. A simple breath could clear all the breathing pores instantly, truly comfortable.

“This is the mountain door of Nebula Sect? The aura here is as expected, very great. It deserves to be called one of the strongest five. The Qi here isn't comparable to any minor powers.”

“Nebula Sect, I have come. I have finally stepped into the big door of Nebula Sect. From now on, I'm an inner sect disciple of Nebula Sect. It won't take long for me to make a breakthrough in my advancement, then I will become a Combat Emperor and a core disciple.”

“I'm already impatient to change into the uniform of Nebula

Sect's.”

.....

The new disciples who were as new as Jiang Chen were standing outside the mountain door, sighing with impressed feeling.

# Chapter 631 - Chief Steward Cong Zhong Sheng

---

Every newly recruited disciple was excited. On the other hand, the old disciples were carrying haughtiness that couldn't be hidden on their faces. It was their greatest honour to be able to cultivate under such an influential sect.

“Brother Jiang, we'll go inside now. According to the rule, they will find you a room to stay first. They will only bring you to the Brilliant Mirror tomorrow morning. Once you have passed through the mirror smoothly, you will become a true disciple of Nebula Sect.”

Lan Yi said.

Jiang Chen nodded and followed her into Nebula Sect. They were all inner sect disciples who were high rank Combat Kings. They flew into the sect over the mountain door without anyone stopping them, especially those geniuses on the Earth ranking. Their status now in the sect was respectable, even more respected than some elders. They even have to accommodate these kind of haughty geniuses, whose attitudes were worse than the outer sect disciples.

Regardless of where the place was, geniuses were the most valuable individuals that the elders sought after. The elders would initiate building a good relationship with those geniuses on the Earth ranking. The element that attracted them the most was the genius's potential talent. They strongly believed that these young geniuses would surpass their level one day and thus, surpassing their social status. At that time, they would be able to obtain more

benefits from them as their previous master.

In the sect, there was a fat elder. He was currently wearing the uniform for elders, he looked roughly sixty years old and was a Ninth Grade Combat King. He looked very energetic, his eyes were rolling constantly from left to right. Obviously, it showed that he was a person who planned things secretly.

“His name is called Chang Yong. He is a routine elder who handles day-to-day business outside the sect. He will arrange the accommodation for you guys and keep that jade plates of yours. After you pass the Brilliant Mirror, you will all be given another identity jade plate.”

Lan Yi explained. Most of the newly-recruited disciples nodded. They were not intimidated by Elder Chang Yong as he was merely a powerless elder, even his grade wasn't higher than them which made him insignificant to them.

“In the entire inner sect, there is only one routine elder?”

Big Yellow asked curiously.

“Of course not. There will be three chief stewards of the inner sect that will attend tomorrow. Of all the arrangements we have, you are the only batch of new disciples who are required to pass the expedition in Huang Ling Desert before coming here. Tomorrow will be the official day of scanning of the Brilliant Mirror. It should have been held after the required period of completing the trial which is in ten days' time. But, you and sister

Zuo's presence shortened the period of completion drastically. It will create a big shock that will attract a lot of high ranks."

Lan Yi said to Jiang Chen.

"I'm an old fellow named Chang Yong, and also the routine elder of the inner sect. My duty is to serve you all. Ladies and gentlemen, if you have any request, feel convenient and free to seek my help."

Chang Yong's face was full of smile while speaking to Jiang Chen and the rest. From his looks, he looked like a good man who was friendly and easy-going. In the sect, people like this were good to hang out with. On the other hand, Chang Yong didn't attempt to patronize the new disciples. He knew that they were all valued greatly by the sect. Each and every one of them was an outstanding genius who were already at the Ninth Grade Combat King, which made it difficult to patronize them.

There were more than ninety new disciples who came. Of course, this wasn't all of them. According to what Lan Yi said, the recruited individuals this time were at least a hundred people. Perhaps, some chose not to come because of some unsolved matters or else they should've been here already given that most of them were at the Ninth Grade Combat King realm,. This was because they all obtained the jade plates at the same time.

After Chang Yong's self-introduction, he started to distribute the accommodation to Jiang Chen and the others. The inner sect had a piece of Honourable Territory. It was a big piece of quiet and elegant land. Every compound was designed and built delicately. Any Ninth Grade Combat King was eligible to get a compound of

his own. Each of them got the same treatment. Jiang Chen got himself a compound which had two rooms in it.

In between the compounds, flowers and plants were planted and butterflies flew and dance across it. It gave people a refreshing feeling. They could also feel the thick Yuan Force on the land.

“Xiao Er, I thought you have already gotten your own compound?”

Big Yellow looked at Zuo Ling Er and said.

“I choose to stay with my big brother. Why? Are you dissatisfied?”

Zuo Ling Er readied her fists at Big Yellow, preparing to punch his face once he confirmed his dissatisfaction.

.....

The event that happened in Huang Ling Desert was spread rapidly all over Nebula Sect. It came from the inner sect to outer sect, and then to core sect compound. Now, everyone knew the insane talent that Jiang Chen possessed. Not only had he killed all the devil leaders, he had also defeated the number one genius, Hu Song, and chopped off one of his arm. At this moment, the atmosphere in the sect was filled with tension and excitement. The elders and the core disciples, outer sect, and inner sect were all discussing about the matter.

“That Jiang Chen is really powerful. I heard it from my brothers. He is definitely a reincarnation of some heaven defying genius. He led Lan Yi and the rest to exterminate the devils, and killed them all in one night. It was supposed to take ten days to complete the task, but it was done immediately. Many of our brothers have obtained many benefits while fighting along with him. Their praise for him was never ending. Another scary part was that he defeated the number one on the Earth ranking, Hu Song, at his current grade. He’s truly defying the heavens...”

“Yeah, I heard that Hu Song used the Taboo Pill to push his grade to the Second Grade Combat Emperor. Unexpectedly, Jiang Chen also instantly advanced one grade to Ninth Grade Combat King, beating Hu Song on the spot! It was very awesome!”

“There is another fascinating story. I heard that sister Zuo is merely twelve years old and she is already a Ninth Grade Combat King. Mother of god! A twelve-year-old Ninth Grade Combat King? Is she even human? I don’t think we can find a genius like that in the entire domain. Her grade isn’t the scary part though. Even the third genius, Guo Xudong and the fifth genius, Zhang Da were defeated by her. They were beaten up by her “Barbarous Eighteen Punches” until their faces became unrecognizable. Very scary...”

.....

Discussions about Jiang Chen and Zuo Ling Er could be heard everywhere. The emergence of these two legendary beings made everyone want to find out more about them. Those who came back from the desert didn’t stop singing praises for Jiang Chen and Zuo

Ling Er. Thus, intensifying the subject.

“This is defying the heaven to hear about a twelve-year-old Ninth Grade Combat King. This prodigy will be deemed a great benefit to the sect. I’m afraid those elders will fight for the opportunity to keep her as their own disciple.”

“We’ll wait and see. The crowd for tomorrow’s mirror checking will be big. Many will come to see these two monstrous talents. But, that Jiang Chen is very audacious. He has cut off an arm of the first genius even before entering the sect, isn’t he causing trouble to himself? I heard that Hu Song has a good relationship with one of the chief stewards. He has been bribed by Hu Song before. He will probably make things difficult for Jiang Chen.”

“That’s right. Although the newbie is a genius, being overly proud will bring bad effects.”

.....

A lot of people were still discussing about Jiang Chen and Zuo Ling Er. In fact, it was the only subject of all their conversations. They commented that Jiang Chen’s action of cutting off Hu Song’s arm was truly tyrannical but it was also deemed rashly audacious.

Early in the morning the next day, a large crowd of people had gathered in the martial-art arena. Besides the inner sect disciples, many core disciples and elders had also come. Two Ninth Grade Combat Kings were the thing that attracted them to come. It was Jiang Chen and Zuo Ling Er that they wanted to see.



Jiang Chen stood at the front of ninety people, beside him was Zuo Ling Er. Their previous battles had attracted a lot of fans.

“Quickly, look. They are Jiang Chen and Zuo Ling Er. They are so young.”

“Ya, a little girl who is still twelve years old is already a Ninth Grade Combat King. I have no idea whose family’s genius she is.”

“Look, over there, a lot of core disciples have come. I think it won’t take long for these two monstrous geniuses to enter the core sect. I heard that they hold the devils souls of the devil leaders which can be used to exchange for Emperor Pills. They will then reach the Combat Emperor realm and become a core disciple.”

.....

Talks and arguments were everywhere. Jiang Chen and Zuo Ling Er really attracted a lot of people’s attention. Not far away from them was a big mirror illuminating a golden light, it was three meters tall. On top of it were the patterns of dragons and phoenixes that were carved on it and there were symbols of talisman rippling over the mirror. This was no doubt the Brilliant Mirror, a treasure of Nebula Sect. However, the reflection it produced didn’t look very different from ordinary mirrors.

“This is the Brilliant Mirror? Once I pass this mirror, I will become an official disciple of Nebula Sect. Haha...”

Many new disciples were full of excitement while thinking that they were going to wear the uniforms of Nebula Sect proudly like the others.

\*Whoosh\* \*Whoosh\* \*Whoosh\*

At this time, seven to eight silhouettes appeared on the battle platform. These people were wearing grey colored uniform of the elders. Their grades were frightening, they were all Combat Emperors. The first among them had reached Third Grade Combat Emperor. The other two beside him were at the peak of Second Grade Combat Emperor, they're very formidable.

The crowd became silent the moment these people arrived. When the inner sect disciples saw the silhouettes, especially the first three, their eyes were filled with deep respect and fear. These people were the inner sect elders. The first three were no doubt the inner sect's three chief stewards.

One of the chief steward was called Cong Zhong Sheng, he looked fifty or sixty years old with a sturdy physique as strong as a tiger's and bear's body. His face and Qi were intimidating. He scanned Jiang Chen and the rest intently, and then shifted his gaze back to Jiang Chen. Then, his eyes sparkled with two streams of cold light.

“This man is called Cong Zhong Sheng, he was in charge of every matter in the inner sect. He has a fine connection with Hu Song. You gotta be careful.”

Yu Wei's voice sounded inside Jiang Chen's ears, reminding him of the danger.

...

# Chapter 632 - Why Don't You Two Fight For One Round?

---

Jiang Chen's sense was already sharp, he didn't need Yu Wei's reminder whatsoever. He could feel an opposing aura coming from Cong Zhong Sheng's eyes. He made a cold humph in his heart. If this chief steward wouldn't offend him, he would also not do anything. If he went against Jiang Chen, he was only causing himself troubles.

Cong Zhong Sheng made a slight cough and scanned the surroundings again. Then, he spoke to Jiang Chen and the rest with an audible and clear voice:

“I'm a Chief Steward of the Inner Sect, Cong Zhong Sheng. I welcome all geniuses' arrival in our sect. Before you pass the Brilliant Mirror, none of you are officially recognized as our disciples even though you are a genius out of a thousand geniuses. I will remind you with solemnity, that anyone of you who has an ulterior motive, leave Nebula Sect now. The sect guarantees that we won't hurt you for that. But once you are found out by the Brilliant Mirror, the repercussion will be unimaginable.”

His words created a wave of tension in the crowd. Jiang Chen frowned, his gaze fell onto that large mirror. He couldn't back away now, he could only go head on, hoping that using the Illusion Heart Sutra would disrupt the scanning.

“Good. Since none of you left, that means you all came here with a righteous heart. Now is the official checking of the mirror, you will walk past the mirror one by one.”

Cong Zhong Sheng said loudly.

The checking of the Brilliant Mirror began. At this moment, a few powerful silhouettes appeared. They were all wearing the uniform of the elders. Their Qi were stronger than Cong Zhong Sheng. There were a total of eight of them. They came to the battle arena and appeared in front of Jiang Chen and Zuo Ling Er without even giving a glance to Cong Zhong Sheng.

Jiang Chen's gaze fell upon these eight newly arrived men. There were seven male and one female. Every one of them was a Ninth Grade Combat Emperor. They had reached the peak of their grade that was just a small step away from the Minor Saint.

Although Jiang Chen didn't know why these people appeared all of a sudden, he was smart enough to tell their status in Nebula Sect.

“They are the eight great elders. They appeared together today! I have never thought that they would take notice of the new disciples.”

“The eight great elders of Nebula Sect. They are Ninth Grade Combat Emperors. Besides the Grand Elder that is of a Minor Saint Grade, these eight great elders are the most respected people in the sect. They're hardly seen in the sect. Nobody thought that they will attend the discipleship today.”

“They must be here because of Jiang Chen and Zuo Ling Er, only

geniuses like them can attract them.”

.....

The people recognized the newcomers. Everyone was filled with anxiety and nervousness, while their eyes were filled with great respect and fear. They were the eight highly respected great elders and they just appeared suddenly before the checking of the mirror started.

On the battle platform, the facial expression of the outer sect elders who stood beside Cong Zhong Sheng changed. They quickly jumped down and came before the eight Great Elders then bowed.

“Great Elders!”

The great elders were the symbol of respect in Nebula Sect. But, there weren't only eight of them who were at the Ninth Grade Combat Emperors. There were still some Ninth Grade Combat Emperors in the core sect. But if those elders were to compare with these eight, they were weaker because these eight were all very near to Minor Saint Grade.

In Nebula Sect, the master and Grand elder would not appear during normal days. Most of the matters were attended by the eight great elders. Cong Zhong Sheng was a mere inner sect chief steward, thus he didn't dare to offend them.

None of the eight great elders glanced at Cong Zhong Sheng,

their eyes were fixed on Zuo Ling Er. Apparently, they had heard about this little monstrous genius. This was the reason they came, they came for Jiang Chen and Zuo Ling Er. Jiang Chen wasn't as obvious judging from his appearance but Zuo Ling Er was easy to recognize as there was only one twelve-year-old girl on the scene.

“Little girl, I guess you are Zuo Ling Er, right?”

The female elder faced Zuo Ling Er with a smile. She seemed to be only thirty plus years old, her charm was overwhelming. Her loose robe couldn't hide her elegant and nimble body. She was really pretty and attractive. Besides having the feminine beauty, the charm of heroine and maturity was certainly a deadly weapon to a lot of men.

Of course, thirty years old was only an estimate based on her appearance. Her age shouldn't be asked. She was called Hua Gu Yi, the only female great elder among the eight.

“Uh...”

Zuo Ling Er nodded with difficulty.

Hu Gu Yi moved her hand fast to catch Zuo Ling Er's arm and pulled her in front of her chest. Both of her hands were gently squeezing and pinching Zuo Ling Er's face as if she was a clay doll. Her mouth didn't forget to praise the little girl.

“Very cute little girl. You will play an important role in

dominating the states and cities when you grow up, just like me. I'm fond of you from the moment I see you."

Hua Gu Yi looked like a noble and prestigious great elder before speaking. But after she spoke, most of their expectation for her drastically fell. Jiang Chen felt this Hua Gu Yi was just the bigger version of Zuo Ling Er.

"Hua Gu Yi, you can't steal other people's chance like that. We have talked about this. This girl should follow me, Feng Yun Wu."

"Get lost, have you no shame? Who agreed that she's yours? We have decided that she's mine, Feng Yun San. You all stand aside. Little girl, become my disciple. Under my careful and experienced guidance, you will become the first ever remarkable talent that ever existed in the domain sooner or later."

"What're you two thinking? This girl is found by me, there's no connection with you all."

.....

All of the great elders surrounded Zuo Ling Er. All of their faces were flushed with anger and frustration, not caring even the slightest bit about their image. One of Hua Gu Yi's hand was grabbing Zuo Ling Er's arm, afraid that she would be taken away by the other great elders.

The incident made everyone on the scene speechless. Looking at



these eight respected great elders' actions dazzled their eyes momentarily. All of them were filled with envy and admiration for Zuo Ling Er, even the core sect disciples felt the same way.

“Ai! Zuo Ling Er is really lucky. All the great elders are fighting against one another just to accept her as their personal disciple. This is the first time in the history of Nebula Sect!”

“That’s obvious. A twelve-year-old Ninth Grade Combat King, who among you has seen such a genius before? In the entire domain, I’m afraid there’s only one. I think only the large clans on the Pure Land in Divine Continent have such geniuses. Now she has arrived in our sect, it makes sense for the great elders to fight for her. I have said that sister Zuo will be accepted as a personal disciple by one of the elders. But now, Huo Gu Yi and Feng Yun brothers have come to grab this little girl’s discipleship.”

“Who do you think will get Zuo Ling Er’s as their personal disciple? Although Elder Hua Gu Yi is a female, she is very tyrannical. I think there is an eighty percent chance that the seven Feng Yun brothers will lose.”

.....

Initially, it was supposed to be the checking of the mirror, but it had been interrupted by the eight great elders all of a sudden. They had come to recruit an apprentice even before the checking started. This was a very fortunate event.

“Feng Yun brothers, you all dare to snatch my apprentice away

from me? Do you believe that I will not smash your big heads?”

Hua Gu Yi pointed at the other seven great elders and cursed.

“Hua Gu Yi, don’t be too arrogant. Any genius will be turned useless given your attitude of a vixen.”

“That’s right, the girl will be incapacitated. One Hua Gu Yi is enough to drive the entire sect mad, we can’t allow the appearance of another Hua Gu Yi.”

“Little girl, see how kind and friendly I look. If you follow me as an apprentice, I will treat you as my granddaughter.”

.....

It wasn’t the seven Feng Yun Elders’ attitude to give up something valuable easily. Cong Zhong Sheng stood beside, staring at the eight great elders who were still disputing with a speechless expression. Normally, they were the most united group in Nebula Sect, but today they had turned against each other, no one tolerated anyone.

“Great elders, I think you all will never come to a conclusion if you continue to be like this. Why not let Zuo Ling Er choose the elder she wants to follow.”

Jiang Chen couldn’t take it anymore and finally spoke.

“Who the hell are you? There isn’t room for you to speak!”

Feng Yun Six glared at Jiang Chen.

“I’m Jiang Chen.”

Jiang Chen cupped his fists.

\*Swoosh!\*

As Jiang Chen’s voice dropped, three great elders surrounded him.

“You are the insane Jiang Chen? Excellent, you seem very young to have such a tremendous pool of potential power. Become my apprentice, and I will accept you as my personal disciple. You have to know that there were a lot of disciples who wanted to be my personal disciple.”

“You should choose me as your master. Jiang Chen is good-looking, which is like me when I was young. I charmed everyone wherever I went. He definitely can’t choose ugly masters like you all.”

“Get off! I’m the one who noticed him first.”

.....

Chaotic! The whole scene had become messy. Jiang Chen was surrounded because of two words. Obviously, he and Zuo Ling Er had already been targeted by the eight great elders. Now they wanted them to be their apprentices. Jiang Chen, as the once Greatest Saint, wouldn't and couldn't worship these old people as his masters, it would just put him to endless shame.

“I will take the little girl away now, see if you dare to stop me.”

Huo Yi Gu was very determined.

“Huo Yi Gu, don't be unreasonable.”

“When was the last time I was reasonable?”

.....

Another wave of dispute arose.

Zuo Ling Er was standing there. Her big watery eyes were watching the great elders' every actions and movements, and suddenly she thought of something.

“My respected great elders, I see you all aren't getting anywhere from this dispute, I have an idea.”

“Speak quickly little girl.”

Hua Gu Yi said.

At this very moment, everyone stared at Zuo Ling Er, wondering what her idea was.

“Why not you all just have a round of battle? I will choose whoever is the strongest.”

Zuo Ling Er said in solemn tone.

Puff...A lot of people almost coughed out their saliva. They had never expected that this little girl would come up with such a bold idea, truly an audacious little girl. She was bold enough to suggest this idea to the busy great elders in front of her. However, they had witnessed her means of killing during their expedition in Huang Ling Desert. This little girl was also a little twisted devil, she would certainly become the second Hua Gu Yi when she grew up.

...

## Chapter 633 - The Scary Brilliant Mirror

---

All the great elders were stunned. Their eyes locked on Zuo Ling Er while thinking how bold this little girl was. This little girl wanted them to have a battle among each other.

“Fine. The little girl suits my style. Seven brothers of Feng Yun, let’s have a fight. I’ll see who dares to snatch my apprentice away.”

Huo Gu Yi rolled up her sleeves and was ready to fight.

“Hua Gu Yi, you are a female. Can you not be so barbarous? You always use violence to settle matters. This will greatly depreciate your nobility. Don’t forget your own identity and there are so many disciples looking at us.”

Feng Yun San said. Jiang Chen had seen through their expressions. Hua Gu Yi was a strong opponent, and a tyrannical one at that. Even if she was on the same level with the other seven great elders, her aggressiveness was dreadful to them. They had already shown some kind of fear even before the battle began.

“It isn’t my style to be soft to you guys. Do you fight or not? If not, I will bring this girl with me.”

Hua Gu Yi was very overbearing. This shocked most of the disciples. They had heard before that Elder Hua Gu Yi was an extremist. Some called her a female robber, and very autocratic. Many elders were afraid of her and walked farther away when they saw her.

It was better to know the person personally than knowing them through gossips. Her appearance today explained everything. She was more unreasonable than they had heard. Apparently, the other elders had undoubtedly been given a lot of headaches by her petty annoyance.

“Great elders. My honourable Great Elders!”

Cong Zhong Sheng reacted immediately when he saw the eight great elders were going to start a big battle.

“What are you doing? You dare to stop me from accepting my apprentice? Do you believe I won’t slap you until half of your body is paralyzed?”

Hua Gu Yi eyes glared at him. Cong Zhong Sheng’s body exuded cold sweat. He couldn’t take her words as a joke. She wasn’t kidding. If he had really offended this lady, he was afraid her slap wouldn’t only cause him to paralyze that simply.

“My apologies. But my great elders, the checking hasn’t even started yet. Shouldn’t we wait for the checking to end before the discipleship starts? Since they haven’t passed through the Brilliant Mirror, they aren’t considered as official disciples yet.”

Cong Zhong Sheng said with caution. He was afraid that a little increase of tone would spite any of the great elders, the repercussion of that would bring unimaginable dreadful damages to him.

“Ah, the checking hasn’t started yet. But I believe this little girl won’t have any problem with that. Of course, the rules of Nebula Sect have to be obeyed. Every new disciple has to pass that Brilliant Mirror. It was all your fault, Feng Yun brothers! I almost broke the law of Nebula Sect.”

Hua Gu Yi locked her eyes with theirs.

“Hua Gu Yi, you are unreasonably accusing us.”

The seven brothers of Feng Yun were infuriated until they felt their noses were about to be crooked. It was all started by her, but now she accused them of her own fault, putting all the blame of almost breaking the rules on them. Why would such people exist in the world?

“What’s the matter...You’re not convinced? Then we’ll fight.”

Hua Gu Yi’s one hand was at her waist.

“The seven of you come with me. Let them begin the checking, we’ll go somewhere to find out who will take her as their disciple.”

Hua Gu Yi and the seven Feng Yun brothers rose up to the sky while arguing as they didn’t want to delay the checking. They were just arguing endlessly and haven’t started a battle yet.



Cong Zhong Sheng finally could heave a sigh of relief and got back up to the battle platform. If the eight great elders continued to argue, he was afraid that the checking would be postponed to the next day. At this time, the elders of the inner sect had changed their impression of Jiang Chen and Zuo Ling Er. The great elders almost had a fight because of the two of them. If there wasn't any accident, the two of them would become personal disciples of the great elders. The status of the personal disciples was a notch higher than the core disciples, it wasn't comparable at all.

Even Cong Zhong Sheng changed his thoughts. Initially he wanted to avenge Hu Song on Jiang Chen, but he was afraid the situation wouldn't allow him to do that anymore. If Jiang Chen really became a personal disciple of the great elders, the only thing he could do was to worship him.

“Alright, the checking of the mirror will begin. We'll start from Zuo Ling Er.”

Cong Zhong Sheng looked at Zuo Ling Er and smiled. This girl was someone not to be trifled with. If today's event continued with its pace, this girl would be a personal disciple of Hua Gu Yi. Whoever offended her would only get one thing, exiled.

Zuo Ling Er smiled at Jiang Chen.

“Big brother, I will go first.”

“Good luck Ling Er!”

Jiang Chen tried to give her a little encouragement.

She bounced to the front of the mirror. According to the rule, every individual must stay under the mirror for a minute. Zuo Ling Er was standing below the Brilliant Mirror calmly. The mirror was illuminating dazzling light, basking Zuo Ling Er's body in its radiance, and turning her into a very cute little devil. Of course, those who had witnessed her barbarous techniques wouldn't fall for such adorable features.

A minute passed by quickly. There wasn't any change on the Brilliant Mirror. Zuo Ling Er walked past the mirror happily. She had walked past it without any trouble. She's now an official disciple of Nebula Sect.

The moment Zuo Ling Er passed the checking of the mirror, layers of golden shields were formed, covering the eight great elders. No one knew what happened to the great elders, but Jiang Chen could see it clearly. When he saw their actions, he almost gave out a laugh.

The great elders were playing the 'rock, paper, scissors' game! The respected Ninth Grade Combat Emperors played such a childish game to get Zuo Ling Er as their apprentice. Fortunately, they used the golden shield to cover up what they were doing, or else it would be damn shameless.

When Cong Zhong Sheng was about to call the second disciple to walk to the Brilliant Mirror, all the great elders landed on the arena. These elders really spared no effort in getting a personal disciple. Hua Gu Yi laughed and came beside Zuo Ling Er.

“Little girl, from now on, you are my disciple. Quickly, acknowledge me as your master.”

Hua Gu Yi was full of delight and was really pleased with herself.

“Don’t play that game with me next time or you will just lose completely.”

Zuo Ling Er didn’t hesitate and pay her homage to Hua Gu Yi in a polite manner, and said loudly. “Master!”

“Very obedient! Let’s go, master will bring you to Summit Gu Yi. From now onwards, I...will be your master. If anyone dares to bully you, I’ll shred the person apart without mercy.”

Hua Gu Yi sounded really tyrannical in her statement. Everyone turned their gaze to Zuo Ling Er, admiring her. This girl would have no problems developing her talents being an apprentice of Hua Gu Yi. No one would dare to touch her.

“Master, big brother hasn’t passed the checking. I want to wait for him to finish before we leave.”

Zuo Ling Er said.

“Okay, we’ll do that.”

Hua Gu Yi pulled Zuo Ling Er to her side and she deliberately stood beside the seven Feng Yun brothers. Seeing their annoyed red faces made her pleased.

“Hua Gu Yi, let me be clear on this. You have already kept the little girl. You can’t snatch Jiang Chen away from me this time.”

Feng Yun Er said with anger. In the ‘rock, paper, scissors’ game, he had been defeated at the very first round, it was very shameful.

“Have I ever broken my promises before?”

Hua Gu Yi showed a reasonable face.

“Next one, Liang Bo.”

Cong Zhong Sheng called from the jade plates he randomly picked.

A young man seemed to be only twenty years old walked out. He took a deep breath and walked to the Brilliant Mirror and passed it without any incident. It was a success. Following that, Cong Zhong Sheng called out seven to eight disciples and all of them also passed the Brilliant Mirror successfully. The main element the mirror wanted to find out was the degree of loyalty a person had, and to check whether the person had any ulterior motives. This was because the five major powers weren’t good friends with each other, the sect was afraid that there would be spies from the other sect.

“Xu Mao.”

Cong Zhong Sheng called out another person's name. That person was dressed in black. He gave people a gloomy feeling. When he approached the mirror, his expression became uneasy. Jiang Chen was paying attention to him. Through his senses, he could feel that this guy wasn't as calm as the others. It seemed he was also like himself, entering the sect with ulterior motives.

Two beams of light was released from the black-clothed guy. He strode to the mirror and stood under it. He kept all his Qi and closed his eyes, trying to get himself calm. Unfortunately, the Brilliant Mirror was too powerful. The moment he came under the mirror, it trembled intensely. A line of golden light was shot out from the mirror like a sharp sword, a 'Pu Chi' sound was heard and then the light pierced through the man's body.

\*Argh!\*

The black-clothed man shouted in pain. His body exploded and turn into a fog of blood. He died instantly.

\*Wah!\*

The rest of the disciples made a 'Wah' sound simultaneously. Each one of them looked terrified. The mirror was too scary. It was only a tool of projection but it could be so powerful and deadly. A Ninth Grade Combat King didn't even have the chance to defend himself. He was instantly killed by it. It was certain that the mirror

would kill anyone who came in the sect with an evil intention, the intention to hurt Nebula Sect.

“Humph! I’ve reminded you all. If you don’t have a righteous intention, it is impossible to walk past it and this will be the conclusion.”

Cong Zhong Sheng made a cold humph, his gaze was like a sharp blade as he scanned the remaining crowd.

Jiang Chen squinted his eyes, his face turned slightly ugly. The Brilliant Mirror was a specially designed Saint Weapon, it’s very deadly. His heart started to pound, wondering if his Illusion Heart Sutra was enough to disrupt the mirror. If he couldn’t, the conclusion would be lethal. Even if he survived the attack from the mirror, he wouldn’t be able to get away from the sect.

“Cong Zhong Sheng, please cut the queue, let Jiang Chen go through the checking first. I don’t have a whole day to spend here.”

One of the Feng Yun brothers said.

“Yes, Great Elder.”

Cong Zhong Sheng didn’t delay his response. He quickly took out Jiang Chen’s jade plate and said.

“Jiang Cheng, the next is you, come forward. The great elders are

waiting for you.”

Jiang Chen seemed calm on the surface while making every step towards the Brilliant Mirror.

# Chapter 634 - The Dragon's Roar In His Deepest Soul

---

Jiang Chen walked out from the crowd. A mixture of welcoming and envious gazes were put on him. Once he walk past the mirror, the seven brothers would fly to him immediately to accept him as their personal disciple. As for whether Jiang Chen could pass the checking or not, it was something everybody didn't consider of. To most of the people, the checking of the mirror was merely a procedure that they had to go through to become an official disciple. Who wouldn't feel proud to be one of the disciples of Nebula Sect? Who wouldn't feel lucky to be able to cultivate and advance in such perfect place? Thus, it was very rare for the mirror to exterminate the newly-recruited disciples, it was almost none.

“Good. Look at this guy. His forehead is larger than most of us, one look on his face can determine that he is an extraordinary genius.”

“Agree. Although he is a bit older than Zuo Ling Er, he didn't seem to be more than twenty years old. I heard that he defeated Hu Song who took the Taboo Pill to become the Second Grade Combat Emperor by his power of Ninth Grade Combat King. He has taken the first place on the Earth ranking even before entering the sect. This is the first time I encountered this kind of event given my experience.”

“Hump! Hua Gu Yi don't be ignorant because you have taken that little girl as your apprentice. This Jiang Chen is mine. I will make him better than the little girl.”



“Who permits that he is yours? Are you ignoring six of our brothers’ existence?”

.....

Before Jiang Chen entered the Brilliant Mirror, the seven Feng Yun brothers started their argument again. Zuo Ling Er, a twelve-year-old Ninth Grade Combat King, was the first in their list, Jiang Chen was the number two. Now that Zuo Ling Er was taken away by the Huo Gu Yi, Jiang Chen automatically became the number one candidate.

Jiang Chen didn’t have the extra effort to care about those seniors. He was nervous, it was the most anxious moment he ever had in his entire life. Even if he was once the Greatest Saint, his heart still pounded when facing the Brilliant Mirror.

This was not a war, it was betting a life.

“Go big brother!”

Zuo Ling Er, standing beside Huo Gu Yi, cupped her fists at Jiang Chen. Not even his little sister knew about her big brother’s ulterior motive to enter the sect. He had been planning this since he fought the battle for the Zuo family. His plan was about to succeed if it wasn’t for the mirror.

“I have to risk it. I can’t be backing away now.”

Jiang Chen's eyes shone with cold light, stepping closer to the mirror. The moment he entered and stood under the mirror, he instantly casted the Illumination Heart Sutra. Shapeless illusions was released from his body, wrapping the Brilliant Mirror entirely.

His method was concealed perfectly, no one would be able to see his movement unless they were in the illusion with him. Even Huo Gu Yi and the Feng Yun brothers couldn't detect it.

\*Swoosh!\*

The Brilliant Mirror shined with brilliant golden light, basking Jiang Chen with its radiance. But the light wasn't calm, it was trembling intensely. However, no signs of attack was seen, it was just as if something uncommon was happening.

"What happened? Why do I see an aggressive movement of the light? Could it be brother Jiang is in trouble?"

"I don't think so. If there is, the mirror should have already launched its attack like how it killed the guy earlier. Although there is some changes on the light, brother Jiang is still standing safely there. Without a doubt, this is a special case. For so long it has been checking on new disciples, it showed only two scenarios: silent and calm light; and violent and deadly light."

"Let's see. As long as brother Jiang can hold it for a minute, he will be fine."

.....

Many people felt the same way as they did. The Feng Yun brothers' facial expression also change, their views on Jiang Chen changed. There had never been such a case that happened in the past. If he had no problems, the Brilliant Mirror wouldn't have any aggressive actions. If he had, the mirror would attack him instantly.

“This young man has ulterior motives?”

Cong Zhong Sheng was focusing on Jiang Chen. Seeing the current scene delighted him. It seemed like he had the chance to avenge Hu Song on him.

Currently, Jiang Chen had immersed himself into the Illusion Heart Sutra, he didn't dare to relax. He could feel the mirror attacking his line of defence and entering his deeper soul, but it was disrupted by the Shapeless Illusions. He would get pass this as long as he hold it for a minute.

A minute passed by. It was about to be over when a deafening roar rumbled from the Brilliant Mirror, sending powerful force that trembled everyone.

\*Weng...\* \*Weng...\*

The huge light was shining brilliantly like the radiance directly

from the hot sun. Countless light was shot out and then fell on Jiang Chen's body. The trembling of the large mirror intensified, piercing sound like the wails created from savage beasts was heard. It shook the whole martial art arena.

“What happened? Why did the mirror react strangely?”

“Jiang Chen must have problems, he has something hidden.”

The great elders' faces turned ugly, they had no idea what to do with such a situation. The Brilliant Mirror had been a valuable treasure of Nebula Sect, nothing as strange as this ever happened in the past. No one knew what had happened to it but there was one thing that was crystal clear. Jiang Chen had some agendas hidden deep inside him, if not, the Brilliant Mirror wouldn't tremble this intensely.

\*Ka Ca\*

A clear 'Ka Ca' sound was heard. The Shapeless Illusions was broken. The Brilliant Mirror was a Saint Weapon. Even if Jiang Chen was a powerful being, there was no way a Ninth Grade Combat King could defend himself against the attack of a Saint Weapon even if it was only a mirror.

“Dammit, not good.”

Jiang Chen's expression changed. His heart sank into the bottom of the valley. He never thought that the mirror would be this

scary. Not even his Shapeless Illusion could hold it, and it was destroyed instantly.

The moment his illusions were destroyed. The light that were released from the mirror intruded into Jiang Chen's body like divine vipers. It drilled deep into his very soul. A wave of Qi rose dramatically inside of Jiang Chen's heart, it was the threat of death. He had felt it before. The attack launched by the Saint Weapon was inescapable even if he used all his cultivated art. He was now trapped by the mirror, unable to move and absolutely defenceless.

At this time, Jiang Chen's Dragon Transformation Art was activated. Its speed was a hundred times faster than the usual speed of activation. The speed could blast Jiang Chen's body.

\*Roar...\*

A long rumbling of a dragon's roar suddenly occurred from the deepest of Jiang Chen's soul. It came from his Dragon Transformation Art. It was a mere spell, but it had summoned the dragon's roar. It was only heard by him, the outside world couldn't hear it.

It was ancient, hoarse, and deep as if the roar came from an ancient dragon that existed a few centuries ago. It shook him so intensely until he lost all his senses, and then he fainted.

\*Hong\*

It disappeared after merely one roar, but the Brilliant Mirror broke, turning into many smaller pieces and fell to the ground. Jiang Chen's forehead was covered with sweat. He had awoken the moment after the shock. Somehow, he saw the shadow of a dragon drifting in the deepest of his soul.

The length of the dragon was inestimable, he couldn't see its end. Its body was radiating with bloody light. It was frightening, especially its eyes. It seemed like an ancient creature that had lived a long time ago until now. It was the ancestor of dragons. He could see its figure during the dragon roar. However, it disappeared immediately along with the dragon's roar. Nevertheless, he wouldn't forget the ancient dragon eyes, it suppressed any thoughts of blasphemy. But it was extremely familiar to Jiang Chen, he felt a sense of warm connection as if his blood was connected with the dragon. At that moment, he felt like he had become an incarnation of the dragon, soaring high into the sky.

He was looking at the broken pieces of Brilliant Mirror on the floor. This wasn't favourable to him. Even if he wanted explain, he couldn't do it.

The entire martial art arena became extremely silent before a wave of curiosity burst from the crowd.

“What happened? What actually happened? Why did the Brilliant Mirror broke suddenly? It has been placed there for many years, this is the first time that it is destroyed. What kind of monstrous genius is that guy?”

“There is something wrong. Jiang Chen must have something.

The Brilliant Mirror is broken because of him. That guy isn't a simple one."

"However, if Jiang Chen has something not righteous, the Brilliant Mirror would have attacked him. But, he's still fine and the Brilliant Mirror is destroyed instead. Could it be that Jiang Chen has ways of destroying the mirror?"

"Not possible. Even if he is capable to do so, he won't be so foolish to do it unless he don't want to live anymore. Plus, the mirror is a Saint Weapon! Although the light is only a projection from the mirror, it is still one. Any attack launched by it isn't defendable by a Combat King like him. There's also the fact that he didn't even attempt to attack."

.....

This had never happened in the history of Nebula Sect. This was the first time the Brilliant Mirror broke into pieces. No one could explain what had happened. They all concluded that Jiang Chen had some hidden ulterior motives. If he hadn't, the mirror wouldn't break.

"Capture him!"

Cong Zhong Sheng barked the order. A group of elders of the inner sect dashed to Jiang Chen's direction. But there were something faster than them, it was the Feng Yun brothers. They had surrounded him in the centre. Their eyes' expression changed completely. Their intention of keeping Jiang Chen as their

personal disciple changed to hostility.

“Kid, tell me. Who are you? What’s your purpose to come Nebula Sect?”

Feng Yun Yi said with a violent and cold tone. The seven of them were releasing murderous auras, preparing to beat Jiang Chen to death if he said something threatening.

“Big brother!”

Zuo Ling Er shouted and wanted to rush over but she was stopped by Hua Gu Yi.

“You big brother has some troubles. Ling Er, you shouldn’t go near him anymore.”

Zuo Ling Er had passed through the checking of the Brilliant Mirror, it proved that she hadn’t any troubles with loyalty, but Jiang Chen had.

Outside the martial art arena, big yellow was infuriated. “Damn you kid! I have told you to take things easily. You see, you are going to be finished.”

...



# Chapter 635 - Nebula Kidd

---

The atmosphere became tensed. Lan Yi and Yu Wei didn't expect such an incident to happen. Many disciples that fought along with Jiang Chen in Huang Ling Desert were struck with mixed feelings. They want to follow him after he had become a disciple of Nebula Sect.

From what was happening now, it was virtually impossible. Even the seven Feng Yun brothers had changed their mind. They wanted to kill this potential threat that had intruded their lands. It seemed Jiang Cheng's fate wasn't going to be any better.

Jiang Chen's gaze was gloomy. That roar of dragon had just saved his life. It reminded him that there were more secrets about the Dragon Transformation Art that were still veiled. It began the moment he started to cultivate the skill. Every metamorphosis would bring him a true dragon combat technique. Last time when he acquired the Five Elements Combat Dragon Seal, he obtained a trace of dragon blood from the Dragon Transformation Art, which had fully transformed his body. In a life and death situation like today, he was saved by the ancient dragon's roar that shattered the Brilliant Mirror. He had no idea how many secrets did the Dragon Transformation Art had.

Jiang Chen looked up and met the eyes of the Feng Yun's brothers, their eyes sparkled as sharp as the light of a sword. It seemed it would be impossible for him to leave.

“Kid, quickly. Who the hell are you?”

Feng Yun San said coldly.

As Jiang Chen was about to speak, a strong Qi like an intangible ocean covered the sky above the martial art arena. The Qi was blended with a thick Saint aura. Under the aura's influence, everyone was having trouble breathing. It made them wanted to worship the being that had just appeared for mercy.

After a while, a peaceful cloud appeared overhead. It swayed and turned into a middle-aged man in blue robes. He looked about more than forty years old. His brows were pointed, his eyes were as fierce as a tiger, his face was as sharp as knife and his body was slim and tall, and most of all there was a domineering aura that was projected naturally. The saint aura that flowed out of his body showed that he was a Saint. Although he was just a Minor Saint, it was still a being that numerous people would admire and respect. He was Nebula Kidd, the master of Nebula Sect and the god of his disciples. He represented the greatest power in the sect and the law.

“He is the master. The shattering of the Brilliant Mirror has attracted the master to come. He is a supreme being with his Minor Saint Grade. This is the second time that I have seen his real face.”

“He is a legendary Saint. Such a mighty saint aura. I feel compelled to prostrate before him. I have been in the sect for so long and this is the very first time that I have the chance to see the master.”

“The master is the number one person in the sect. I heard that he is a Fourth Grade Minor Saint. His power is beyond our

imaginations. I don't think I have the chance to reach the grade of a Minor Saint in my entire life."

"Even the master is alarmed. It seems that Jiang Chen is finished this time."

"Correct. The Brilliant Mirror is destroyed. It is an unprecedented incident."

.....

Nebula Kidd's appearance caused a wave of excitement from the crowd. Many disciples were looking at their master with admiration in their eyes. He was a legend, a Fourth Grade Minor Saint. Any ordinary person could not hope to reach that realm.

"Master."

Hua Gu Yi and Feng Yun Brothers, including Cong Zhong Sheng and the inner sect elders, bowed before their master, none of them dared to neglect their master's arrival. The rest of the disciples at the back followed them, they bowed together to pay their respect to their master.

"Master, this guy has destroyed the Brilliant Mirror during the checking..."

Feng Yun Yi said, but Nebula Kidd waved his hand and interrupted him. "I'm already informed. You're called Jiang

Chen?”

Nebula Kidd’s gaze fixed intently on Jiang Chen.

“The one who brought Liang Province into chaos?”

“That’s right, that’s me.”

Jiang Chen nodded. He never thought that Nebula Kidd had heard about him before. It seemed the incident had reached many places, even Nebula Kidd knew about this.

“What? The one who initiated disaster?”

“A Combat King who initiated disaster? I have heard some news about it. No wonder he is such a monster.”

“Except those who are advancing to be a Great Saint, they will initiate a saint catastrophe in the process. The normal catastrophe that is initiated are mostly by those who possess heaven defying talents. Jiang Chen is able to do that. It proves that he has a heaven defying talent. But I have no idea what’s his purpose in coming to Nebula Sect.”

.....

Everyone was shocked. A genius that could initiate disaster was something they didn’t expect to see. His future wasn’t comparable

to anyone but the fact remained, why was he here?

Nebula Kidd didn't say a word. He waved his hand and a golden light appeared at the place where the broken pieces of the mirror lay. The pieces of Brilliant Mirror reformed and it went back to its original position in the blink of an eye.

Many people looked at it attentively. Nebula Kidd used the frame of the mirror to gather all the broken pieces and reconstructed it.

“The checking will continue. Jiang Chen, follow me.”

Nebula Kidd clawed in the air, a large magnetic force pulled Jiang Chen over. He was pulled up to the sky involuntarily. He didn't attempt to fight back. He knew very well the frightening power of a Fourth Grade Minor Saint. His Ninth Grade Combat King's power was only equivalent to ant to him.

Nebula Kidd left with lightning speed, bringing Jiang Chen along with him. After the excitement and shock the crowd had received, they couldn't calm down, especially Lan Yi and those who followed Jiang Chen in the expedition. Their hearts were praying for his safety.

The Feng Yun brothers looked at one another and sighed simultaneously before they turned and left. Their effort to recruit their personal disciple had gone in vain today. Recruiting Jiang Chen as their apprentice was impossible now. They weren't qualified to guide a heaven defying genius. As for what would happen to Jiang Chen later, it wouldn't be their concern anymore

as Nebula Kidd would take care of him. They had nothing to worry about now.

“Master, will big brother be okay?”

Zuo Ling Er looked at Huo Gu Yi, she clenched her fists tightly, while her eyes were full of concern.

“That will depend on his fate. Ling Er, there isn’t anything we can do here. Master will bring you to Summit Gu Yi.”

Hua Gu Yi said. Regarding what would happen to Jiang Chen next, she had no clue about it. Now, all her attention was on Ling Er. For all these years of cultivation, she had never met a genius like her. A twelve-year-old Ninth Grade Combat King. It couldn’t be explained by her diligence. One could be very diligent at cultivation and advancement, but still couldn’t reach the Ninth Grade Combat King at such a young age. The only explanation was her natural-born gift. As a Ninth Grade Combat Emperor, Hua Gu Yi would be able to see through her extraordinary physique and bones, truly a heaven defying genius.

“No way, I have to wait for my big brother here. He will be okay.”

Zuo Ling Er was firm, she shook her head in disagreement. Jiang Chen’s life and death was still unknown, how could she go to Summit Gu Yi with a peaceful mind? She wouldn’t be calm even if she went there. She would rather stand here and wait for her big brother to return safely. She believed that her big brother could go

through anything, there wasn't a thing that could go against him.

Hua Gu Yi sighed. Zuo Ling Er was determined to wait here. She had no choice but to follow. There were quite a lot of accidents that happened during the checking today, since the Feng Yun brothers had left, she would stay to guard the checking.

.....

In a twinkle, Jiang Chen appeared in a main hall. This was the space that existed and was built by Nebula Kidd himself. The place was solid and firm as it was built by a Fourth Grade Minor Saint. The hall was only a small building in the spatial zone of a Minor Saint though.

Nebula Kidd was sitting on a chair made from an unusual crystal. His eyes were cold while staring at Jiang Chen. But, Jiang Chen was clasping his hand behind his back and just stood there, his face was relaxed and calm, there wasn't any sign of fright.

Nebula Kidd was surprised that a young man who was less than twenty years old would have such composure while facing him. It was truly rare because he could detect that Jiang Chen wasn't attempting to act confidently in front of him. His composure came out naturally from within, as though there wasn't anything that could make him nervous. His strong and extraordinary disposition was enough to triumph over any of the younger generation.

Jiang Chen didn't fear him at all as he was once the Greatest Saint of the world. He didn't know what 'fear' was. He hadn't felt

any murderous aura coming from Nebula Kidd. If Nebula Kidd wanted to kill him, he wouldn't have brought him personally to this place. Of course, his defensive aura was never lowered, perhaps he wanted to find out what Jiang Chen's true identity before taking any action.

Jiang Chen didn't have to be afraid that Nebula Kidd wanted to take his life. If he really did, Jiang Chen would unleash the Talisman of Origin given by Great Master Ran Feng. Nebula Kidd wouldn't be able to defend himself from the attack, it would certainly kill him.

“You don't feel afraid to see me?”

Nebula Kidd said.

“Why should I be afraid of you?”

Jiang Chen's eyes met Nebula Kidd's. He felt that this young man's gaze wasn't from any ordinary youngster. His eyes were full of wisdom and composure, as though he was an old freak who had lived for a thousand years. Also, Jiang Chen's eyes revealed a sense of dignity, Nebula Kidd was impressed of how dignified his aura is. It sounded absurd but it could be felt from Jiang Chen's body.

“Humph! You dare to speak to me in such a way. That is enough for your death. Speak. Who are you? Why are you here in my sect? And, what method did you use to destroy the Brilliant Mirror?”



Nebula Kidd asked. He would never believe that a Ninth Grade Combat King could shatter the Brilliant Mirror. There had to be some secrets hidden in this boy's physique. His feeling became heavy when he thought of the recent battle. He had to come in person to make Jiang Chen's identity and purpose clear, if whether Jiang Chen was related to that mysterious man.

...

# Chapter 636 - Make A Trade

---

Jiang Chen didn't answer Nebula Kidd's question, but instead he scanned the man's body from top to bottom a few times. A while later, he turned his gaze away and said, "You are injured, a serious internal injury."

\*Hong\*

As soon as his voice dropped, a wave of Qi suddenly blasted from Nebula Kidd's body. Some surplus Qi touched Jiang Chen, and sent him flying, hitting the solid wall of the main hall.

\*Cough\*

Jiang Chen coughed slightly, drops of blood spilled out of his mouth. The Qi's power from a Fourth Grade Minor Saint wasn't defensible by a mere Combat King, even if it wasn't a direct hit. But, he didn't worry in the slightest about the minor injury he just got. It's because he could easily heal it using Dragon Transformation Art. The thing that surprised him was Nebula Kidd's sudden and big reaction. Although Jiang Chen had seen through his injuries, as a Minor-Saint-Grade master, his disposition shouldn't be unsteady. His doubts seemed to have touched Nebula Kidd's tender spot.

"You know that I'm injured?"

Nebula Kidd's gaze were as sharp as a blade, locking on Jiang Chen's Qi. Nobody knew about his injuries, not even his opponent.

That battle had certainly left a serious wound on his physique. However, he was able to disguise it well that not even Hua Gu Yi could find out about it. But Jiang Chen, a mere Ninth Grade Combat King, had seen through him. There would be only two possibilities. First, Jiang Chen was overly divine that he had the ability to see through everything. Second, Jiang Chen had known about his injury all this while.

“You are wounded by an enormous demon. There is still a wisp of a demon’s aura inside of you, and you can’t get it out. You are currently using your combat force to suppress it, but it won’t totally heal it. Your injury will get worse over time.”

Jiang Chen ignored Nebula Kidd’s frozen expression and continued his statement. His eyesight could see through in an instant that Nebula Kidd was badly injured. It made him think of the bright light sword he saw in Heavenly Devil Palace. His injuries must have been left after the battle. He reaffirmed that that man was Nebula Kidd and the fragment of the Heavenly Saint Sword was under his possession.

Jiang Chen was calm and wise when facing difficulties. After knowing Kidd’s secret, he discerned his dreadful expression, giving him a great opportunity. Since his identity had been exposed, he needed to think of another way to retrieve his item. It wasn’t necessary to oppose Nebula Kidd as his grade wouldn’t do much help on that.

“What did you just say?!”

Kidd was completely shocked. Even with the disposition of a

Minor Saint, he couldn't take it easy. A wave of cold and chilling murderous aura was released from his body, wrapping all over Jiang Chen. He was surprised not only because Jiang Chen could detect his injury but could also see through the seriousness of it in just a glance. The wisp of demon aura was tangled on his body, not even him could get rid of it. Its existence in his body was a serious threat to his recovery, making it harder to heal.

“Jiang Chen, what's your relation with White Tiger and that mysterious youth? And what's your purpose of coming to Nebula Sect?”

Nebula Kidd demanded.

“White Tiger? Mysterious youth?”

Jiang Chen was stunned, not knowing what Kidd was talking about. Nevertheless, his wisdom quickly guessed the connection between these two people and his injury.

“You aren't together with them?”

Nebula Kidd's murderous aura reduced. A person's eyes couldn't lie. When he raised the question about White Tiger and the mysterious young man Jiang Chen froze momentarily. That was enough to indicate that he wasn't an ally of the two.

In other words, Jiang Chen didn't know about his injury before this. He only knew it after seeing through him. This had amazed

Kidd again. The young man before him was too calm. Jiang Chen didn't feel nervous or affected by his murderous aura, there was no fear in his eyes which meant he wasn't afraid of him at all.

“I have no idea who you are talking about. But, I know how to heal your wound.”

Jiang Chen said.

“What? You said you can heal my wound? Why do I believe you? And, you breaking the Brilliant Mirror indicated that you have. You better tell me your background and your purpose of coming to my sect, or else I will kill you.”

Nebula Kidd's tone was cold, but he had lowered his guard after he found out that Jiang Chen wasn't related to White Tiger and that mysterious youth.

“Hmm. There's no harm telling you anyway. My only purpose in coming here is because of your sword.”

Jiang Chen said. His eyes released a forceful aura that came from the depths of his soul. The invisible suppression made Kidd astonished once more. What was the origin of this young man? Why would he have such incisive eyes?

“My Nebula Sword?”

Nebula Kidd sounded unfriendly. No one had ever tried to own

his sword. He had spent a lot of effort and time to make the Nebula Sword. Now, the fragment of the Heavenly Saint Sword had already been fused as one in his sword and it was inseparable.

“Your Nebula Sword consists of the fragment of the Heavenly Saint Sword that isn’t yours. It’s mine and I will retrieve it back.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes glitter with dazzling light. A stronger wave of Qi was spilled out of his soul. With each step he took, he came closer to Nebula Kidd which forced Kidd to move back irresistibly.

“You, what did you say? What are you?!”

Nebula Kidd was petrified. The news that he acquired the fragment of the Heavenly Saint Sword had been spread to many people, so it wasn’t a secret anymore. He wasn’t surprised that this young man knew about it, but he still unreasonably feared him.

“Who am I? I’m Jiang Chen. I’m the one who slashed through the heavens, the Greatest Saint who fell into the Saint’s Cliff a hundred years ago. I’m the reincarnation of myself. What right do you have to possess the Heavenly Saint Sword?”

Jiang Chen barked with a strong tone. All the hidden Saint aura in his body were all released. Nebula Kidd felt that he was facing the Greatest Saint. His opponent supposedly should be weaker than him a hundred or thousand times, but he felt intimidated from the aura coming from this young man. It sounded absurd, wasn’t it?

“What?!”

Nebula Kidd exclaimed. Only an unprecedented and shocking news could make him, a Fourth Grade Minor Saint, to shiver and cause him to exclaim. His eyes were staring intently at Jiang Chen, his impression of him now was mixed with surprise and fear.

No way, this is impossible! The Great Saint had died long ago. This kid was bullshitting.

However, why could he feel the Saint aura coming directly from Jiang Chen’s soul? Jiang Chen’s composure while facing him and the profound expression in his eye would never exist in a teenager. Could he really be the reincarnation of the Greatest Saint?

Now that he recalled, the Greatest Saint was also called Jiang Chen. Many knew of his alias but not his real name. He heard the real name from someone else by chance last time.

The Greatest Saint possessed the power to slash a rift in the heaven and the power to reincarnate. Which Nebula Kidd didn’t feel unfamiliar as this matched his knowledge.

Nonetheless, Nebula Kidd still didn’t believe it.

“How would you make me believe you?”

He couldn’t find the extent of this young man.

“Draw out your Nebula Sword.”

Jiang Chen said with a calm voice.

To test Jiang Chen’s identity, he drew his Nebula Sword out. He wasn’t afraid that Jiang Chen would rob it away. Even if the young man was right, even if he was the reincarnation of the Greatest Saint, he is merely a Ninth Grade Combat King now that can be killed by just using his fingers.

The long sword was resplendent, it was as thin as cicada’s wings, and was illuminating a plain blue light. Anyone could recognise that this was a treasured sword by just a look. This was the Nebula Sword, the weapon of Nebula Kidd’s life force. Jiang Chen’s gaze fell on the sword, it was only a glance but...

\*Weng\* \*Weng\*

the initially silent Nebula Sword turned aggressive all of a sudden, it trembled intensely and created a piercing buzzing sound, as though it had found its true owner.

“How can this happen?!”

Nebula Kidd was shocked once again. He had never encountered such a situation. He had fully fused the fragment of the Heavenly Saint Sword into his sword. His Nebula Sword had become a part of him but it reacted in a friendly way to a stranger.



“Nebula Kidd. Did you see it clearly? You thought you can completely fuse the fragment of the Heavenly Saint Sword into your sword? Absolutely absurd! Under the heavens, only I have the power to wield the Heavenly Saint Sword. Your Nebula Sword will become my weapon if I so willed it.”

Jiang Chen’s facial expression was cold as if he was sticking a sharp sword at Nebula Kidd’s heart using his words.

“You? You are the reincarnation of the Greatest Saint?”

Nebula Kidd had already found his answer to that. A sense of respect was added into his eyes. It was a sincere respect that he wanted to give to Jiang Chen. He now believed what the young had said. His Nebula Sword was the best proof as it wouldn’t lie.

“You don’t have to worry, I won’t take your sword away for now.”

Jiang Chen waved his hand, stopping his connection with the Heavenly Saint Sword, letting the Nebula Sword return to its original state.

“I will make a trade with you.”

Jiang Chen said. This was the first time he revealed his true identity. This was also the first time he told someone his secret, but he had his own reasons for doing so. In addition, he wouldn’t

steal the Nebula Sword as Kidd would kill him if he forced him to. That would be a nonsense and worthless sacrifice. Also, he wasn't in need of the fragment of the Heavenly Saint Sword now. He only needed to determine the whereabouts of it. Later on, he could continue to find the other fragments of the Heavenly Saint Sword. He would rather establish a friendly relationship with Nebula Kidd instead of starting a conflict. It sounded quite good to settle down and build his own path in Nebula Sect.

...

# Chapter 637 - White Tiger's Demon Aura

---

“What trade do you want to make?”

Kidd asked. His tone turned polite after knowing Jiang Chen's true identity. The reincarnation of the Greatest Saint was fated to be a heaven defying person. He was well aware of Jiang Chen's gifted talent, the ability to initiate catastrophe when he's still in the Combat King realm. Thus, he couldn't find a reason why he wouldn't befriend Jiang Chen.

“I have decided to retrieve my Heavenly Saint Sword but not now. When I've retrieved all the other fragments of the sword, I'll come to get the piece that you're holding. At that time, I'll help you forge another perfect Nebula Sword that won't be any weaker than your current sword. I'll also drive out the demon aura inside your body and also assist your sect to dominate all the others in Mysterious Domain.”

Jiang Chen said. If these words came out from an ordinary man, Nebula Kidd would treat it as nothing more than a dog fart. A Ninth Grade Combat King that spoke those words was certainly making a fool out of himself. But, if these words were from Jiang Chen, Kidd wouldn't doubt it even in the slightest.

The reincarnation of the world's Greatest Saint was omnipotent. There was nothing he couldn't do. It was a mere domain, how could that concern him? Nebula Kidd wouldn't be surprised to hear that Jiang Chen could get rid of the demon aura tangled in his body, as the world's Greatest Saint would naturally be able to do everything that's impossible to everyone.

Kidd changed his suspicious behavior and rejoiced. He wasn't a fool. He knew what the benefits were. Jiang Chen offered a lot of things just to exchange for the fragment of the Heavenly Saint Sword. To him, he gained the most, plus the fragment of Heavenly Saint Sword should belong Jiang Chen.

He believed that Jiang Chen could rebuild a new Saint Weapon for him that won't be any weaker than his current sword. He knew Jiang Chen would be able to do it once he promised. Another important thing was the promise to remove the demon aura from his body, as he had been under inexplicable torture because of it for a long time.

Moreover, building a good relationship with Jiang Chen had no disadvantages but instead a lot of advantages. Although he wasn't the world's Greatest Saint now, his supreme talent was an invaluable asset to Nebula Sect.

“Alright. I agree to your terms.”

Nebula Kidd agreed with the trade. In his heart, this wasn't a trade at all but a choice. He would rather choose to follow or even assist Jiang Chen. It would be a very honourable thing to be able to assist the reincarnation of the world's Greatest Saint in dominating the world.

“I hope that today's matter will only be between the two of us. No one can know about my secret.”

Jiang Chen said, albeit in a very solemn tone. He understood that Nebula Kidd wasn't a fool, he knew how to keep a secret.

“You don't have to worry. Only you and I will know about the matters today. Even if I die, your secret will decay along with me.”

Nebula Kidd said with a reassuring tone. Jiang Chen's secret as the reincarnation of the world's Greatest Saint was a heaven-and-earth shaking one. Once it was spread, the news would shake the entire Divine Continent. At that time, Jiang Chen would be put as the top priority on many powerful people's hunting list. In his past life, Jiang Chen had too many enemies which were incredibly powerful. He wouldn't get to live once the news was spread to those big families on the Pure land.

“Come, let me help you remove the demon aura first.”

Jiang Chen said. For him, revealing his secret to someone was a very risky decision after a deep contemplation. However, he was accurate at observing people, the impression that Nebula Kidd gave him wasn't bad. Moreover, he held the biggest bargaining chip against him. He had to use different ways to convince him so that he would forget about the matter of the shattered Brilliant Mirror.

It seemed all good now, Nebula Sect will become his new training ground.

“Now?”

Nebula Kidd was stunned. He never expected that Jiang Chen would immediately act as he promised. The demon aura had been torturing him for some time and he had tried different kinds of ways to get rid of it but to no avail. Initially, he thought that Jiang Chen might need some time to prepare for the removal of the demon aura, as it was a very powerful one. Despite the fact that Jiang Chen was the reincarnation of the world's Greatest Saint, his grade was far too weak, a mere Ninth Grade Combat King.

“That’s right, I’ll do it now. Let go of all your defences. You don’t have to worry that I will harm you. As a Fourth Grade Minor Saint, I can’t hurt you even without your guard.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Alright.”

Nebula Kidd’s expression changed. He didn’t dare to patronize Jiang Chen. He let down all of his defences. He could feel that Jiang Chen didn’t have any bad intentions. If there was anything wrong, Jiang Chen wouldn’t be able to leave Nebula Sect. There wasn’t only one Minor Saint in the sect. Jiang Chen was right about that, his low cultivation level couldn’t allow him to even harm Kidd even by a bit.

Jiang Chen came to Kidd’s back, he used a hand to support his back. He casted the Dragon Transformation Art, a wave of Yuan Force and Divine Sense blended together and drilled into Nebula Kidd’s body.

“Nebula Kidd, use your Yuan Force to push the demon aura towards the direction of my Yuan Force.”

Jiang Chen said.

Nebula Kidd completely believed the techniques of the world's Greatest Saint. He instantly exerted his Yuan Force, forcing the demon aura out. Under the pressure of his Yuan Force, the demon aura started to move toward Jiang Chen's Yuan Force. His Yuan Force was immovable and firm like a violent beast.

The moment the demon aura hit Jiang Chen's Yuan Force, it instantly became a ferocious beast, opening its mouth and sucking the demon aura into it. The demon aura struggled intensely. However, the Dragon Transformation Art was very powerful, its immense force pulled the demon aura out from Nebula Kidd's body into Jiang Chen's. The demon that could injure Nebula Kidd had to be at least a Fourth Grade Minor Saint or above, which made the demon aura harmful to him. But to Jiang Chen, it had unlimited benefits.

\*Argh!\*

As the demon aura left his body, he spurted a mouthful of blood. It was caused by the internal injury. Now that the demon aura was removed, he felt truly relieved. The other mild physical injuries would recover at most in two days' time.

Nebula Kidd quickly turned to Jiang Chen. His eyes were currently closed and he was sitting on the ground with his legs

crossed. A layer of divine golden light was covering him.

“He really deserves to be called the reincarnation of the world’s Greatest Saint, he undoubtedly has an effective technique that can remove the demon aura from my physique with ease. The demon aura has entered into his body, but it won’t do any harm to his body.... I suppose. It won’t because he is the world’s Greatest Saint. There’s nothing that can restrain him.”

Nebula Kidd muttered to himself, while looking at Jiang Chen with gratitude. The removal of the demon aura had eliminated the latent danger in his body. He was now indebted to Jiang Chen.

Now, Jiang Chen felt madly delighted, he felt like bouncing up and down because he found out that the demon aura wasn’t from an ordinary beast. It was from a Divine Beast! He had refined Big Yellow’s Dragon-Horse blood essence before, he knew how scary a Divine Beast could be. Moreover, this demon aura was the same as the Dragon-Horse, from a rare Divine Beast.

It was the aura of the White Tiger, one of the five legendary Divine Beast. The aura wasn’t really a big deal but it could stay in Nebula Kidd’s body for so long and couldn’t be gotten rid of, indicating that it wasn’t ordinary. There had to be a trace of the White Tiger’s essence in it. It was an invaluable item to Jiang Chen as it was something left by a Fourth Grade Minor Saint Divine Beast.

“Never thought to have such a surprising gain. After I refine this demon aura, at least three thousand dragon marks will be formed. The benefits won’t be only that. My advancement to Ninth Grade



Combat King before caused some injuries to my pool of energy but this demon aura can heal up the injury, strengthening my pool of energy again. This is intoxicating.”

Jiang Chen felt really delighted. He ignored Nebula Kidd and started casting his Dragon Transformation Art to refine the demon aura. Even though the demon aura was a bit stubborn, the Dragon Transformation Art was still able to handle it, as there wasn't anything it couldn't refine. It only took a few minutes to completely refine the demon aura using the Dragon Transformation Art.

Three thousand of dragon marks were condensed and formed but he hadn't hit the Combat Emperor realm yet. His dragon marks just increased from thirty six thousand to thirty nine thousand. Advancing from the Ninth Grade Combat King to the First Grade Combat Emperor was two times harder. It required forty thousand dragon marks to undergo the advancement.

In other words, he needed a thousand more dragon marks to step into the Combat Emperor realm.

Although he hadn't reached the Combat Emperor realm, his pool of energy was healed and became stronger. The thirty nine thousands dragon marks pushed him to the peak of the Ninth Grade Combat King, strengthening his combat strength by a few times. He could now kill a Second Grade Combat Emperor easily, and he would not even fear fighting a Third Grade Combat Emperor.

\*Weng\* \*Weng\*

Suddenly, Jiang Chen's Golden Dragon Seal activated automatically in his body. He gained control of the spell and an image of a Golden Dragon Seal appeared in his palm. Of course, it was only an image. It wasn't comparable to a complete Fire Dragon Seal and Water Dragon Seal.

However, this stunned Jiang Chen for a while before he understood why it happened. "The White Tiger was among the five Divine Beasts, it represents gold. I cultivate the Five Elements Combat Dragon Seal that thirsted for the five elements in the world. If I can get my hands on the White Tiger Divine Beast, my cultivation of the Golden Dragon Seal will be complete. Also, my Dragon Transformation Art will allow me to acquire the supernatural powers of the White Tiger."

This was a very fruitful result, to learn about the existence of the White Tiger that had wounded Nebula Kidd, which made Jiang Chen extremely interested.

Jiang Chen opened his eyes and stood up.

"How does it feel?"

Nebula Kidd asked. He could clearly feel that the Jiang Chen was now a lot stronger than before. He was only a step away from the Combat Emperor realm. There was no way that he wouldn't be impressed by this Greatest Saint's technique. Jiang Chen's way of cultivation was scary, not comparable to ordinary men at all.

“Unprecedentedly good. Sect Master, I heard you talk about a mysterious youth when you were injured by the White Tiger. Can you tell me more about him?”

Jiang Chen said.

“I don’t know. That White Tiger was extraordinarily powerful. If I’m not guessing it wrongly, it should be the legendary White Tiger Divine Beast. It is merely a Third Grade Minor Saint but it was enough to wound me, truly scary. The White Tiger listens to the mysterious youth. I can still recall his face. He was wearing a golden robe, his golden hair was dazzling. His entire body was filled with the superior Qi of a Monarch, very similar to a true Human-Dragon.”

Nebula Kidd recalled.

“Nan Bei Chao.”

Jiang Chen’s facial expression turned ugly and a name slipped his mouth.

...

# Chapter 638 - Inner Sect Disciples

---

It didn't take long for Jiang Chen to guess that it was Nan Bei Chao. He was born with a Celestial Soul which was the manifestation of God's will, very different from average human beings. He didn't kill Nan Bei Chao when he was still in Black Sect, so he knew that Nan Bei Chao would appear one day.

Golden robe, hair, and the Superior Qi of a Monarch, these are the qualities of Nan Bei Chao. He was the only one who was considered a real genius underneath the heavens to the reincarnated Jiang Chen. Nan Bei Chao had appeared once again.

“Who?”

Nebula Kidd was surprised.

“I have an opponent last time, one that is very hard to deal with. That man will initiate great waves of trouble to the places he goes to. I'm afraid that Mysterious Domain won't have its peaceful days anymore.”

Jiang Chen's eyes were heavy. No one knew Nan Bei Chao better than him. Nan Bei Chao had cultivated the Monarch Heaven Art, which naturally made him walk the path of a monarch. Wherever he went to, he would conquer and rule the area so that he could enhance his Monarch Qi. Now that he had appeared in Mysterious Domain, he would find ways to invade it, and would cause a wave of bloody massacre.

“That man said that he will rule the entire domain one day. The White Tiger beside him is very scary, I can't even handle it.”

Nebula Kidd expressed his thoughts to Jiang Chen because they had become friends now. It was also because of the future of Nebula Sect. The previous battle was enough to tell him that the situation in the Mysterious Domain would turn chaotic very quickly. As one of the strongest five, his sect would inevitably be involved in the battle. He felt reassured and relieved after learning about the existence of the reincarnation of the world's Greatest Saint in his sect.

“What's Nan Bei Chao's grade now?”

Jiang Chen asked. He was very concerned about this.

“If I'm not wrong, the blonde haired youth was a First Grade Combat Emperor. What I don't understand is how did that young man make a Third Grade Minor Demon Saint follow him willingly. In addition, the beast is the rare Divine Beast White Tiger.”

Nebula Kidd was confused. A high and mighty Divine Beast wouldn't take orders from any human beings. But on that day, the White Tiger obeyed the blonde youth's orders smoothly.

“Things that ordinary people can't do, Nan Bei Chao can.”

Jiang Chen had no doubt that Nan Bei Chao had gained full control of the White Tiger as he was an outstanding genius with a

Celestial Soul. Nevertheless, he was only a mere First Grade Combat Emperor which lessened Jiang Chen's worries a bit.

“Nan Bei Chao, it seems our old conflicts in Qi Province will come to this big piece of land, the Mysterious Domain. In that case, we will have a fight to see who will be the winner this time.”

Jiang Chen revealed a smile, igniting the desire to fight in his blood. To him, adversities and challenges were always the most exciting activity to have. Playing games with people like Nan Bei Chao would have endless fun. The conflicts in those days had been brought to this day, from a small stage in Qi Province to a larger stage in Mysterious Domain.

The thought of meeting his opponent made his desire to fight burn inside him. Nebula Kidd could feel Jiang Chen's concern for that young man, which also made him worried. One that could be an opponent of the Greatest Saint wasn't a weak being.

“I can see his obsession in conquering. He is abnormal.”

Nebula Kidd said.

“According to Nan Bei Chao's method, he will utilize the strength of either one of the five major powers to set foot in. It will become obvious to us sooner or later. Sect Master, all you need to do is to relax, recover, and cultivate. No one must know and talk about my matter. I think the checking hasn't ended yet in the Martial Art Arena. We need to go back now, then give all of them a reason. From now on, I'm one of your inner sect disciples and you're my

master.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Fine.”

Nebula Kidd nodded and brought Jiang Chen back from the main hall. They left the independent spatial zone and headed for the Martial Art Arena.

On the arena, the checking of the Brilliant Mirror had just ended. Except for Jiang Chen and the black shirt guy, all of them passed the checking without an incident, becoming one of the official disciples.

“Everyone passed. I don’t know how’s brother Jiang going?”

Lan Yi said with a sigh.

“I sense more foreboding than propitious. The sect master will probably interrogate him through torture.”

“Too bad for a rare genius that has helped us so much in Huang Ling Desert.”

“Yeah, I really hope brother Jiang is ok.”

.....

Many of the disciples were concerned about Jiang Chen's condition. They couldn't forget the exciting feeling of killing in yesterday's battle. They felt so high, fighting alongside Jiang Chen in an intense battle. They wouldn't want something bad to happen to Jiang Chen even if he couldn't be one of them.

“Why is big brother Jiang not coming back?”

Zuo Ling Er pouted her little mouth. She didn't feel good about it and was very worried.

“I'm afraid he's not coming back.”

Cong Zhong Sheng was full of delight on his face. If Jiang Chen was gotten rid of by Nebula Kidd, it would save him a lot of trouble.

Unexpectedly, as soon as Cong Zhong Sheng's voice faded, a wave of Qi appeared in the sky above the arena. Two silhouettes emerged, they were Jiang Chen and Nebula Kidd.

“Big brother!”

Zuo Ling Er felt extremely happy and cheered when she saw that Jiang Chen was fine.



“Master.”

Huo Yi Gu led the greeting and was followed by the others with a bow without delay. Seeing Jiang Chen perfectly fine, doubts and fear ran through them. No one knew what had happened. To Lan Yi, the current situation was a lot better than what they had imagined.

“Master, how will you deal with Jiang Chen?”

Hua Gu Yi asked her master. Of all the people, only Hua Gu Yi dared to speak to the master.

“I have ascertain the facts. There are some underlying problems in the Brilliant Mirror that caused it to change and break, and it’s absolutely not related to Jiang Chen. Okay, from now on, Jiang Chen will be an official inner -sect disciple.”

As soon as Nebula Kidd was done with his statement, he vanished, leaving the crowd stunned.

“Haha...I have said that. How can brother Jiang have problems with the mirror? If he has, he should have been killed by it already, and the mirror wouldn’t break into pieces. It’s the problem of the mirror itself.”

“This is good. Brother Jiang has is one of us now. We can follow him to train in the future. This makes me feel excited.”

“Since the master has clarified it, there won’t be a problem. It is really terrifying. Damn the Brilliant Mirror, almost caused us to lose one rare genius.”

.....

Countless people began to cheer and felt happy for Jiang Chen, telling how much respect and admiration the inner sect disciples had for him. That was very essential. To have such a cohesive and united group was the first time in Nebula Sect. In the inner sect, not even the chief steward had such charisma.

“Why did it become like this?”

Cong Zhong Sheng released a cold light and humph coldly in his heart.

“There’s no harm in being a disciple. As long as he is in inner sect, he is under my care and control. I didn’t notice any special treatment from the sect master, and the seven Feng Yun Brothers aren’t keeping him as apprentice anymore. I think he doesn’t have anyone to rely on in Nebula Sect anymore.”

Jiang Chen made a sway and landed on the arena. He approached Hua Gu Yi and Zuo Ling Er, then cupped his fists. “Elder Hua, I’ll pass my little sister to you now.”

“Don’t worry, being my personal disciple, she won’t be bullied by anyone. You should spend more time worrying about yourself.

Ling Er, Jiang Chen is fine, so you can let go of your worries now. Follow your master back to Summit Gu Yi.”

Hua Gu Yi said and pulled Zuo Ling Er along with her.

“Hold on.”

Jiang Chen stopped her.

“What matter do you still have? I don’t have much time to stay here?”

Hua Gu Yi said.

“Elder Hua. According to the reward of the trial, whoever gets the devil soul of the devil leader can get an Emperor Pill. There is one devil soul in Ling Er’s possession. You should let her get the pill before leaving. She will quickly get to the Combat Emperor realm after using the pill.”

Jiang Chen said. He had been worrying about the matter of the Emperor Pill. On the way back to the sect, he gave Zuo Ling Er the devil leader’s soul .

“Oh really? I never thought that Ling Er already has the ability to kill a devil leader. Very good!”

Hua Gu Yi looked at Zuo Ling Er and praised her.

Zuo Ling Er turned her hand then a devil soul appeared, and replied solemnly.

“Master, this was killed by my big brother.”

Hua Gu Yi’s eyes widened while looking at Zuo Ling Er, feeling a little awkward before she turned to Cong Zhong Sheng.

“Cong Zhong Sheng, where’s the Emperor Pill? Quickly take it out and quit wasting my time.”

“Yes, Elder Hua.”

Cong Zhong Sheng didn’t dare slow down. No one would dare to offend the barbarous lady in Nebula Sect. He quickly brought an Emperor Pill to Hua Gu Yi and passed it to Zuo Ling Er. Ling er, in turn, passed the devil soul to Cong Zhong Sheng before keeping the pill.

“Congratulations Elder Hua! You’ve kept a genius apprentice. She will become the number one genius of Nebula Sect soon.”

Cong Zhong Sheng flattered her.

“Quit flattering me and take a good care of the inner sect.”

Hua Gu Yi dropped the message, and vanished with Zuo Ling Er.

Cong Zhong Sheng returned to the battle platform and scanned the new disciples, and announced. “From now on you are the official disciples of Nebula Sect. These are your new identity jade plates and the uniform of our sect.”

Cong Zhong Sheng waved his hand, and pieces of jade plates flew to find its owner one by one, that included Jiang Chen. The jade plate contained spaces in it, like a spatial ring, but besides the uniform, there was nothing in it.

At this point, Yu Wei walked to the battle platform and cupped his fists at the Chief Steward Cong Zhong Sheng, “Chief Steward, this is the devil soul of a devil leader, I’m here to exchange it for an Emperor Pill.”

## Chapter 639 - Lawless

---

As the chief steward, Cong Zhong Sheng also handled every matter in the inner sect. Anyone who needed to claim their reward would need to find him as it was obvious when he gave Zuo Ling Er the Emperor Pill. If there were no mistakes, there were three Emperor Pills in his possession, which were all prepared to those who had completed the quest.

Yu Wei was a little impatient regarding the Emperor Pill. He was now at the peak of the Combat King realm, very close to the Combat Emperor realm. Once he got it, he could push his grade to the new realm. Then, he would become one of the core disciples and climb up one more step to the status ladder.

Cong Zhong Sheng took the demon soul from Yu Wei's hand and said. "Alright, Yu Wei, your performance is great today. It seems that the Emperor Pill will allow you to step into the Combat Emperor realm soon, and you'll become one of the core disciples. You will have an endlessly bright future given your talent as the second ranked genius of Earth ranking."

Cong Zhong Sheng spoke highly of him before he took out an Emperor Pill and passed it to Yu Wei.

Yu Wei felt extremely satisfied after sensing the thick Qi coming from the pill. He bowed before the chief steward and then looked at Jiang Chen who wasn't far away with gratitude. The demon soul was gifted by Jiang Chen. If it wasn't for Big Yellow's help, they wouldn't have killed it and would even face their death.

“Brother Jiang, you are now one of the inner sect disciples. Quickly, exchange the demon soul for an Emperor Pill. Given your great talent, I believe that you can directly advance to the Combat Emperor realm just by using the pill.”

Yu Wei told Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen nodded. He strode to Cong Zhong Sheng who stood on the battle platform above him and showed his demon soul before hurling it to the chief steward and said, “Chief Steward, I’m here to exchange it for an Emperor Pill.”

To everyone’s surprise, Cong Zhong Sheng’s face turned ugly as soon as Jiang Chen’s voice faded. “Emperor Pill? You still have the nerve to exchange for a pill?”

These tensed words change the atmosphere on the Martial Art Arena. Many looked to the chief steward. It seemed like he was going to use his power to retaliate on his personal enemy. Many knew of the connection between him and Hu Song. As Hu Song had failed miserably because of Jiang Chen, he wouldn’t miss this chance to retaliate on the enemy. Since Jiang Chen had also become one of the inner sect disciples under his command, he can easily retaliate by abusing his power.

“Can you enlighten me on your words?”

Jiang Chen’s face turned cold. He had already expected this the first time he saw Cong Zhong Sheng, he could already feel his malicious aura.

“Enlighten? Jiang Chen, didn’t you know that you have committed a serious crime? You harmed your own brother before you even become one of the official disciples. You chopped off one of Hu Song’s arm. Luckily, Hu Song is powerful, if not he would’ve already died. Such a cruel act warrants a heavy punishment, but since you have completed the trial and brought back the demon soul. I’ll use this to offset your crime. The Emperor Pill will be given to Hu Song as compensation.”

Cong Zhong Sheng said.

“Shameless.”

“What he said isn’t true. Hu Song is powerful? It is plainly because brother Jiang showed mercy on him. He could have killed him if he wanted to. At that time, Hu Song wouldn’t have returned here. Using the Emperor Pill as a compensation for Hu Song without brother Jiang’s consent is a classic way of abusing one’s power.”

“The chief steward is a smart person. He won’t offend brother Jiang openly. Although brother Jiang is not accepted as one of the personal disciple of the seven Feng Yun Brothers, his relationship with senior sister Zuo is extraordinarily good. If he offends Jiang Chen, he will also offend senior sister Zuo and that will mean making Elder Hua Gu Yi unhappy. He knew who’s controlling the situation here.”

“What do you know? Chief Steward is indeed smart. What class



is Elder Hua Gu Yi? For what reason will she care about the inner sect's matters? Isn't it absurd for her to even bat an eye for these matters? He redeemed brother Jiang's crime with the Emperor Pill and he has given a reasonable explanation for that. I feel pity for him, he allowed us to have many demon souls that he personally killed but he gets nothing in the end."

.....

Everyone on the arena heaved a heavy sigh, they all felt that Cong Zhong Sheng abused his power. But they had already expected it even before returning to the sect.. Thus, it was natural for him to demand a compensation for Hu Song's defeat. If there were no accidents during the checking of the the brilliant mirror, Jiang Chen would have been recognized as a personal disciple of one of the seven Feng Yun Brothers. That would prevent Cong Zhong Sheng to act in such a way. Now that the seven Feng Yun Brothers had given up on accepting Jiang Chen as their personal disciple, he was now merely an ordinary inner sect disciple. The most he could do was to obtain the first place in the Earth Ranking.

Everyone in the inner sect was under the control of the chief steward. Many knew that Jiang Chen's Emperor pill was already gone.

"Go and f\*ck yourself."

Jiang Chen smirked and cursed softly.

"What did you say?"

Cong Zhong Sheng was infuriated. He couldn't believe his ears that there was someone in the inner sect who dared to swear at him in a super bold way.

“I said, GO AND F\*CK YOURSELF.”

Jiang Chen shouted while pointing his finger at him . His words shocked the entire crowd and they turned silent for a moment. Then....

\*Wah!\*

Everyone exclaimed. . They all thought that their ears had problems but Jiang Chen had consecutively cursed two times, it was unmistakable.

“My God. He cursed the chief steward openly. This, this...”

“Lawless, absolutely lawless. He didn't mind scolding the chief steward. This is the first time that such a thing happen in the inner sect, he is truly bold.”

“Dang! That's cool! Brother Jiang is certainly my idol. In the inner sect, you can't find a person who is disrespectful to the chief steward. He has scolded him the first day he arrived , which is extremely cool!”

“Goodness! This man is lawless. He has pluck an old tiger’s whisker. The chief steward is absolutely angry. Jiang Chen is finished...”

.....

Everybody was shocked. The whole crowd erupted into chaos. Everyone had witnessed the true meaning of ‘lawless’, ‘coolness’, and ‘madness’. They all began to hoot at the chief steward, no it should be directly cursing at him.

“You...Jiang Chen. You showed no respect to your superior. You actually dared to curse me publicly?.This is absolutely going against the law. I will punish you today, paralyzing you entirely!”

Cong Zhong Sheng was enraged. A scary wave of Qi rushed out of his body. He felt the urgent need to eliminate this lawless person. In the inner sect, no one would ever disobey his commands, which made it impossible for anyone to curse him.

Cong Zhong Sheng extended his hand and grabbed in Jiang Chen’s direction. The power of a Third Grade Combat Emperor had been released, most of the disciples felt the suffocating pressure.

“Humph! Dare to defy my commands? Die now!”

Jiang Chen also made a cold humph. He stood firmly on the ground and waved his hand to cast the True Dragon Palm that

collided directly with Cong Zhong Sheng's attack.

\*Peng!\*

The spatial zone nearby was blasted open. The result of the collision widened people's eyes. A Ninth Grade Combat King was still standing firmly on the ground, but the Third Grade Combat Emperor made a step back, his body was trembling woefully.

“What?!”

Cong Zhong Sheng was shocked. His eyes were filled with terror as if he had seen a deadly ghost. The collision just now proved that he hadn't gotten the upper hand.

“God. Did you all see that? The chief steward didn't get any advantages despite his higher grade compared to Jiang Chen.”

“What happened? How could he deflect the chief steward's attack and made him tremble? The chief steward is a Third Grade Combat Emperor, while Jiang Chen is only a Ninth Grade Combat King but he was able to get the upper hand in the battle . My eyes won't lie to me even though it's hard to believe.”

“Heaven defying...genius...He has to be. That's why people called him the Combat King who can initiate a catastrophe. Did you all notice that brother Jiang is much more powerful now compared to the time before he entered the sect? His power has improved a lot. I think he is now at the peak of Ninth Grade Combat King.”

.....

Everyone felt thrilled without an exception. Those who thought that Jiang Chen was finished widened their eyes. They didn't believe what they had just seen. At first, they thought that Jiang Chen was just being arrogant, crazy, and lawless, but now they knew that it's not just dog shit.

Jiang Chen's Qi was bursting. He didn't consider Cong Zhong Heng worthy of his attention. For someone as lowly as him to use compensation as an excuse to take away the reward was a blasphemy to the Greatest Saint. He wouldn't allow it. He raised his head and pointed at Cong Zhong Sheng.

"Old man, let me warn you. You better not infuriate me. No one can touch what is mine, not even you. Hand over the Emperor Pill. Next time you see me, walk farther away. If Hu Song wants revenge, ask him to find me himself. Consider your own power first before you help him take his revenge."

Jiang Chen's voice was so loud that everyone could hear it clearly. The people's facial expression changed. Jiang Chen sounded extremely arrogant to them. A new disciple who offended the chief steward on the very first day. This was madness!

Jiang Chen didn't have the slightest fear for the old man. Before the advancement, he wouldn't be able to confront the old man. However, now that he was only a step away from the Combat Emperor realm, it was enough for him to handle a Third Grade

Combat Emperor. If he exerted his full power, not even the old man could defend.

Today was the first day he entered the Nebula Sect, in other words, his new beginning. Jiang Chen wouldn't allow anyone to step on his head regardless of who the person might be, even if he was a chief steward.

“Jiang Chen, don't cross the line. You are a newcomer to the sect. Disrespecting a chief steward is completely outrageous!”

An elder beside Cong Zhong Sheng yelled at him. He was the second chief steward, a Second Grade Combat Emperor.

“Old man, this matter doesn't concern you. I suggest you stand there and keep quiet.”

Jiang Chen didn't care about his threat. His eyes stared back at Cong Zhong Sheng, “I will never give up until I get the Emperor Pill today.”

Jiang Chen's Qi was powerful as well as his attitude and tone. He knew very well about the reality of the world. If you're weak, anyone could bully you with their nose pointing upward. Men like Cong Zhong Sheng would be those kinds if Jiang Chen made a compromise with him. He would find trouble, and make him suffer the second time, and every time he sees you. The way to handle this kind of man was to beat him up, making him afraid of you.

....

# Chapter 640 - Violently Beating Up The Chief Steward

---

Too arrogant!

The elders on the battle arena felt that their noses were going to be crooked because of the air they kept pushing out their nose due to their anger. Jiang Chen even scolded the second chief steward, but all the second steward could do was to express his anger on his face because he knew he wasn't Jiang Chen's opponent. He wouldn't last long if he fought with Jiang Chen, even Hu Song, a Second Grade Combat Emperor, was defeated by him.

The other reason for their anger was the previous collision which challenged their authority.

“Fine, fine, fine...kid. I have never seen such presumptuous person. I will show you my true ability. As long as you can defeat me, the Emperor Pill is yours.”

Cong Zhong Sheng's tone trembled slightly because of his infuriation. This was the most disgraceful day of his life. If he didn't teach Jiang Chen a lesson, how could he maintain his authority in the inner sect? He was afraid that no one would be scared of him anymore. Everyone in the inner sect would gossip about him. A dignified chief steward was actually slandered by a newcomer.

Cong Zhong Sheng flew up to the sky, he waved his hand and a new battlefield was created in the sky.



There was no fear on Jiang Chen's face. Without much effort, he soared to the sky and stood opposite of Cong Zhong Sheng.

"I won't hold back when I attack."

Jiang Chen's tone was emotionless. If Cong Zhong Sheng wanted to challenge him, he would accept it without hesitation. It was a perfect time to test his strength, and a Third Grade Combat Emperor was a perfect opponent. He had to get the Emperor Pill in his hands. If it was before, he wouldn't care about it but it was different now, Nan Bei Chao had reappeared in the domain and he was the only one that could pressure Jiang Chen .

Their lives wouldn't be peaceful in Mysterious Domain after Nan Bei Chao's emergence. Now that he had the White Tiger by his side. If Jiang Chen's guess was right, Nan Bei Chao had already challenged a few masters of the major powers.

According to Nebula Kidd, Nan Bei Chao was a First Grade Combat Emperor. With his Celestial Soul body, everyone would never know the speed of his cultivation. Jiang Chen was merely a Ninth Grade Combat King. He had to speed up his advancement so that he could face the incoming threat and battle, in which was the most important battle that he had to fight so far.

Therefore, it was imperative for him to obtain the Emperor Pill. With his current combat strength, he could make a breakthrough and step into the Combat Emperor realm after consuming the pill.

“They are going to engage in a battle. It is the first time happening in the history of Nebula Sect that a new disciple has challenged the chief steward on his first day of arrival. Regardless of who the winner will be, this will definitely be recorded.”

“Ya. Brother Jiang is a mad man when it comes to battle. We have already witnessed that from his battle with the demons, but we are still unsure whether he can fight the chief steward.”

“Brother Jiang has defeated Hu Song and enhanced his grade, it won't be hard for him to deal with a Third Grade Combat Emperor. Didn't you all see that brother Jiang has gotten the upper hand during the first strike? He is a peerless genius which can't be measured by logical means. Also, brother Jiang isn't a reckless man, his fight with the demon leader is the proof. He is certain in his battles, and that's why I value him. If he really fought against the chief steward, it will become a serious trouble.”

.....

Watching the intensity of the two, Jiang Chen and Cong Zhong Sheng, most of the people's faces changed. These two men didn't show any signs of hesitation when it came to fighting each other. One was determined to fight to obtain the precious pill and another fought to take revenge on behalf of Hu Song. The conflict between them would escalate after the battle regardless of who won.

“Qi of Three Pure Punches.”

Neither Cong Zhong Sheng nor Jiang Chen had any words for each other. Cong Zhong Sheng made the first attack, filling the sky with the shadows of his punches and shredding the spatial zone into pieces. Every fist of his was illuminating brilliant light, so powerful that one punch could crush a big mountain.

It was a scary and violent combat technique. People could sense his resentment against Jiang Chen. He launched one of his ultimate skill at the first strike, it seemed that he wanted to defeat Jiang Chen with this attack to defend his reputation as a chief steward.

\*Roar\*

A shattering dragon's roar was heard. Since Cong Zhong Sheng was violent in his attack, Jiang Chen would show no mercy for him in return. Jiang Chen struck with his Fire Dragon Seal, a gigantic Fire Dragon spiralled in the sky and thrust forward at the fists.

\*Hong\* \*Hong\*

Frightening energies crashed with each other, shattering the spatial zone completely. Everywhere was full of destructive wave of light accompanied with a cold whistling wind. If someone were to appear in the battle field, he would die just because of the force.

\*Deng\* \*Deng\* \*Deng\*

Cong Zhong Sheng felt an intense recoil from the impact, it

caused him to back up three steps. Jiang Chen's combat strength had improved drastically after refining the White Tiger's aura. The power of a peak Ninth Grade Combat King combined with his true dragon combat technique would make even a Third Grade Combat Emperor to falter.

“Not possible. How can a Ninth Grade Combat King be this powerful?”

Cong Zhong Sheng's face turned drawn. He knew very well how powerful his Qi of Three Pure Punches was, but it had failed him. As a dignified Third Grade Combat Emperor, it was extremely shameful to lose to a mere Ninth Grade Combat King. If this incident was spread out, wouldn't everyone laugh until their teeth fell? When he fought Jiang Chen just now, he felt that his enemy wasn't a mere Combat King but someone who was already a Combat Emperor, and probably stronger than him.

“Cong Zhong Sheng, you have offended me. That's your bad fortune.”

Jiang Chen raged. Another dragon seal was casted between his palms. This time it wasn't a Fire Dragon Seal, but a Water Dragon Seal. The emergence of the Water Dragon Seal lowered the temperature in the sky dramatically.

\*Roar\*

The Water Dragon charged forward, its roar trembled the sky. Jiang Chen would show no quarters to this old man, he wouldn't

give him a chance to breathe. The Water Dragon Seal was cultivated using the Heavenly Earth Pure Water. Every place it passed would freeze. The disciples who were on the arena could feel the chill of the frost.

Their expressions changed instantly. Just now, they had witnessed the scorching hot fire dragon, now it was the frosty water dragon. Weren't these two forces restrict each other? It really was unreasonable.

“What kind of cultivation method did he cultivate that he can use fire and water property skill at the same time that are two complete opposite attributes? Isn't this unnatural? Or...”

“Before, it is a fire attribute attack, but now it has turned into a water attribute attack. How could he keep these two elements in his body? I can't believe such an abnormal being exists in the world.”

“Too powerful and ferocious! He is merely a Combat King! If he advanced his grade to Combat Emperor, his power will be unimaginable. Seems like the chief steward, a Third Grade Combat Emperor, isn't his opponent at all.”

.....

Everyone was shocked by Jiang Chen's combat techniques. Many of them couldn't take it.

The one who was truly frightened was Cong Zhong Sheng. He was high up in the sky. He could feel the terrifying frost that was released from the Water Dragon's cold body. That coldness could freeze one's soul. He imagined that if he had cultivated a fire property technique he would be restrained completely.

\*Keng!\*

Cong Zhong Sheng's thought of underestimating his enemy disappeared. He quickly draw out a long and slender sword, its golden light dazzled people's eyes. It was an Emperor Weapon. His enemy, Jiang Chen, was too strong, he had to go all out in this battle.

\*Swoosh\*

A slender sword swooshed past the air and slashed at the incoming Water Dragon. A portion of the spatial zone was slashed open by it before landing on the Water Dragon's head.

\*Hong Long\*

The Water Dragon was slashed into half. Nonetheless, the energy and frosty aura wasn't reduced, all of it struck the sword.

Cong Zhong Sheng felt another large recoiling force. His hand that was holding the sword trembled slightly. The surface of the sword was covered with frost. The Heavenly Earth Pure Water was extremely cold, its coldness was incomparable to any other

techniques that were of cold property.

\*Swoosh\*

It was the sound of another sword. There was a long sword in Jiang Chen's hand, it was the Heavenly Saint Sword.

The blood-red light of the sword turned into a ferocious Dragon Head. It was a domineering sword. When the Heavenly Saint Sword was drawn, who could dominate it?

“Old man, today I will let you know how fearsome I am.”

Jiang Chen shouted strongly. He stepped into the spatial passage using his Spatial Shift. His extreme speed brought him before Cong Zhong Sheng in a blink of an eye. The Heavenly Saint Sword slashed from the top as if it had descended from the heaven. Cong Zhong Sheng could feel the terrifying and destructive force from the sword, his face turned pale.

Cong Zhong Sheng started to feel regret in his heart. He regretted picking a fight with Jiang Chen. He was now terrified of Jiang Chen. He wasn't his opponent. As the saying goes 'a man who had mounted the tiger couldn't dismount in anymore,' he absolutely couldn't accept his defeat. If he admitted his defeat, he would be greatly humiliated.

As the chief steward, he couldn't afford to be defeated by this young man.

\*Keng\*

Two long swords collided with one another, making a great spark. Jiang Chen's entire body was glowing with golden light, his dark hair was dancing in the air like a true War God that had descended from the heavens. A slash from his Heavenly Saint Sword sent Cong Zhong Sheng more than a hundred meters away.

Without giving Cong Zhong Sheng a chance, Jiang Chen made another strike with his sword. His speed was so fast that Cong Zhong Sheng didn't even have the chance to catch his breath before receiving another strike from Jiang Chen.

\*Keng\* \*Keng\* \*Keng\*



# Chapter 641 - Slap The Face Hard

---

Swoosh

Jiang Chen's movements were too fast for a Third Grade Combat Emperor to react in time. When Cong Zhong Sheng realised that his own weapon was flung away from his hand, Jiang Chen's sword appeared near his neck. Cong Zhong Sheng was defenceless, and his sword was already in Jiang Chen's possession.

The Heavenly Saint Sword was shimmering with an icy cold light and released traces of murderous aura, shivering Cong Zhong Sheng's soul. Very frightening, this young man's too terrifying. Cong Zhong Sheng, a Third Grade Combat Emperor, wasn't his opponent at all. He was defeated easily. If the battle wasn't happening in Nebula Sect, he would be dead by now.

"No, not possible, not possible."

Cong Zhong Sheng stammered with fright. He had a million excuses, he could not believe what was happening, nonetheless, it was the truth. He, the chief steward and a Third Grade Combat Emperor, had been defeated by Jiang Chen.

In a moment of silence, everyone couldn't express what they had just seen with words. Their eyes were wide, staring at the two people standing in the sky. Not only the inner sect disciples who hadn't gone to Huang Ling Desert's expedition and the core disciples were shaken, but also the inner sect disciples who had already seen Jiang Chen's prowess during the expedition. None of

them had seen a person as strong as him.

The one armed Hu Song and his brother, Hu Lai, had been on the scene without anyone realising. The fact that Cong Zhong Sheng was defeated by Jiang Chen made the depressed Hu Song to cough out a mouthful of blood. After he returned from the battle, he and Cong Zhong Sheng planned to teach Jiang Chen a lesson by snatching his Emperor Pill. However, the circumstance turned into an unfavourable situation, in which Cong Zhong Sheng who was supposed to bully Jiang Chen was unexpectedly bullied by Jiang Chen instead.

“Brother, this man is too strong, even the chief steward isn’t his opponent, I think taking our revenge is not possible anymore.”

Hu Lai’s facial expression was disappointed and ugly, as he was just thinking about his Emperor Pill just now. It seemed that the pill would slip from his grasp for sure.

Hu Song didn’t say anything. He gritted his teeth with dissatisfaction, and reluctance.

Above the sky, Jiang Chen kept Cong Zhong Sheng’s long sword and grabbed his shirt and got down to the battle platform from the sky. The elders who stood there quickly moved away.

“Jiang Chen, you dare to disrespect the chief steward? You’re immoral!”

The Vice Chief Steward was enraged and stormed.

“Get lost!”

Jiang Chen turned and gave him a glance, then clamoured coldly. The vice chief steward’s anger was stifled, and didn’t dare to swear anymore. The new disciple in front of him was a mad man that dared to beat up even the chief steward. He was only the vice, if he had offended Jiang Chen himself, he would ultimately end up seriously injured.

“Jiang Chen, return me my weapon. You have disrespected me today, you’ve violated the law of morality. You will receive punishment from the sect.”

The chief steward said while staring at him.

\*Pa\*

As soon as his voice dropped, Jiang Chen slapped his face, and sent him wheeling in situ for three rounds.

“Jiang Chen, YOU!”

Cong Zhong Sheng was extremely mad. As the chief steward, being slapped by a disciple was the most disgraceful thing to ever happen.

Unfortunately, after he finished spelling the three words, Jiang Chen slapped him again with another palm. Then, Jiang Chen decided to lift him off the ground with one hand, while his other hand continued to slap his wrinkled face continuously. After tens of slapping, Cong Zhong Sheng's face turned into a bulging pig head with full of traces of blood.

“Another word will cause me to continue.”

Jiang Chen smiled mildly while looking at Cong Zhong Sheng's furious eyes. He had never showed any quarters to any of his opponents before. The reason why Cong Zhong Sheng was still alive was because he's one of the Nebula Sect, otherwise, he would have been killed already.

Cong Zhong Sheng felt really ashamed, spurring a mouthful of blood, but he didn't open his mouth to threaten Jiang Chen anymore. He wasn't stupid enough not to see how difficult, cruel, and aggressive this young man was. If he was cruel enough, he would continue to torture him for a day and night, and at that time, his shame would be unimaginable. Even in his current situation, it was enough to put the image of inner sect to shame and become a big laughing stock in Nebula Sect.

“Chief Steward, if I were you, I will immediately hand over the Emperor Pill to me.”

Jiang Chen said it solemnly before passing his weapon back to him. He wasn't interested in Cong Zhong Sheng's weapon at all. His Heavenly Saint Sword was incomparable to any ordinary Emperor Weapon.

Unwillingness welled in Cong Zhong Sheng's heart, but he knew that if he didn't take out the Emperor Pill, Jiang Chen wouldn't let him go.

Cong Zhong Shen turned his palm, and took out the last Emperor Pill, then threw it to Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen's face was full of delight as he released his grip off of Cong Zhong Sheng's shirt.

“Cong Zhong Sheng, as a lesson for you today: you are advised not to offend me. Of course, if you want to find someone that will avenge you, I'll accept the challenge.”

After speaking, his body swayed, leaving the battle platform, ignoring the eyes of the disciples, and striding out of the Martial Art Arena. Today he had just beaten up the chief steward, but he wasn't afraid of him taking revenge next time. The most important thing he needed to do now was to advance his grade, whoever stood in his way in the future would be eliminated for sure.

Cong Zhong Sheng stood on the platform while looking at the sky, and groaned before vanishing.

The disciples on the arena exchanged glances with one another, none of them thought that a new disciple would create such a mess in his very first day. The name 'Jiang Chen' would be a historical legend.

“Too domineering, if I have half of his domineering aura, I will have no regrets even if I die.”

“Stop dreaming, use your pee to see the true image of yourself. Wanting to compare yourself with brother Jiang? He can defeat a Third Grade Combat Emperor even if he is still a Ninth Grade Combat King, can you do that?”

“A newcomer has beaten up the chief steward so badly on his first day of arrival. It was a shaking scene, but this has violated the laws of morality, brother Jiang may be punished by the sect.”

“Damn the punishment! The sect won’t give a damn about it. Try to imagine how shameful it is that the chief steward, a Third Grade Combat Emperor, can’t even handle a Ninth Grade Combat King. Moreover, Jiang Chen haven’t acting impulsively at the time, it was the chief steward who denied his rewards. Also, there is no one that can defeat a Third Grade Combat Emperor while still a Ninth Grade Combat King like him. Do you think the sect will offend a monstrous genius because of a stupid chief steward?”

.....

Arguments were everywhere. Many of them felt that it was just right for Jiang Chen to beat up the old man. Not only would the sect allow him to do so, they would also pay more attention and respect to this young man. The sect knew very well the importance of a peerless genius, especially someone like Jiang Chen and Zuo Ling Er. The sect’s future would be placed on their hands in the time to come.

When Jiang Chen returned to his allocated place, Big Yellow

jumped out and came beside him impatiently, he asked, “Tell me quickly, how were you able to cover up your identity before the sect master?”

This was Big Yellow’s biggest question. The moment he was brought away by Nebula Kidd, he knew that Jiang Chen was finished. Since the Brilliant Mirror broke while checking him, his ulterior motive had been revealed. Nonetheless, Jiang Chen turned the situation around. He wasn’t hurt or anything. Instead, he was brought back by Nebula Kidd, and became an inner sect disciple. Big Yellow was eager to know what method did Jiang Chen use to get out of the situation.

“Didn’t Nebula Kidd say just now? It is an accidental problem of the Brilliant Mirror.”

Jiang Chen shrugged.

“Dang!”

Big Yellow rolled his eyes in disbelief. Only fools would believe Jiang Chen’s statement. Only the disciples who didn’t know the truth would believe his excuse. If he expected that such a terrible excuse could erase Big Yellow’s doubts, he was certainly mistaken.

“Fine, I have my own ways okay? Big Yellow, do you still remember Nan Bei Chao?”

Jiang Chen switched the topic, and knitted his eyebrow when he

recalled Nan Bei Chao.

“Nan Bei Chao? Is he the one that you shredded into half, but didn’t die? Why? Don’t tell me that the man appeared again?”

Big Yellow also had a deep impression of Nan Bei Chao as he was the most arrogant man in Qi Province.

“That’s right, Nan Bei Chao has come to Mysterious Domain. That man possessed the body of a Celestial Soul, thus he’s very difficult to handle. He also cultivates the Heavenly Monarch Art, the path of a Monarch, a conqueror’s path. His existence will stir up a massive bloody wave in any particular place he is in. Mysterious Domain won’t be peaceful anymore. Can you try to imagine what will he do when he finds out that I’m also in the Mysterious Domain?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“You already have the answer, he will kill you for sure. I think he must be so angry that he wants to peel your skin off.”

Big Yellow blurted his comments. He knew very well how much hatred Nan Bei Chao had for Jiang Chen. If it wasn’t for Jiang Chen’s interruption, he would have dominated the entire Qi Province, even the whole Eastern Continent. Therefore, at that time, meeting Jiang Chen was like meeting his bad fortune.

“The speed of growth of a Celestial Soul body is out of our



imagination. Nan Bei Chao is now a First Grade Combat Emperor, or probably a Second Grade Combat Emperor, or he has already advance to the peak of the Second Grade. He also has a White Tiger Divine Beast by his side, a Third Grade Minor Saint. We can already see how powerful he has become. I must rapidly advance my grade now, so that he and I can engage in a fierce fight in Mysterious Domain. I want to let him know that meeting me is his worst luck ever. Even if he is now at the Mysterious Domain, his fate will still be the same in the Qi Province.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes were sparkling with light. He had never looked down on Nan Bei Chao, and because of this, fighting him was really adrenaline rushing and always filled with excitement. He understood that his conflict with Nan Bei Chao didn’t include only two of them, it would be the entire Mysterious Domain.

...

# Chapter 642 - Stepping Into Combat

## Emperor Realm

---

“What did you say? Nan Bei Chao has kept a White Tiger Divine Beast?”

After hearing the four words ‘White Tiger Divine Beast’, Big Yellow exclaimed with shock.

“The White Tiger is one of the five Divine Beast. Its vein is above my grade and is comparable to a True Dragon. It’s rare, the king of millions of demons and a fine race. Say not about the its Third Grade Minor Saint level, a newborn White Tiger will never submit to humans.

Big Yellow was shocked because he knew very well the fine quality of Divine Beasts, they were unparalleled to any ordinary or special demons. They could become friends of humans but they will never be subdued. For instance, the relationship between Big Yellow and Jiang Chen was friendship or brotherhood, it wasn’t a master and servant relationship.

If Jiang Chen wanted Big Yellow to submit to him at the very beginning, they wouldn’t last until today. This was also the reason of his shock. The vein of a White Tiger was the most precious of all. How could a Third Grade Minor Saint Divine Beast submit itself to a First Grade Combat Emperor? It was just impossible.

“Nan Bei Chao possesses the body of a Celestial Soul, he is the soul’s reincarnation, he can’t be viewed the same with ordinary

people. Also, his relationship with the White Tiger may be like ours. At any rate, his appearance in Mysterious Domain won't bring peace."

Jiang Chen said. While digging out the background of Nan Bei Chao again, his heart turned sour because Nan Bei Chao wouldn't exist anymore if not for him. If it wasn't for him that unsealed the heavens with his sword, the Celestial Soul wouldn't have descended, and Nan Bei Chao wouldn't exist.

"I have never thought that the White Tiger existed in the Divine Continent."

Big Yellow murmured.

"Since the Celestial World's gate was slashed opened, the Divine Continent now isn't the same as before. Even a Saint has a chance to become a Celestial Being. Even your kind, the Dragon-Horse, exists. So the existence of the White Tiger doesn't surprise me."

Jiang Chen smiled. He could already sense the tremendous changes that would happen in this world overtime. In his previous life, the Divine Continent was merely an isolated small world and the gates to the Celestial World was closed. The resources and knowledge in the era were deficient, the number of geniuses wasn't many. Jiang Chen, as the Greatest Saint of the era hadn't even seen a Divine Beast, but he had an abnormal Divine Beast at his side now.

"Keke..."

Big Yellow chuckled.

“Since we are the enemy of the White Tiger, I won’t show mercy. At that time we’ll slaughter it, you’ll swallow its blood essence, and vein, then I’ll consume its demon soul. Wakaka...this is really exciting.”

Big Yellow laughed while separating the parts of the White Tiger to the both of them. He knew Jiang Chen had an extraordinary skill, he could absorb supernatural powers of any demons, and the terrifying powers of the White Tiger Divine Beast would be good for him. As for the demon soul of the White Tiger, Big Yellow would consume it to obtain great benefits.

\*Pa!\*

Jiang Chen raised his leg and it landed on Big Yellow’s head, “Please wake up, it is a Third Grade Minor Saint and you’re merely a Ninth Grade Demon King.”

It made Big Yellow speechless. It would only be a dream to consume a Third Grade Minor Saint’s demon soul with a Ninth Grade Demon King power.

“It’s just a matter of time. Dare to look down on master dog. I’ll retire now.”

Big Yellow shook his head, and ran to bed snoring in one of the

rooms in the compound. Jiang Chen smirked after seeing what Big Yellow did. It was a good sign that Big Yellow wanted to sleep. Now, Big Yellow felt the pressure from Nan Bei Chao and the White Tiger, and also Jiang Chen's advancement to Combat Emperor realm after consuming the Emperor Pill. This kind of pressure made him sleepy, and without a doubt, he would turn into a Demon Emperor after he awoke.

This was a strange, and the most abnormal way to advance one's level, making many people envy.

Now that Big Yellow went to sleep, Jiang Chen didn't want to waste any more time, and took out the Emperor Pill to refine it.

"With this pill, I can finally push my grade to the Combat Emperor realm. The White Tiger's demon aura in Nebula Kidd's body is too great. If it isn't for its aid, I won't be able to step into the Combat Emperor realm even with this pill given my pool of energy. Furthermore, both will enhance my foundation of energy. It is undeniably perfect."

Jiang Chen revealed a small smile. The matter of the Brilliant Mirror had brought him something unexpectedly good. His pool of energy wouldn't sustain for long. He wouldn't attempt to advance further into Combat Emperor realm if he didn't acquire the White Tiger's devil arua, even with the aid of the Emperor Pill.

The Emperor Pill was precious, and rare as the production of it was very difficult. It was very generous of Nebula Sect to offer three Emperor Pills as rewards. However, there was a limit for this pill: it was restricted to only Combat Kings, it had no effects on

## Combat Emperors.

Jiang Chen was now a peak Ninth Grade Combat King, allowing him maximize the effects of the pill. With the effect of the pill, he could easily condense one thousand dragon marks without a problem.

Without hesitation, Jiang Chen directly swallowed the Emperor Pill, and started casting the Dragon Transformation Art to refine it.

He didn't rush the process of his advancement. Anyway, he had a suitable place for refining, and no one would dare to come over and disturb him after the incident at the Martial Art Arena.

The Emperor Pill was strengthening his pool of energy. Stepping into the Combat Emperor realm would also allow him to have the same amount of pool of energy of Combat Emperors.

Two days had already passed, Jiang Chen was still refining in seclusion, while Big Yellow was still in the bed. In the inner sect, the disciples had been conversing about Jiang Chen beating up the chief steward amongst themselves. This was also happening in the other departments of the sect, making the entire sect informed about the major incident. Most of the core disciples were told that Jiang Chen had a monstrous talent, they wanted to see his prowess in person. Some even declared to have a battle with Jiang Chen, to teach him a lesson. It was the core sect after all, there were numerous geniuses in it, and you can't find one who wasn't proud and arrogant about themselves.

In the outer and inner sect, Jiang Chen had become most of the disciples' idol. They worshipped him, and hoped that one day they would also become as tyrannical as him. If not, their lives would be a waste, since they were men, and men needed a domineering aura.

There was someone who felt miserable about his life, and was very unhappy. The chief steward just stayed in his compound in these two days, not making even a step out of his room, and had ignored all the matters of inner sect within this period time.

It was shameful, he truly didn't have the courage to see anyone, and he had no idea where he should put his disgraceful face. His injuries had fully recovered. Since he was a Third Grade Combat Emperor, his recovery speed was faster, but the injury in his heart wasn't recovering as fast.

He was infuriated and had broken all the decorations in his room. When he thought of the name 'Jiang Chen,' he couldn't help gritting his teeth. Nonetheless, he knew very well that he wouldn't have the chance to take revenge on Jiang Chen anymore. Jiang Chen had obtained the Emperor Pill, and would advance to the Combat Emperor realm in no time. Then, he would become a core disciple which made his wish of vengeance impossible. If his stifled feeling was not released, it would cause him internal injuries.

When he was about to explode again, a person came in, he wasn't anyone but Hu Song. Besides his lost arm, all other injuries had already recovered.

“Chief Steward, you seem very angry.”

Hu Song saw the condition of the room and spoke.

“What did you came here for? I though you have gone to the core sect to register to become a core disciple? It was because of you that I have lost my face and don’t even have the courage to walk out of this door.”

Cong Zhong Sheng said harshly when he thought about how he was beaten up by Jiang Chen like a dog, and felt an urge to spurt blood. This was all because of Hu Song. If it wasn’t for him, he wouldn’t offend Jiang Chen.

This chief steward had become very timid after the fight. He didn’t dare to speak, and complain to the upper ranks when he was beaten up by a new disciple, since that would bring endless shame to himself. As a dignified chief steward but was beaten up like that, how could he find the courage to complain to the upper ranks? Wouldn’t he need to find to a hole to put his head in like an ostrich while walking out of the room?

“Chief Steward, can you swallow your dissatisfaction?”

Hu Song said it coldly.

“I can’t, but so what? My face has been put to shame profusely. That man is a freak of nature. A genius like him will certainly be nurtured greatly by the sect. I advise you not to offend him in the



future.”

Cong Zhong Sheng waved his hand in disapproval. Although Jiang Chen had just recently arrived in Nebula Sect, his power was too great and too hard to go against.

“If our anguish can’t be released, we won’t be able to raise up our head for our entire life. If someone like Jiang Chen has grown to a certain extent, do you think we’ll have a status in the sect?”

Hu Song said coldly.

“What are you going to do?”

Cong Zhong Sheng asked. He wanted to take his revenge more badly than Hu Song but he knew he couldn’t afford to do that.

“It doesn’t require us to do it. You should know of Man Hong of the core disciples right?”

Hu Song smiled a little.

“You mean that mad man, Man Hong? That man is already a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor, and has scary combat strength. People who fight him will be crippled, because his technique is very cruel.”

Cong Zhong Sheng was the chief steward after all, that’s why he

knew some powerful figures.

“That’s right, my connection with brother Man Hong is good. You and I will offer him some benefits, and let him avenge us. If Jiang Chen offends him, we can already imagine what will happen next.”

Hu Song revealed an evil smile.

“Will this work?”

Cong Zhong Sheng frowned.

“If it is others, it won’t work, but it is Man Hong. He is the most arrogant man. After knowing about Jiang Chen, he has declared that he will wait for Jiang Chen to become a core disciple, and make him walk in the sect with his knees, which is favourable for us. Jiang Chen is powerful, but he is no match for Man Hong for sure.”

Hu Song smiled with confidence.

“ALRIGHT! Damn Jiang Chen! I want to let him know that even if he is a genius, he won’t be able to continue his arrogance in Nebula Sect.”

Cong Zhong Sheng said while gritting his teeth.

## Chapter 643 - Fury Rushed To The Sky

---

It was the third day of Jiang Chen's refining. His body had now fully absorbed the effects of the entire pill. Dragon marks were forming in his body one by one. A layer of golden light wrapped his entire body with its radiance, making him look absolutely mystical.

“Now is the time to advance into the Combat Emperor realm.”

Jiang Chen opened his eyes wide, then released two streams of brilliant light, and the spatial zone around him trembled. A vast amount of Heaven Rank Restoration Pills were consumed like being burned. The purest energy was absorbed by Jiang Chen. Advancing from Ninth Grade Combat King to the First Grade Combat Emperor required a huge amount of Heaven Rank Restoration Pills to replenish his lost energy. Only Jiang Chen could bear such a huge rate of consumption. Anyone who witnessed this would be shocked.

Very quickly, forty thousand dragon marks were fully condensed. The effect of the Emperor Pill was enough to let Jiang Chen advance from the Combat King realm to the Combat Emperor realm. At this moment, his body was covered with a blood red dragon scale that seemed frightening and godly.

At the same time, a disastrous Qi descended from nowhere. That was the Qi of tribulation. Jiang Chen already expected it. When he was still in the combat soul level, the tribulation Qi had already accompanied him. It advanced from a Third Minor tribulation to Sixth Minor tribulation. This tribulation Qi for the Emperor realm

would probably be a Ninth Major tribulation.

Jiang Chen muttered his excitement, seeing such great a circumstance. His Dragon Transformation Art was too scary, he was destined to exist as a being who defies the heavens. On this future path, he would encounter more tribulation than the previous, but it was enormously beneficial to him.

If he didn't die in the tribulation, he would undergo transformation. Every tribulation brought him great transformation, it was like being rinsed by the thunderbolt, making his body become stronger, and more powerful,

After the advancement, Jiang Chen still didn't left his place and continued his cultivation in seclusion. It was like he had touched something, giving him the reason to keep on pushing himself to continue. He continued to cast the Dragon Transformation Art. After a few times of transformation of the skill, its speed became so fast that no ordinary skill could match it.

\*Roar\*

Accompanied with the continuous Dragon Transformation Art, Jiang Chen heard an ancient dragon roar from a deep part of his soul again. That was the roar of the dragon ancestor which shook people's soul.

Jiang Chen was attracted by the roar. He could feel an explicable familiarity from the sound. At this point, he could feel that the Dragon Transformation Art was racing as fast as the blood in his

veins, and was completely combined as one unit. Gradually, he saw a silhouette in his soul, it was a man, no, it was a dragon, not really, but it should be a man and a dragon.

The image became clearer but not perfect yet. The head was a man and the body was a dragon. Jiang Chen could see it clearly. That face was his, it was carrying a blood red dragon scale with a blood red eyes, very terrifying and his entire body was full of blood red dragon scales. He was three meters long, both of his hands became dragon claws which was razor-sharp.

Jiang Chen tried to solidify the image. It wasn't an easy task, but he still tried very hard. He was very clear in his heart that if he could completely congeal this image it would bring so much benefits, it might start another transformation of the Dragon Transformation Art.

At this moment, three silhouettes appeared outside Jiang Chen's compound. These three men had a cold smile. The two of them were Hu Song and Hu Lai, the other one was sturdy and strong, the uniform of the Nebula Sect he wore seemed very tight as his muscles was pushing towards the shirt. He had the eyes of a fierce leopard, and his beard was thicker than Hu Lai's, he wasn't someone to pick a fight with by just his look alone.

“Brother Man, this is it. We'll go in after you. You can say that you are here to see the great genius of Nebula Sect, which doesn't sound very offensive. When he sees us coming in, he will certainly be infuriated, and will charged at you. When an inner disciple hit a core disciple, it is considered a disrespect towards a core disciple. At that time, won't that mean that he is seeking death? Brother

Man will have a perfect excuse to to fight him then. If you can break one of his arm, humph...”

Hu Song’s tone was violent and cold. He felt incredibly angry whenever he saw his sleeve rippling in the air. If this revenge was not taken, he wouldn’t have a good sleep.

“Humph! Even if he is a genius, in my eyes, he is merely an unimportant figure. Cong Zhong Sheng is really a garbage, he couldn’t even handle a disciple. I think his position as chief steward had to be forfeited.”

Man Hong made a cold humph, definitely looking down on Jiang Chen. This was a tyrannical and cruel man who was determined to eliminate the domineering aura of a new disciple.

“Go and knock the door.”

Hu Song said to Hu Lai.

Hu Lai noisily walked to the big door of the compound and raised his leg to kick it. Was this even called knocking? This unintelligent brawny man was obviously using Man Hong to help him take revenge.

\*Hong\*

The big wooden door was broken into smaller parts after the strong kick. Jiang Chen was not supposed to be interrupted when

he's cultivating, but the sudden disturbance caused the image to disappear completely. It would be impossible to find it again.

\*Swoosh\*

Jiang Chen opened his eyes which released a strong murderous aura, even the spatial zone discharged a spark. Boundless fury rushed out of his body, the force pushed everything around it, even the pillars of the compound was lifted.

Jiang Chen was enraged, he had never been enraged as such before. He knew how precious and invaluable the state he was in just now, it was the same as Tyrant's enlightenment which could only be met by chance. Moreover, this chance was probably for his Dragon Transformation Art to undergo another transformation that would bring him countless advantages. He would finish the dragon transformation, and he would become a half human and half dragon. His combat strength would increase by ten times, while his physique would be as hard as steel in that state.

He was totally immersed in the state. He would only need half an hour more to complete the congealment but because of Hu Lai,, he had been deliberately awakened from the enlightenment.

"I don't care who it is, but I will make you pay a very high price for that."

Jiang Chen's eyes turned crimson, totally filled with fury. There was no way that he could remain calm about it as enlightenment can only be met by chance. Once he failed to achieve the

enlightenment, he would not be sure if he can enter it next time. He didn't know how long it would take for the next transformation of the Dragon Transformation Art.

The house had collapsed. It was a big movement that slightly shook the entire inner sect compound, it had caught many disciples' attention and they all looked in this direction.

“What happened? Why would the house collapse?”

“That is the compound of brother Jiang. No idea what has happened. Let's go and find out.”

“Mother god, are they fighting again? Seems like the sect will never be peaceful after his arrival.”

.....

At this moment, the inner disciples were walking to Jiang Chen's compound one by one. There had to be a big trouble for the compound to crumble so badly. He had already created a messy trouble the very first day he came. First, it was the shattering of the Brilliant Mirror, and second, he had beaten up the chief steward, and after three days of silence something big happened again.

The chief steward shifted his gaze to Jiang Chen's direction, and his mouth revealed a cold smile.



“The fight begins.”

The very arrogant Hu Lai who was standing in the compound got muddled when the building collapsed all of a sudden. Even Man Hong and Hu Song got muddled by the sudden collapse, not knowing what that dude inside was doing. Didn't he just kick and broke the big door? How could that cause the collapse of the whole building?

\*Swoosh\*

While they were still in a stunned state, a silhouette raced out like a lightning, and stopped in front Hu Lai.

Hu Lai saw Jiang Chen's cold and bloodthirsty eyes which frightened him. He felt like he had entered into hell and was surrounded by frost.

“Was it you who kicked the door?”

Jiang Chen's tone was rough.

Hu Lai nodded consciously.

\*Pa\*

Jiang Chen's palm landed on Hu Lai's face, all of the teeth in his mouth was slapped out. He fainted instantly. Jiang Chen knew

well how much loss was created by Hu Lai's kick, it was irreparable.

“Jiang Chen, stop!”

Hu Song shouted. He had planned to bring Man Hong and tried to trigger him to fight him but he hadn't thought that Jiang Chen would turn into a state of frenzy, and slapped Hu Lai hard at the beginning.

\*Roar\*

Jiang Chen completely ignored Hu Song and Man Hong's existence. He raised Hu Lai from the ground and threw him out. He then punched strongly on Hu Lai's Qi Sea while he was in mid-air.

\*Ka Cha\* \*Argh...\*

Hu Lai wailed in agony that it made people's hair stand on end. He flew away as if he was bombarded by a big missile. Hu Song's facial expression changed. He could see what happened. That punch instantly disabled Hu Lai's Qi Sea. From now on, Hu Lai had become a cripple.

“Jiang Chen, you...”

Hu Song's body was shivering. This was a complete mad man. He crippled a person because someone had broken his door. This was

too cruel as it was merely a wooden door. How could he be raging because of one door?

He didn't know the fact that if they were an hour later, Jiang Chen wouldn't be as furious as now even if they burned his whole compound. They should blame themselves for coming at such a wrong time. The one who kicked the door was Hu Lai, if it was Hu Song, he would face the same consequence. Of course, it wouldn't make any difference even if it was Hu Lai's brother who made the interruption because Jiang Chen's fury was now unstoppable.

# Chapter 644 - Completely Crippled

---

\*Puff\*

Hu Lai's body fell from the sky more than six hundred meters away. A big pit was formed on the ground. Many disciples that were on their way to Jiang Chen's compound saw it, and halted their steps. After seeing Hu Lai's pitiful condition, they breathed in cold air.

"Look, that is Hu Lai. It seems that he's hit by someone, but who?"

"Isn't this obvious? It must be that the Hu brothers themselves who have gone to Jiang Chen to cause trouble again, and was beaten up for it, but his attack is a little too heavy. No, come quickly, try to observe his Yuan Force, it is fading away. My god, his Qi Sea is shattered."

"My goodness, brother Jiang is too cruel, he even crippled Hu Lai. To a cultivator, losing the Qi Sea is worse than death. Hu Lai has been crippled and will forever be a crippled man."

"He got himself into it as he already know that he can't disturb brother Jiang again. Brother Jiang had no problem beating up the chief steward, so why would he care about him? He must have done something that infuriated brother Jiang badly. Or else, brother Jiang wouldn't have launched such a cruel attack."

"Let's go, and find out. Hu Lai wouldn't dare to come alone."

There must have been some stronger people. Probably, Hu Song has invited some core disciples for the battle.”

.....

The crowd in the inner sect compound went into frenzy. Jiang Chen was too cruel to cripple Hu Lai. This type of incident will only happen in the life-and-death arena. Those disciples who followed him knew what kind of person he was. He could be wildly arrogant but he was a tolerant person. Now, the compound had collapsed, and Hu Lai was crippled by him, they could already imagine how furious he had become.

Jiang Chen’s fury was still boiling hot, and was rushing up to the sky. He needed these two individuals in front of him to pay a devastating price, or else he had nowhere to contain his fiery fury that was caused by his failed enlightenment.

“Jiang Chen, you are truly bold to cripple a person before me. Who gave you the right?”

Man Hong raged while pointing at Jiang Chen’s nose.

“Brother Hong, we have to cripple him today to avenge my brother.”

Hu Song gritted his teeth, as he whispered to Man Hong. Nevertheless, he didn’t dare to make a step forward, purely because Jiang Chen was too frightening. He wasn’t Jiang Chen’s

opponent at all. Also, he could sense Jiang Chen's enhancement after obtaining the Emperor Pill. The gap between them would only become wider and eventually, it would be impossible for him to catch up.

“Who are you? State your name!”

Jiang Chen said coldly. He could feel the powerful aura of the man accompanying Hu Lai who is a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor. If it was before, he wouldn't be able to fight him, but as he had already stepped into the Combat Emperor realm, he needn't worry about a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor.

“Jiang Chen, this is brother Man Hong, a core disciple. He originally wanted to pay you a visit to take a look at the rumored rare genius. However, he never thought that you are so unreasonable, crippling my brother just because he kicked your door. You're too cruel, and exactly the same as the people of the Devil Religion.”

Hu Song said sternly as he thought about his crippled brother. He couldn't express his anger as the loss was too huge.

The disciples came just in time as Hu Song was speaking, their eyes turned wide as crippling someone because of a broken wooden door was indeed overly sensitive and unreasonable. Nonetheless, they could feel the anger burning inside Jiang Chen that didn't make sense. A simple wooden door would not infuriate him to such an extent.

“Cut your crap. Man Hong, chop off one of your arm and I will clear off your debts.”

Jiang Chen said.

\*Wah\*

After Jiang Chen finished his sentence, it brought another wave of shock to the crowd. Those who were walking, staggered and almost fell to the ground. They knew Jiang Chen was not just very arrogant but also had the capability to defeat even the chief steward. However, wanting Man Hong to cut down one of his arms was too much.

Who was Man Hong? He was a renowned core disciple, a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor and a great genius. He was incomparable to the chief steward at all. Even if Jiang Chen had advanced to the Combat Emperor realm, he was still merely a First Grade Combat Emperor. How could he be Man Hong's opponent? Now, he even demanded him to leave Man Hong's arm, this was totally a bullshit!

“What did you say?”

Man Hong was stunned instantly, and seriously doubted if his ears had problems.

“I said, leave one of your arms. Otherwise, your fate will be the same as Hu Lai.”

Jiang Chen's tone was cold. Once one made a mistake, they had to bear the responsibility. These three people had just made an unforgivable mistake.

“Haha...Presumptuous, Jiang Chen. You are wildly presumptuous. You're even more arrogant than me. In Nebula Sect, you're the first who dared to speak to me in such a way. Your words are enough for me to cripple you today.”

Man Hong laughed as if he had heard the funniest joke ever in this world. A new First Grade Combat Emperor demanded him to leave his arm here or else he would be crippled. What kind of joke was this?

“In that case, let's have a battle.”

Jiang Chen swooshed and flew high up in the sky. There wasn't anything Man Hong had to say, he had to accept the challenge to prove his strength to everyone.

“Today, I'll teach you a lesson about your arrogance, no matter how strong you are, there's always someone stronger than you.”

Man Hong barked, and flew up to the sky with a sway of his body. He stood in the opposite direction of Jiang Chen. The inner disciples raised their heads to look at them in the sky, seeing that the battle was about to begin, their faces turned intense.



“What happened? Why would Jiang Chen and Man Hong engage in battle?”

“Someone said that Hu Song has asked for Man Hong’s help to deal with Jiang Chen. Hu Lai has been crippled, and now, the two of them want to have a battle. Jiang Chen is already a Combat Emperor but Man Hong is a Fourth Grade and is very famous amongst the core disciples. Everyone knows about his cruelty. In addition, he is a very difficult opponent to fight.”

“That’s right. He is a genius Fourth Grade Combat Emperor in the core sect, and is very different to any ordinary cultivators. He’s totally different to the chief steward. I’m afraid that even if brother Jiang has stepped into the Combat Emperor realm, he isn’t going to be his opponent.”

.....

Many were shocked with the battle that was about to happen. Nonetheless, they had already anticipated that the two of them would fight. The thing that they still couldn’t understand was what had made Jiang Chen so angry that he had even crippled Hu Lai. It seemed that the matter wasn’t as simple as it looked. The three of them must have done something bad that infuriated Jiang Chen madly.

“Brother Hong, cripple him!”

Hu Song gritted his teeth and shouted.

\*Hong Long\*

At this time, another loud noise rumbled from another room in the compound. That room faced the same result as Jiang Chen's, it collapsed and crumbled. A big sturdy yellow dog bounced out from the building. It was hard to know his expression, but his eyes were surely filled with fiery anger.

“Which JACKASS disturb my precious slumber?”

Big Yellow barked. He felt extremely offended when he was disturbed by someone. Jiang Chen sensed that Big Yellow had completed his advancement from the Qi he was releasing, he was now a First Grade Demon Emperor.

“Big Yellow, cripple Hu Song for me, make him a disabled man.”

Jiang Chen shouted at Big Yellow.

“Alright.”

Big Yellow locked down his target as he turned into a golden light and charged forward, appearing before Hu Song in the blink of an eye.

“Damn you dog, go and die!”

Hu Song was enraged. Even a dog dared to declare to cripple him

in front of everyone, this was a total insult to him. He casted his Frenzy Quake Hand, and struck at Big Yellow.

Big Yellow didn't even try to dodge the attack, instead, he collided into it with his head.

\*Peng\* \*Ka Cha\*

A long deep crashing sound was created, Hu Song's palm was crooked as a result of the impact. He was then sent 50 meters away, and created a big hole on the wall of the other compound.

“Daring to disturb master dog's slumber? Die!”

Big Yellow was violent in his attack. He knocked Hu Song's palm. Hu Song had lost an arm and was still under the effect of the Taboo Pill, but even if he was at his maximum capacity or a Second Grade Combat Emperor, he was still not Big Yellow's opponent.

Big Yellow's body had the vein of a rare Divine Beast, the vein of the Dragon Horse. He had just advanced his grade to the Demon Emperor realm, which was totally unparalleled compared to Hu Song.

Big Yellow didn't stop there, he used his entire body to press against Hu Song like a big mountain, releasing his full Qi. His Qi was enough to scare Hu Song to death. Hu Song was now lying on the ground without any strength left to struggle or defend.

\*Ka Cha\*

Big Yellow opened his big mouth and bit on Hu Song's remaining arm as he tore it with force. A tearing sound was heard, and an arm was separated from the body. It was bloody enough to give everyone the feeling of disgust that raised goosebumps.

\*Argh\*

Hu Song's piercing wail made everyone to cover their ears. Most of the disciples who had witnessed the horrid scene had their faces pale. The dog was too brutal. Hu Song was finished.

Big Yellow wasn't interested to care about his enemy's wails and continued to pierce through Hu Song's body with his razor-sharp teeth. Blood was splashing everywhere the sharp teeth pierced. Jiang Chen had given the order to cripple this man, and Big Yellow would do it. Nevertheless, his way of crippling differed from others. He wasn't going to only cripple his enemy's Qi Sea, he would use another barbarous way which was bloodier and a few hundred times more torturous than destroying the Qi Sea.

The work was a piece of cake to Big Yellow. Hu Song was now lying on the ground motionless. His entire body had become very bloody. From top to bottom, it was all wounds and blood, nauseating anyone who watched it. Now, they shifted their gaze to the violent big yellow dog with terrified eyes.

# Chapter 645 - Violent And Domineering

---

Hu Song was so pitiful to be completely humiliated by a dog. Most of the people had acknowledged Big Yellow's ability as they had already seen what he could do. Previously, when he was at Huang Ling Desert, he could already fight a First Grade Devil Emperor when he was merely a Ninth Grade Demon King. Now that he had advanced to a First Grade Demon Emperor, it would be simple for him to fight or even defeat Hu Song.

Most of them heaved a sigh, but no one showed sympathy to Hu Song, because they felt that he got himself into trouble deliberately. Jiang Chen had injured the chief steward but he was neither being punished nor taken by someone from the sect. It meant that the chief steward was nothing compared to a rare genius like Jiang Chen. Regardless of that, the Hu brothers still tried to enrage Jiang Chen without heeding the warning, wasn't this equal to seeking death? Jiang Chen's means of killing was cruel, showing that he wasn't a being that anyone could afford to offend.

This was all due to the lack of understanding of one's limit and ability.

After Big Yellow completed the task given by Jiang Chen, he simply went somewhere on the ground and looked up to Jiang Chen and Man Hong. He didn't even bother to look at the immobile man anymore.

At the moment, Jiang Chen and Man Hong hadn't started fighting yet. Their eyes were fixed on Big Yellow and Hu Song

below them. Jiang Chen smirked after seeing Hu Song's condition, he was not even concerned about Hu Song's health. He thought that Hu Song deserved it for interrupting him in the middle of his meditation, which obstructed the process of his enlightenment. Such a punishment was deemed to be light given the crime he had committed. If this didn't happen in the sect, the Hu brothers would be dead by now.

“Jiang Chen, your ways are very cruel to our fellow brothers. Don't you have any respect for the rules of the sect?”

Man Hong barked at Jiang Chen. He admitted to himself that he was famous for his fierce actions in the sect. His techniques were cruel, but it still couldn't compare to Jiang Chen's. The young man in front of him got infuriated and violent, and proceeded to cripple the offender just because he kicked the door. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's actions weren't any different from a murderer. Hu Lai had been entirely crippled due to the serious injury of his Qi Sea, the pain was even more excruciating than death. The same thing happened to Hu Song. Perhaps, his situation may be a little different as he was already a Combat Emperor, which was a lot better than a crippled man. Though he couldn't advance his grade further even if he was healed, but at least he could stay in that level for the rest of his life.

“I'll accept whatever the sect will do to me, but these are all caused by you guys. There isn't an exception as to whether you're a core disciple or not, you'll still face the same result as those two.”

Jiang Chen's tone was cold. He knew the exact intention of Man Hong's arrival today. That was to fight him. In that case, he didn't

need to beat around the bush but just simply start the battle. If Man Hong wasn't following them here, the two Hu brothers wouldn't have enough courage to step into Jiang Chen's compound, it was also due to Man Hong's arrival that caused Jiang Chen to lose the rare opportunity of enlightenment. It was an enlightenment that could transform his Dragon Transformation Art. After the transformation, he could easily advance his grade to Second Grade Combat Emperor or even to Third Grade Combat Emperor.

Now, all the effort he had put went in vain. He might not be able to encounter an opportunity for such a transformation even if he reached the Second Grade Combat Emperor. In fact, the next time it would appear was unknown or it could never appear again. In other words, Man Hong was the main culprit of all these happenings. Jiang Chen wouldn't let this opponent comfortably leave after committing such a serious crime, he must definitely pay a great price for it.

“Jiang Chen, your mouth is quite big. A newly advanced First Grade Combat Emperor dares to speak to me like that? The fact that you're a super genius doesn't reduce the gap of power between you and me. Today, I'll take action on behalf of the sect, and let you understand the sect's rules. You've seriously injured our brothers, thus you'll be punished heavily.”

Man Hong raged. He released the Qi of a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor from his body. His eyes were locked on Jiang Chen. He had never seen such an arrogant young man before. There were many geniuses in Nebula Sect, especially in the core sect. There were different kinds of proud disciples but they were all so full of themselves and he was also one of them, but Jiang Chen's

behaviour was the most presumptuous and violent. Especially his words and actions. Now, there were a lot of disciples standing below them. If he didn't teach Jiang Chen a lesson today, he wouldn't have a place to put his face anymore.

\*Hong\*

Jiang Chen didn't bother to reply to Man Hong's foolish statement. He casted his True Dragon Palm and a giant blood red dragon claw appeared in the sky, and charged at Man Hong. Forty thousand dragon marks were vibrating in Jiang Chen's body, continuously providing him unlimited energy. After becoming a Combat Emperor, the speed of conversion of the Dragon Transformation Art's energy increased drastically, thus enhancing his combat strength to a scary level.

“Heavenly Horse Meteor Punch!”

Man Hong shouted. He waved and made a punch. His punch was very powerful and was as fast as meteor showers, colliding with True Dragon Palm in the blink of an eye.

\*Hong Long\*

Two terrifying attacks collided together, crumbling the spatial zone instantly. A cold and chilly wind leaked out of the cracks of the spatial zone, making the onlookers feel extraordinarily chilled.

\*Deng\* \*Deng\*



Under the great force, Man Hong was forced to make two steps backwards to find his balance. On the contrary, Jiang Chen didn't move, he just stood there unaffected.

“What?!”

The scene made Man Hong exclaim in shock, he couldn't believe his eyes. Jiang Chen was just a newly-advanced First Grade Combat Emperor, but his combat strength was already terrifying. One attack from Jiang Chen made him unstable and pushed him back.

“Scary. In only three days, brother Jiang has become so powerful that he can push Man Hong, a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor, back.”

“I think that this is normal. Everyone knows how ferocious and extraordinary brother Jiang is. He was able to defeat the chief steward who is a Third Grade Combat Emperor when he was merely a Ninth Grade Combat King. Now that he has stepped into the Combat Emperor realm, defeating a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor isn't impossible for him. Brother Jiang is not only a being that can initiate tribulation, but he is also a truly monstrous talent. Man Hong is incomparable to Jiang Chen at all.”

“Let's see, Man Hong isn't an easy opponent either. He is a core disciple after all. Even if brother Jiang can defeat him, crippling him won't be as easy as he said.”

.....

The onlookers were shocked once more. Jiang Chen was too powerful. His speed of growth was too fast. When Lan Yi first saw him in Huang Ling Desert, he was a mere Eight Grade Combat King. Within a few days, he had surpassed ninth grade and ultimately reached First Grade Combat Emperor. This power was enough for Jiang Chen to fight against a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor. A monstrous genius like him couldn't be described by the word 'scary' as it would probably shock everyone in the world.

“Humph!”

Jiang Chen made a cold humph. He was at his peak combat capacity, and his fury had reached the sky. His left hand had condensed the Fire Dragon Seal, the scorching heat of the flame had heated up the nearby spatial zone. A living and active Fire Dragon was circling in the air. In his right hand, it was the Water Dragon, which was bone-stingingly cold. These skills were of different properties but they appeared at the same time in both of his hands.

\*Roar!\*

Jiang Chen shouted along the two dragons' rumbling roar. Two true dragons as long as a hundred meters lunged at Man Hong from different directions. One was a Fire Dragon and the other was a Water Dragon, both of these extreme temperatures collided and created an explosion in the spatial zone.

Man Hong's face changed as he could already feel the scary Qi coming out from the two dragons' bodies. He finally understood that he had underestimated Jiang Chen. He was a monstrous genius who couldn't be judged by logical means. Now, Jiang Chen launched these two attacks which were totally of opposite properties, and it terrified him completely. Not only had he never seen such a heaven defying attack, he had also never heard about it before.

However, it didn't matter if he knew about it or not. Jiang Chen's attacks had already reached him. The Five Elements Combat Dragon Seal was scary. The combined attack of both completely cultivated Fire and Water Dragons made anyone feel defenceless.

Man Hong didn't attempt to delay his response. He waved his arm, and a very sharp Combat Axe appeared in his hand. He raised the Combat Axe and cleaved at the Dragons. He knew very clearly that only his axe could handle Jiang Chen's attack, none of his other techniques could match with his.

The giant axe gave off an extremely brilliant light, covered with lines of talisman marks that were full of combat aura.

**\*Roar\***

The combined attack of the two dragons were dreadful to the enemy. After the collision, it exploded instantly, releasing a destructive energy of light. It exploded as a result of the great impact between the two opposite attributes' attack, the explosion was powerful enough to crumble a big mountain.

\*Bang\*

Under such an impact and explosion, Man Hong was sent flying with his hand still holding his axe. He found his balance after he flew three hundred meters away. His fierce leopard eyes had changed, they were now filled with terror.

Jiang Chen's combat strength was mighty and merciless. At the moment Man Hong was flying away, Jiang Chen turned into a stream of light as he lunged towards Man Hong's direction. An azure spot was forming under his feet as he activated the skill Azure Dragon's Five Steps. With his current fearsome combat strength, he could easily handle a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor. If he chose to use his Saint Bone, he could confront an ordinary Fifth Grade Combat Emperor. In other words, Jiang Chen had reached another scary level after his advancement to the Combat Emperor realm.

The Dragon Transformation Art became scarier as his grade advanced further. Jiang Chen could finally realise this. His recent advancement made him strong enough to face even a Fifth Grade Combat Emperor.

Man Hong was terrified. Before he could even react, Jiang Chen had already lunged in front of him with the Azure Dragon's Five Steps. Sadly for him, Jiang Chen had already made the fifth step at the time he caught up with Man Hong. The scariest step of all of was the fifth step. Considering Man Hong's current condition, he wouldn't be able to defend himself against it.

Hah!

Man Hong snarled, the only thing he could do now was to helplessly raise his Combat Axe to defend against the attack. He finally experienced Jiang Chen's true might. Man Hong was a person who was well known for his violence in Nebula Sect. Today, he had met someone who was even more violent than him. Now, he started to curse Hu Song and the chief steward for getting him into this.

\*Dong\*

The fifth step was made on the Combat Axe with the force of a big mountain, straight away stamping Man Hong from the sky after he made an anguished cry.

# Chapter 646 - Cripple The Chief Steward Too

---

Man Hong looked like he was no match for Jiang Chen at all. His body flew away uncontrollably because of the strength of the fifth step. Under everyone's gaze, Jiang Chen made another move. He casted the True Dragon Palm which caused a giant blood red dragon claw to descend from the sky as it turned into a blood red prison cell that held Man Hong captive.

“No, it isn't possible. He is only a new First Grade Combat Emperor, how can he be this strong?”

Man Hong was seriously injured and he was spurting blood continuously. The blow to his body wasn't as bad compared to his mentality, as he was not too far from mental breakdown. He had never seen someone as ferocious as Jiang Chen. His Fourth Grade Combat Emperor strength and status as one of the great geniuses of Nebula Sect didn't make much difference in this fight.

\*Swoosh\*

Jiang Chen made another stride and came before Man Hong. Without saying a word, he violently struck Man Hong's Qi Sea.

When Man Hong realised Jiang Chen's intention, he snarled loudly and wailed with all his might. An unprecedented fear overwhelmed him instantly, and it was only now that he remembered what Jiang Chen had said. He finally realised that Jiang Chen wasn't kidding when he said that he would cripple him.

He recalled about the incident involving Hu Lai and imagined himself being a crippled man in the future. The feeling he had now was like falling down from the summit of the pyramid as it was a depressing feeling that no one could understand.

Unfortunately, his fear didn't do much help to change what would happen to him. Even if he begged for mercy or knelt down for a second chance or even willingly cut off one of his arms, it wouldn't stop Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen had never given anyone a second chance. Man Hong had brought considerable losses to him, losses that couldn't even be estimated. Jiang Chen had already entered seclusion and was about to congeal the image in his deeper soul as the Dragon Transformation Art was going to undergo another transformation. He knew how much the transformation could possibly enhance his power and grade by one or two. Also, the Dragon's strength was the scariest power of all.

Jiang Chen resented Man Hong so much that he wanted him to pay a high cost for what he had done.

\*Bang\* \*Argh\*

Along with Man Hong's wail, Jiang Chen's palm slapped his Qi Sea. A force like a golden drill bore through Man Hong's Qi Sea, crippling it completely. A surge of excruciating pain made his entire body twitch, as he cried in agony. His was now filled with pain, trouble, unwillingness and most of all, insanity. He felt that

he was going insane. A Fourth Grade Combat Emperor became an ordinary man, this was obviously a terrible blow for him.

He could feel that the Yuan Force from his Qi Sea was dispersing and dissipating, as he spurted yet another big mouthful of blood.

“Jiang Chen, you, you...dared to cripple me...?”

Man Hong’s face had turned crooked, he couldn’t accept his current condition.

“You should be grateful that you’re still alive. Tell me, besides Hu Song who asked you to come here, who else was involved? Was Cong Zhong Sheng involved too?”

Jiang Chen proceeded to grab Man Hong’s collar as he pulled him closer. He didn’t like to leave unsettled problems or enemies in every battle. To be able to earn a reputation in Nebula Sect, he must let everyone know about his tyrannical techniques that would indicate that no one should offend him. He had to eliminate the person who kept troubling him to avoid any future troubles.

Seeing Jiang Chen’s cold and determined eyes, it somehow made Man Hong feel like he was going to the hell. His gaze didn’t give Man Hong even the courage to lie. He endured the pain as he stammered, “I...It was the chief steward and Hu Song who bribed me to deal with you. Those two bastards had placed me in this miserable predicament.”



Man Hong was about to cry. In Nebula Sect, he was a violent man. His violence could terrify the majority of the disciples. Sadly, he did not expect to meet someone who was even more violent than him today. He had the urge to kill Hu Song and the chief steward. If it wasn't because of them, he wouldn't pick a fight with Jiang Chen and his end wouldn't be like this.

Too bad for him, though there were many pills and medicines in this world, including panacea and elixir but, there wasn't a pill for regret, and it was also already too late for that.

Jiang Chen dropped Man Hong, allowing him to free fall from the sky. His hand was still holding onto Man Hong's Combat Axe when he saw Yu Wei not too far away from him. Yu Wei was already halfway into the Combat Emperor realm while they were still in Huang Ling Desert, and after obtaining the Emperor Pill three days ago, he became a Combat Emperor.

"Yu Wei, congratulations. This is my present for you."

Jiang Chen threw the Combat Axe to Yu Wei. Yu Wei's eyes glittered and his face was filled with surprise while he was receiving the gift. His eyes however, were focusing on the half-dead Man Hong and he couldn't help but heave a sigh. Jiang Chen had reached a stage where he couldn't reach him anymore.

Yu Wei had just stepped into the Combat Emperor realm and he had already obtained an Emperor Weapon. Nothing could make him happier than this. If it was before, he wouldn't dare to receive it, but now, it was different, Man Hong had already become a crippled man. Man Hong wouldn't make good use of it even if the

Combat Axe was returned to him.

“Thank you brother Jiang.”

Yu Wei cupped his fists towards Jiang Chen.

“Tell me, where is the chief steward?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“He’s over there.”

Yu Wei pointed in the direction where the chief steward was accommodated.

“Humph! Old man, we’ll have to settle this today.”

Jiang Chen made a cold humph as he turned into a stream of light and flew towards the pointed direction. The disciples who were watching the battle were shocked by Man Hong’s current condition. The crowd bursted into another noisy whispering and talking after seeing Jiang Chen leave in search for the chief steward.

“My goodness, what’s that guy trying to do? He’s finding the chief steward? Is he going to cripple him as well? He is absolutely lawless.”

“His technique is too violent. No one can afford to offend that guy. Whoever does though will be their bad luck. Man Hong was famous for his violence amongst the core disciples but they were miles apart compared to brother Jiang’s. A dignified Fourth Grade Combat Emperor was crippled just because he willed it. If he’s going to cripple the chief steward as well, this matter will turn very ugly and serious. At that time, the upper ranks will start to interfere with this matter.”

“Let’s go, we have to go there as soon as possible to check it out. Now that the Nebula Sect has one more violent person living in it, it seems that there won’t be any peace in the sect anymore.”

.....

No one wasn’t shocked anymore at that moment. Jiang Chen had stirred up their desire to fight that was burning within them. His way of fighting was too cruel. He had already crippled three men. Not only that, he didn’t even show any quarters to a core disciple. Now, he was even looking for the chief steward, which was something which they hadn’t expected.

Jiang Chen was undeniably brutal, but they didn’t feel bad about it because that was the reality. Only the powerful could engulf the weak. When others had stepped on your head, wouldn’t you defend yourself too?

“Old dog, get the hell out from your building!”

From above Cong Zhong Sheng’s compound, a sudden wave of Qi

rushed towards his building accompanied with a shout that went through the entire Nebula Sect. He paced back and forth inside his room. He had seen the scene where Man Hong was crippled by Jiang Chen. It was undoubtedly dreadful. Nevertheless, he never thought that the incident would make Jiang Chen come and seek for him.

“Jiang Chen, you...what did you come here for?”

Cong Zhong Sheng's tone was shaky. The memories of the incident three days ago were still lingering in his mind. Now that Jiang Chen had reached the Combat Emperor realm, he wouldn't even stand a chance against him. If the battle were to start, Jiang Chen could do as he pleased.

“Humph! Why would a respected chief steward collude with a core disciple to trouble me? Do you want to bully me so badly? Three days ago, I've said that you must never come and offend me, but you still dared to. In that case, I will cripple you and let the sect reelect a new chief steward.”

Jiang Chen's voice was loud enough that it shook the sky. He clenched his fist as he casted True Dragon Palm. The blood red dragon claw turned into a prison cell as it descended from the sky, trapping Cong Zhong Sheng completely. Then, Jiang Chen exerted his palm and pulled Cong Zhong Sheng upwards.

“Jiang...Jiang Chen, you, you...don't cripple me. I admit my mistakes. From now on, I vow not to trouble you again.”

Cong Zhong Sheng was so scared that he begged for mercy instantly. He didn't want to be a crippled man. He had spent half of his life to obtain such a cultivation. Crippling him would be a life worse than death.

“You don't have a choice.”

Jiang Chen remained ruthless as he smacked Cong Zhong Sheng's Qi Sea with his palm. A strong Qi was pushed into Zong Sheng's Qi Sea, bursting all the Qi inside into nothing.

\*Ahhhh\*

Cong Zhong Sheng let out a mournful cry. The pain he was currently suffering from his shattered Qi Sea wasn't bearable to any ordinary beings. Nonetheless, his physical injuries weren't comparable to his mental injuries, as the heavy blow to his mind made him feel like living and dying at the same time.

The scene was witnessed by everyone, they were all focusing on the moment when Jiang Chen hit the chief steward. Their mouths were wide open. The chief steward who was supposed to handle all the matters of the inner sect had been crippled by a new disciple. It was absurd to hear and impossible to believe if one hadn't witnessed it with their own eyes.

“My god! Something terrible has happened, this is obviously going to get ugly. The chief steward has also been...This is really going too far!”

“Yeah, getting rid of Man Hong is still fine as the elders of the sect can view it as a conflict between disciples, but the matter has developed into a serious case. It will definitely involve the other stewards of the sect. Since they are ranked highly in the sect, crippling a chief steward is equal to belittling the rules of the sect. The nature of both scenarios are totally different.”

“Overly brutal and domineering. This matter will definitely alert the upper ranks, I have no idea how they will handle this.”

.....

Crippling a core disciple and an inner sect chief steward obviously defied the rules of the sect. In this world, only Jiang Chen had such boldness.

Jiang Chen ignored his opponent's agony after his attack and threw Cong Zhong Cheng down from the sky. He was finally able to release a part of his anger after doing all these attacks, and the circulation of his Dragon Transformation Art turned smoother. If Hu Song did not interrupt his enlightenment today, the result wouldn't be like this.

# Chapter 647 - No Punishment

---

Jiang Chen was overbearing. He was both emotionless and ruthless. This had always been the course of his actions when dealing with his enemies. Due to that, his enemies wouldn't have any favourable outcome every single time. He would give no quarters, even to his fellow Nebula Sect disciples. Since his compound was destroyed and he had lost his cultivation area, he and Big Yellow stayed in the chief steward's compound without hesitation. This place was better than his previous compound.

As for the chief steward, he had become a piece of garbage which was left outside the building, with nobody caring about his current condition.

Jiang Chen closed the door of the compound as he did not want to see anyone. He then proceeded to continue his seclusion. He attempted to recall the image of his dragon form again so as to allow his Dragon Transformation Art to undergo another transformation. As he recalled how the rare opportunity was ruined by Man Hong and the others, he couldn't help but feel a surge of fury.

The onlookers had already left the scene, but the fact remained that the Nebula Sect would not be peaceful ever again. The incident had become very serious. There's no possible way for them to remain calm since it was the first time that such an incident happened. Cong Zhong Sheng should probably be the most pitiful steward in the inner sect now.

As for the remaining inner sect stewards and elders, would they

dare to offend Jiang Chen now? They didn't even have the courage to condemn him. They knew that they couldn't afford to offend such a violent person. The consequences of doing so were unbearable for them. The only thing that they could do was to report the incident to the upper ranks of the sect.

“This is horrendous, an absolute catastrophe. They were all crippled. They are better off dead than being alive.”

“Too ruthless, we can't afford to offend such a person. Those who do so would be seeking death for themselves.”

“However, I heard that this brother Jiang is really a domineering individual. He has plunged the entire Liang Province into chaos. A monstrous genius like him will always become the source of trouble regardless of where he goes. That kind of invincible feeling is really good. If I can become like him, having the bearings of a supreme being, then my life will be worthwhile.”

“Stop dreaming and look at yourself in the mirror. Someone like you wants to compare yourself with him? I don't think that it's even possible in your next life.”

.....

Jiang Chen's name had spread all over Nebula Sect immediately, from the outer sect to the core disciples. None of them didn't know about him, even those powerful Combat Emperor geniuses gave their thumbs up whenever Jiang Chen's incident was talked about. They weren't as good as him when they were at his level.



In the compound, Jiang Chen was simply sitting on a green rock while knitting his brows.

“What happened to you, Little Chen? Your actions were too violent, I can’t believe that you really crippled them all.”

Big Yellow couldn’t help but ask out of curiosity. He knew Jiang Chen’s personality very well. He could be cruel and ruthless to his enemy, but due to his tactful behaviour, he wouldn’t act too violently in the sect. He probably would find a chance to settle the debts with Hu Song outside the sect, but instead, he did it all inside the sect.

“They are lucky that they are still alive. I was in a state of enlightenment at that time, and I could’ve achieved the second transformation in under an hour. I could’ve acquired power and techniques that I couldn’t even imagine and advance into the second or third grade of the Combat Emperor realm. It was the three of them who intruded into my room which caused me to awaken from that state, disrupting the process.”

Jiang Chen said as his eyes gleamed with a cold light. He had just entered into a state of enlightenment and that state was no different compared to Tyrant’s case. It would only happen by chance. The more effort you put in searching for it, the harder it is to appear.

“Dammit! Those bastards, I should have killed them.”

Big Yellow changed his attitude after hearing what Jiang Chen said. He finally understood why Jiang Chen had acted so ruthlessly. The loss he suffered was too big. The state of enlightenment was uncontrollable. An ordinary person wouldn't even have a single enlightenment his whole life. Last time, due to Tyrant's enlightenment, his cultivation increased instantly to the peak of the Ninth Grade Combat King, and he would probably be a Combat Emperor by now.

A loss like this was inestimable. Big Yellow felt that if he was in Jiang Chen's shoes, he would bite them all to death on the spot.

"I won't be concerned about those types of people, but it does slightly trouble me sometimes. They're akin to flies. They are harmless but they are unceasingly annoying...The best way to solve the problem is to pinch the flies to death so that they can't trouble you anymore."

Jiang Chen explained.

"Nonetheless, one of them is a core disciple, which means that he isn't ordinary. Today, you have crippled him. That will certainly cause a major movement in the sect. I'm afraid that the upper ranks of the sect will seek for you."

Big Yellow was concerned for Jiang Chen as he was thinking that this dude had just arrived in the sect but had already created such a disastrous and unprecedented incident, which meant that he wasn't paying any respect to the sect. The upper ranks wouldn't definitely allow him to continue being like this.

“Don’t be concerned about that. The upper ranks wouldn’t dare do anything to me. Continue your cultivation in peace. I want to go into seclusion again to see if I can find the inspiration again.”

Jiang Chen said calmly. Nebula Kidd had known about his real identity. Even if he had caused chaos within the sect, Kidd wouldn’t do anything to him.

In the inner sect, a few elders led by the vice chief steward carried the crippled chief steward, Man Hong, and the two Hu brothers to the Elder’s Hall. At the moment, the seven Feng Yun brothers and Hua Gu Yi were also present. They were the most powerful elders who took care of every matter regarding the sect.

“Elders, we seek your judgement. This Jiang Chen is really ferocious and absurd. It was only a small conflict but he has crippled them all. A violent person like him isn’t any different than the Devil Religion cultivators. Jiang Chen doesn’t even respect the rules of the sect. If he is not punished severely, his behaviour will become even wilder and totally out of control in the future.”

The vice chief steward said with a mournful tone.

“Yeah...this is too wild. He, as an inner sect disciple, doesn’t even respect us. He ignores all the rules and regulations of the sect. If he continues to be like this, where’s the dignity of Nebula Sect going to go to?”

“I beg you elders to sentence him according to the crime that he has committed. Teach him a lesson.”

“I beg the elders to avenge the chief steward. He, a Third Grade Combat Emperor, was crippled by Jiang Chen just like that, meaning that half of his life is over.”

.....

The elders felt equally helpless which was evident on their face as they were gritting their teeth as if they were the ones who were crippled by Jiang Chen. In truth, it wasn't that they hated Jiang Chen, it was the fear of him. If there was such a wild disciple like him who existed in the inner sect, the stewards wouldn't even be able to manage their day-to-day task anymore.

“Such an unfilial disciple, he is absolutely lawless. Elders, what are your thoughts?”

Feng Yun Yi slammed on the rock table with his palm, creating a crack on it.

“His boldness is a little over the top, and he is extremely presumptuous, but I have to say that he is a genius that we probably won't see in ten thousand years. Try to imagine someone who is able to defeat a Third Grade Combat Emperor while being only a Ninth Grade Combat King? Now that he has reached the First Grade Combat Emperor, he has no problem getting rid of the Fourth Grade Combat Emperor like Man Hong. A genius like him is needed really badly by the sect. It's a waste to not accept him as a

personal disciple.”

Feng Yun Yi said with his big mouth. Not only did he not blame Jiang Chen, he even praised him.

“Geniuses are indeed hard to find, but he doesn’t fear the consequences of breaking the rules. If he doesn’t receive the necessary punishment, how do we maintain our reputation as elders? As for accepting him as a personal disciple, a wild and intractable youth like him won’t even be willing to call us as his master.”

Feng Yun Liu said.

“Hua Gu Yi, what do you say?”

Feng Yun Yi looked at Hua Gu Yi.

“Say what? These few dudes sought for troubles themselves. It was because they weren’t capable enough. A dignified chief steward was beaten up by a new disciple just like that. This is truly shameful. You still dare to have the face to report this situation to me. Jiang Chen has been interrogated by master personally and that proves that there is no problem with him. He is surely loyal to the sect. So, do you all want to punish this genius just because of them?”

Hua Gu Yi was a barbaric lady but her words were forthright. Of course, she stood on Jiang Chen’s side. Part of the reason was

because she loved her new personal disciple, Zuo Ling Er, and as Jiang Chen's relationship with her was extremely good. If Jiang Chen were to be punished, Zuo Ling Er would be in pain as well. Hua Gu Yi really doted on her and didn't want her to get hurt.

“Yes, geniuses are hard to find but that doesn't mean that they can be lawless. He has been acting lawlessly since he arrived in the sect. He's totally looking down on our sect's rules. A genius like him must be punished for his mistakes, at the very least he must learn some lessons from his mistakes.”

“That aligns with my thoughts. If no punishment was given to him, we'll all lose face. He has crippled a chief steward as soon as he reached the First Grade Combat Emperor. I'm afraid that we will be nothing to him once he has grown to a certain level.”

Another two from the seven Feng Yun brothers also made a comment about the incident. They agreed that Jiang Chen should be punished for his crime as the incident had already spread all over the sect.

“All you elders, please, be the judge for us. If you don't pass judgement to him, who will dare to take care of the inner sect in the future?”

The vice chief steward was about to cry.

“That's enough. Seeing your stupid face, are you even an elder? Where's your bearing as an elder? It sickens me. If you all aren't capable, I can replace all of you with only one word.”

The temperamental Hua Gu Yi couldn't continue to watch it anymore. She cowed them instantly, making the vice chief steward shiver in fear and looked at the Seven brothers.

Feng Yun Yi frowned and murmured.

“If we're to punish him, what kind of punishment should it be?”

While they were still discussing about how to punish Jiang Chen, a silhouette appeared in the Elder's Hall like a ghost. The silhouette looked illusory, had a green robe, owning an extraordinary Qi, and his eyebrows were carrying a formidable arrogance.

“Master.”

Seeing his arrival, everyone in the sect bowed quickly and payed their homage to him. This was the Divine Sense of Nebula Kidd, no one dared to ignore it.

“Jiang Chen is a rare genius that appears every ten thousand years. Our sect must nurture him with good care. I'm informed about this incident and it definitely isn't his fault.”

After finishing his words, Nebula Kidd's silhouette disappeared.

# Chapter 648 - Unlocking The Forbidden Area

---

Nebula Kidd's appearance startled all eight elders. To them, the sect master had always been in the highest position in the sect. Even though he held that position, he would always busy himself with cultivation. This meant that he wouldn't even spend a little time to bother about the matters of the sect. He didn't even pay any attention to the core disciples, much less the disciples of the inner sect. Today, he emerged because of Jiang Chen, it could only mean that Jiang Chen was held in high regards by him.

Of course, Nebula Kidd had to pay a lot of attention to Jiang Chen. He was, after all, the reincarnation of the Greatest Saint. Now that Jiang Chen had entered the sect, it was both beneficial to him and also for Nebula Sect itself. Jiang Chen's techniques wasn't something that they could measure.

Furthermore, the Greatest Saint had always been his idol. He had reasons to believe that Jiang Chen would walk the path of superiority in this life. It was a great honour to be able to follow such a man like Jiang Chen and by following him, not only would he would be able to obtain unimaginable benefits, he might even have the chance to become a Great Saint in the future.

The vice chief steward was stunned. Now, none of them would dare to speak a word about Jiang Chen's punishment anymore. Since the sect master himself had appeared to protect Jiang Chen's safety, it meant that he was determined to nurture this monstrous genius. If they were to continue their accusations, they would get themselves into trouble. This was because no one could oppose



Nebula Kidd in the sect.

“Why are you all still here? Master has already given his decision. The next time you see Jiang Chen, you must stay as far away as you can. Don’t try to offend him again. If Cong Zhong Sheng didn’t deliberately provoke Jiang Chen at the beginning by forfeiting his Emperor Pill, today’s incident wouldn’t have happened.”

Hua Gu Yi said with an unfriendly tone.

“That’s right. Jiang Chen can be wild and ruthless, but according to my knowledge, it was Cong Zhong Sheng, Man Hong and the Hu brothers who intentionally sought a fight with Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen didn’t even have any intention to cause trouble. In addition, a respectable chief steward like him who was beaten up horribly by a disciple still dares to come and file a case against Jiang Chen. Isn’t this called what they call ‘being shameless’?”

Feng Yun Wu said. He had clearly changed his stance in regards to punishing Jiang Chen. The seven brothers of Feng Yun weren’t stubborn fools. They understood their master’s will. Nebula Kidd appreciates Jiang Chen which meant that no one should dare to offend Jiang Chen anymore.

Punishing Jiang Chen wasn’t possible anymore, but that doesn't mean that they would help him. Fights amongst the disciples were usually none of their concerns. So, if Jiang Chen were to create a mess involving the core disciples in the future, the only thing that they would do was to act blind about it.

The seven brothers of Feng Yun and the others nodded. They had no choice regarding this but to nod since Jiang Chen was a disciple who was personally protected by the sect master. Even if they were the prestigious elders, they wouldn't dare lay a finger on him as they still had to think about the future. It was just like what Hua Gu Yi had said, how could they risk a rare genius because of a few garbages.

Finally, the vice chief steward carried the already crippled chief steward and proceeded to leave the Elder's Hall to return to the inner sect.

“Vice Chief Steward, what should we do now?”

An elder asked.

“What can we do now? Either we offend Jiang Chen all the way or we don't offend him at all. He is under the protection of the sect master which means that we can't afford to offend him. Even without the sect master's help, we still can't offend that man. The chief steward is a good example of that. Anyway, Jiang Chen is already a Combat Emperor, so he will be transferred to the core sect a few days from now. The inner sect can finally regain peace after sending that evil star away.”

The vice chief steward said. If they couldn't get rid of him, then they could only avoid him.

In two days' time, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow had already completely occupied Cong Zhong Sheng's compound. It was just

like the doves who had invaded a wounded magpie's nest. Currently, the inner sect was restless.. Everyone was waiting for the higher ups to pass judgement onto Jiang Chen as many of them had seen the vice chief steward bringing the chief steward to the Elder's Hall to file a complaint against Jiang Chen.

It was disappointing that they hadn't received any news from the Elder's Hall after two days. No news of chastise. There was not even any words of condemnation from them, as if it was nothing for them to lose a chief steward.

“Did you all see that? The eight elders are clearly standing on Jiang Chen's side. They don't even have the slightest opposition against him.”

“This is rather strange. He had already caused such chaos which meant that the Elder's Hall should have at least said something about it. The strange thing is that they didn't. It was as if nothing happened.”

“Isn't this logical? Like I said, Jiang Chen is a very rare genius. None of us can be compared to him. The sect will be more than happy to have such a rare genius. Why would they condemn Jiang Chen? Even though they already know that Man Hong and the chief steward had been crippled by him, they are just a bunch of cripples now. The sect will never punish a genius just because of them.”

“This is the reality of the world. Ability and capabilities are the best bargaining chip in anything, even if something is considered lawless. A genius like brother Jiang coming to our sect is certainly

our honour. The sect has to gingerly nurture his talent.”

.....

Many people were immersed in the topic. The reality had always been like that. The greater you are, the more people would respect and take care of you. On the contrary, if Jiang Chen had bore the oppression of the chief steward quietly, not only wouldn't he be sympathized, he wouldn't even get respect from other disciples.

During these two days, Jiang Chen remained in seclusion inside his room. The bored Big Yellow was wandering aimlessly in the inner sect as he flirted with pretty girls.

“Hi Beauty! Come and have a talk with me about life.”

“Pretty, I see that your breast size is too small. Master dog has a secret that can double the size, want to try?”

“What? You look very familiar, I have no idea where we have met before. Hey, don't go...”

.....

Big Yellow was walking around the inner sect. Both of his legs were straightened, trying to walk around like a human. Every time he saw a female disciple, he would flirt with them which made a lot of them not dare to walk out of their rooms. Many girls had rated Jiang Chen lowly because of Big Yellow. They could already

imagine the relationship between this dog and its master. The lustful dog wouldn't make the master look any better.

Of course, in many female disciples' heart, Jiang Chen was still very admirable. Despite the fact that he wasn't really a nice guy. If he were to give them a glance or two, they would feel extremely lucky. As a girl, who wouldn't want to find someone as good-looking and as strong as Jiang Chen, full of husky masculinity from top to bottom?

In these two days, none of the girls entertained Big Yellow. He felt very disappointed and went back to the compound as he looked at himself in the mirror.

“Dammit, a bunch of girls who doesn't have good taste! Master dog is truly full of power and grandeur, a truly magnificent being. Why can't I find someone who would talk to me? This is a failure, an absolute failure.”

Big Yellow sighed every time he paused. The mirror was the best way to measure one's beauty. The longer he looked in the mirror, the more attractive and satisfied he felt. He felt that he was the most handsome being in this world. Even if he was a dog, he felt compelled to praise his own looks. Automatically, he knelt down and knocked his head on the ground before the mirror a few times.

‘I admire you, I extremely admire myself.’

This scene was accidentally seen by the just awoken Jiang Chen, as he automatically forced out the saliva from his mouth and

almost spurted blood. His leg flew and landed on Big Yellow's head.

“Pariah dog, can you not be so in love with yourself?”

Jiang Chen felt speechless towards Big Yellow's action, but Big Yellow was a fine being which gave Jiang Chen even more ways to critique his faults.

“You told me that master dog is very handsome, but why are the female disciples running away from me as soon as they see me?”

Big Yellow spoke sternly.

Jiang Chen rolled his eyes after hearing this. He had already known what Big Yellow did in the past two days without a shadow of a doubt. He must have been flirting with the girls in the sect. He imagined the words that Big Yellow spoke to the girls and couldn't help but to grab Big Yellow's ear. “Why can't you just stay obedient in the sect? My image is ruined because of you!”

“Screw your image. Your current reputation is infinitely good. When the girls hear your name, their eyes will glitter with admiration. I think that you should get rid of all of the girls with just one word. We're males after all! We can use the number of girls we have to prove what we have achieved.”

Big Yellow showed a face that meant that he was knowledgeable when it comes to women, and bitterly educated Jiang Chen about

it.

“Shove off, I don’t want to speak to you.”

Jiang Chen was speechless.

“Oh, I saw a group of old men carrying the fainted chief steward to the Elder’s Hall to file a complaint against you, but two days have already passed but nothing was heard, this is rather strange.”

Big Yellow couldn’t help but blurt his thoughts out when he thought about it.

“There’s nothing strange about it. They are crippled now, why would they punish me just because of a few cripples?”

Jiang Chen’s face was filled with confidence. He had already anticipated that this would happen. Even if the eight elders were really here to punish him, Nebula Kidd would appear to stop them.

“You are always perfect in your calculations. What about your seclusion? Any results?”

Big Yellow asked.

Jiang Chen shook his head and let out a sigh.

“Enlightenment only happens by chance. I was disturbed last time and it will be more than difficult to re-enter it.”

Jiang Chen tried very hard in the past two days, trying to get a better look of the image of his dragon form. Sadly, he couldn't even get a blurry figure and eventually, he gave up on it. Every time he thought of this, anger would rush to his head and made him want to beat up Man Hong and the others again. It was truly infuriating.

“That state depends on chance and luck similar to Tyrant's. When the time comes, you must not resist it. You've been disturbed this time, so you have to wait for the next.”

Big Yellow simply blurted out what he wanted to say as he wasn't the one who lost the enlightenment. Nonetheless, he had a point. What else could Jiang Chen do? Should he beat up Man Hong and the rest of them to their deaths and then continue to beat their corpses after they died? It still couldn't compensate the loss in any way.

The next day, a piece of news spread all over the sect. The Death Mountain, which was one of the Eight Forbidden Places in Divine Continent would open in ten days' time. The five major powers of the mysterious domain had to assign one young disciple to train and toughen themselves up in the Death Mountain. This news created a wave of excitement among the disciples.

There were Eight Forbidden Places in the Divine Continent. They were located in eight different domains. The Divine Continent was made up of these eight major domains and the Death Mountain



was one of the Forbidden Places that was located in the Mysterious Domain.

# Chapter 649 - We Can't Go, Not Without The Monk

---

The Death Mountain had already existed in this world even longer than Jiang Chen's very existence, having at least a few thousands years of history.

“‘Death Mountain,’ just the name alone is already horrifying.”

Big Yellow said as he looked towards Jiang Chen.

“Do you know anything about the Death Mountain?”

In Big Yellow's heart, Jiang Chen was a peerless being as there was nothing that he wouldn't know, that included the knowledge of the Divine Continent. Big Yellow had faith that Jiang Chen would definitely have the answers to all the questions.

“The Death Mountain has existed in this world long before the Greatest Saint was born. I heard that there's a super large sect in the Divine Continent called the Colossal Sect. At that time, the Divine Continent wasn't merely a separated land between the major domains and the Pure Land. The Colossal Sect just perished within one night and no one knows the reason why. Thousands of disciples are buried underneath the mountain. As the grieving aura left by the dead bodies are too thick, many experts attempted to find out what actually happened, but they all died there. Therefore, it was called Death Mountain from thereon. There's a permanent formation that was created by the lives of the Colossal Sect's elders. Not even a Great Saint can unseal it, and many have

already died due to the formation.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Since the formation is so deadly, why do they still ask us to go inside, to die when it opens after ten days?”

Big Yellow was confused.

“That formation was created due to the foundation of Heaven and Earth. It is even connected to the terrifying Seven Stars. However, the formation will have a weak phase every thirty years. Many major powers picked this day to unlock the Death Mountain, and begin exploring to find unknown treasures that lied underneath the mountain. Although the treasures have been sealed by the Colossal Sect a long time ago, it is still drawing a lot of attention from the masses. Seems like in ten days, the weak phase will begin.”

Jiang Chen said. Previously, when he entered the Death Mountain, he had obtained some benefits. When he became a peerless Great Saint, he immersed himself into Martial Arts. At that time, all he wanted to do was to open the Celestial World’s gate and he had already lost interest in the Death Mountain. Since then, he hadn’t entered the mountain again. Thus, he had no idea about the secrets that lied within the mountain. However, the legend was right, there wasn’t much to explore in the mountain.

“It has been so many years. Despite it only being opened every thirty years, all the treasures within it must have already been

taken away.”

Big Yellow curled his lips, already losing interest about the mountain.

“You’re wrong. There’re still a lot of spatial zones within the Death Mountain. Either they are overlapping each other or they keep on switching coordinates. Also, the long period of closure will cause the emergence of many magical potions and elixir. The treasures inside the mountain cannot be estimated.”

Jiang Chen said as he too felt very interested in the Death Mountain.

Big Yellow’s eyes sparkled after hearing Jiang Chen’s explanation. He was especially interested in precious items since he had the ability to sense their existence. Since a lot of treasures were not yet discovered beneath the mountain, he should try his luck there.

“If that’s the case, we must go in there to try our luck. However, our strength isn’t enough yet. If there’s a group of Minor Saint cultivators inside, do we even stand a chance to get the treasure?”

Big Yellow asked.

“It is impossible for all the treasure to be discovered by them. If there is a Minor Saint cultivator who enters the mountain, his aura will activate the formation which, in turn, will also lock the Death

Mountain again. For those who wants to enter the mountain, this is without a doubt a catastrophe. Thus, the five major powers won't allow any Minor Saint experts to enter it. The decision of who will enter still relies upon the sect's hand. Come on, let's go and find out."

Jiang Chen said. He only understood a portion of the Death Mountain. His knowledge about it wasn't updated since a hundred years ago. Perhaps there might have been some changes in the mountain. Nonetheless, he had to hear what the sect had to say about the conditions to enter the mountain.

At the inner sect's Martial Art Arena, many disciples were discussing about the opening of the Death Mountain.

"So the forbidden area, Death Mountain, only opens every thirty years. It is finally our turn. It will be our honor to explore it. I heard that the mountain contains three different levels of spatial zones. With our Combat King level of strength, we should be able to enter at least its second level."

"This is certainly a rare opportunity to train and explore. There's a rumor that the Death Mountain was once occupied by a super large sect, and it became a forbidden area after the sect perished. There are a lot of treasures inside, but it is very dangerous to venture into it. Despite the fact the Death Mountain will be in a weak phase after ten days, the danger inside won't be reduced. Once we get there, we have to be extra cautious."

"We'll depart after ten days time. We've to prepare well. Every time the mountain is unlocked, it will be crowded with cultivators.

Besides the five major powers, there will still be many minor powers and sect-less cultivators that will enter the mountain in an attempt to discover any lost treasures. When that time comes, the situation inside the mountain will be chaotic.”

.....

Everyone was discussing about the Death Mountain. This was a matter that only happened every thirty years. The five major powers didn't monopolize the Death Mountain. They opened it to the public so that even a normal cultivator without a sect could enter. There were some lucky cultivators who obtained something great inside, and turned into an impressive person. There were also some unlucky people who died there and was turned into dark souls.

The mountain really deserved its name 'Death Mountain,' the whole mountain was filled with a dense death aura. Nevertheless, this didn't stop the cultivators from venturing into it. Many of them risked their lives to explore the mountain. To the major powers, this was an 'on the verge of death training' that would allow their disciples' ability to enhance drastically. As the saying went, 'those who survive are the winners.' Those who couldn't, would perish inside the mountain.

Lan Yi and Lin Kang were also present at the arena. When they saw Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, they quickly greeted them warmly. The crowd went into silence and stopped all their conversations when they saw Jiang Chen, and their eyes were filled with respect and fear.

“Brother Jiang.”

Many people greeted him with a respectful tone, no one dared to miss their chance to pay homage to him. Many disciples looked highly upon Jiang Chen after the battle in the Huang Ling Desert. He had also crippled the hateful chief steward and Man Hong when he arrived in the sect, the incident had made them admire him.

As for Lan Yi, she felt very awkward to speak to Jiang Chen after witnessing his violent techniques in the battle, she somehow feared him now.

“En, it seems that you all have to fully prepare for the trip to the Death Mountain. Your preparation must be more than perfect as the reason why they named it one of the forbidden areas is because there are just too much unknown danger that lies within it. Besides that, we even have to deal with the other major powers’ disciples and also a few other cultivators who may stab us at our backs. This trip to the Death Mountain is a matter related to the entire Mysterious Domain, we can’t afford to have any mistakes.”

Jiang Chen reminded everyone with a smile on his face. They could not believe that this was the same man who had a very ruthless expression on his face three days ago while crippling others. This was due to the fact that his current expression made him look very attractive.

“Thanks for your reminder, brother Jiang. I think that you must also be going to the Death Mountain. As long as we follow you, we won’t be afraid of anything.”

Someone said. They suddenly felt relieved after seeing Jiang Chen's smile. The entire atmosphere instantly became less tense. They began to understand that Jiang Chen was only cruel to his enemy, but he was very approachable to his allies.

“When I arrive, I won't have the time to help you all. Even if that's the case, you don't have to be too worried about that. If you see the Dark Devil Religion or the Tan Family, just mention my name. I have a connection with the young master of the Dark Devil Religion, and the Tan Family's young master, Tan Zhi Hao, has saved my life once in a critical moment. You can all choose to ally with them.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Brother Jiang, the Dark Devil Religion is evil. Our relationship with them is never good.”

Lin Kang said it warily as he felt that it was twisted to ally with the Dark Devil Religion.

“Humph! In my eyes, those people in the Dark Devil Religion are a lot better than those of the righteous sects. Even though the Dark Devil Religion teaches their students to be evil and violent, they are still not forbidden ally with. You all have to act according to the situation. If any conflict happens between you and them, use my name or the name of their young master, Han Yan.”

Jiang Chen said.



“Brother Jiang said this for our own good. Everyone should listen to brother Jiang so that we won’t have any problems in there.”

Lan Yi said loudly.

“Exactly. We’re all viewing brother Jiang as our leader now.”

Someone said.

“Lan Yi, is there any condition to enter the Death Mountain this time?”

Jiang Chen asked her.

“There is, the main condition is that the disciple’s grade must be in between Combat Soul Realm and the Eighth Grade Combat Emperor and if they satisfy the criteria, they can choose whether or not to participate in the expedition to the Death Mountain. They have to consider the consequences of allowing high grade cultivators to enter the mountain since that will cause the mountain to be sealed again. Thus, the highest grade that one can have to enter is Eighth Grade Combat Emperor, anyone with a higher grade than that isn’t allowed to enter.”

Lan Yi said.

“Eighth Grade Combat Emperor.... It seems that it will be very

competitive.”

Big Yellow mumbled.

“Competition is fun, isn’t it?”

Jiang Chen smiled. If it didn’t even pose a challenge, wouldn’t it be pointless for him to go there?

If it was in his past life, he wouldn’t even be interested in the Death Mountain. This is because the treasures that he used to have in the past was just too much, but it was a different case now.

His treasures were left in the deepest region in the Saint’s Cliff which meant that he couldn’t temporarily enter it. This had stirred up his interest in the Death Mountain.

“Although Brother Jiang is strong and can defeat a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor, there are still others that you cannot belittle. There are a lot of geniuses in the core sect, especially the disciples of the Freedom Palace, Skyhill School, Tan Family and Dark Devil Religion. They are definitely parties that we can’t afford to underestimate.”

Lan Yi reminded.

“En, I know. You all should prepare.”

Jiang Chen nodded as he left with Big Yellow.

“Little Chen, there are only ten days’ time, what do we do now? Wait here?”

“Let’s go and find Tyrant. We cannot go into the mountain without him. That dude has activated all his potential relic power after being enlightened. I believe that he is a Combat Emperor now.”

Jiang Chen smiled.

“Keke, we haven’t met him for a long time. Now, I missed that shameless monk a little.”

Big Yellow chuckled.

Later on, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow left Nebula Sect and headed for Ran Feng Monastery. They weren’t interested in being on a team with their fellow sect members. All they wanted to do was to enter the Death Mountain with Tyrant.

# Chapter 650 - Shadowy Killer

---

The Ran Feng Monastery looked the same as it did previously before it was destroyed. It was exactly the same building as before. After Tyrant had stayed in the monastery, he had been in a position that would receive privileged treatment from both the abbot and the Zuo family members, with none of them daring to show the tiniest hint of disrespect to him.

The Zuo Family couldn't forget the great kindness of Tyrant's master. Now, Tyrant's appearance had brought another great help to them. They were unable to repay the kindness that the pair had provided them. Thus, Tyrant's decision to continue his meditation in the Ran Feng Monastery was certainly their honour.

\*Hu... Hu...\*

Exactly at noon, the scorching and hot sun was shining upon the land as the dark clouds were thousands of miles away from the clear sky. Not even a mild wind existed in the air. Suddenly, a golden light rushed out of a room in Ran Feng Monastery, creating a blazing heat wave above the building and the sound of 'Hu... Hu...' could be heard.

The golden light was condensed by pure Buddha Light, the top of it was covered with complicated Sanskrit, and a resounding chant that could make anyone's soul calm down instantly.

It was a brilliant pillar of light that released a very strong Qi. Big Yellow and Jiang Chen who were returning from the Nebula Sect

saw what happened as they could see the pure Buddha light from very far away and felt a sense of familiarity from the Qi.

“Quickly, look, it’s Tyrant. We’re at the right time. He had just made a breakthrough.”

Big Yellow’s eyes sparkled and said in surprise.

“A very pure light indeed. It seems that the Relic has provided the maximum amount of help to Tyrant. This isn’t the Qi of a First Grade Combat Emperor, it’s the Qi of a Second Grade Combat Emperor. This dude stepped right into the Second Grade straight away. Being an upper rank disciple of Great Master Ran Feng and also a peerless genius of the Buddha Sect. He clearly was truly out of the ordinary.”

Jiang Chen couldn’t help but praise his friend. Tyrant was undeniably an extraordinary genius in the Buddha Sect and Jiang Chen had never underestimated him a single time. One of the reasons was because he inherited Ancestor Greenlotus’ inheritance, who was the number one Monk in the Buddha Sect. Under the teachings and nurture of Great Master Ran Feng, he would be a supreme Buddha sooner or later.

“Waka...kaka...Second Grade Combat Emperor? Is he bullshitting? Let’s go and have a look.”

Big Yellow quickened his pace. A dog and a man changed into two green gases as they reached above the building in the blink of an eye.

“Who are you?”

A loud shout demanded. More than ten senior monks flew to the top. The first was Abbot Yuan Ming. Every one of them acted as if they were facing an enemy's attacks because it was Tyrant's crucial moment. They were safeguarding him from being disturbed, no one was allowed to enter the building.

“There's no need for such a big movement, abbot.”

Jiang Chen said hastily.

As their speed were too fast, Abbot Yuan Ming and his fellow monks could only recognize Jiang Chen from his voice. All of them heaved a sigh of relief after confirming his identity as the abbot's face revealed a surprising delight.

“It's brother Jiang.”

Abbot Yuan Ming greeted him politely.

“You're overly formal, abbot. Let's go down to talk or we'll disturb Tyrant with such a ruckus.”

Jiang Chen said. Everyone quickly descended and went back into the monastery. Abbot Yuan Ming could sense the Qi coming out from Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, it had the strong pressure of a

Combat Emperor. His facial expression changed as he was slightly terrified, how long had it been? Isn't it too fast for him to advance to Combat Emperor?

“It surprises me that in this short period of time, you have reached the Combat Emperor realm. I have to congratulate you.”

Abbot Yuan Ming said as he suddenly thought about Zuo Ling Er. “How's Zuo Ling Er now?”

“There's no need to worry about her, she's really fine. Her innate talent had attracted all of the Great Elders. Due to that, she has been accepted as a personal disciple by one of the Ninth Grade Combat Emperor elders. She's already a Combat Emperor now, meaning that her bright future is unimaginable.”

Jiang Chen said. This time he didn't bring Zuo Ling Er with him. The reason was that she was too precious to Hua Gu Yi. He couldn't bring her whenever he wanted. Zuo Ling Er had obtained the Emperor Pill which meant that she had to be a Combat Emperor now given her talent.

“This is the accumulation of our ancestors' virtue.”

Abbot Yuan Ming got overly excited, his eyes welled up with tears after knowing that Zuo Ling Er had become a Combat Emperor and a personal disciple of a Ninth Grade Combat Emperor. Jiang Chen was right, she had an inestimable future given her innate ability.

\*Hong Long\*

All of a sudden, a deafening sound was heard. The golden pillar of light that was seen above the building dissipated faintly and fell in the room as if it was nothing.

\*Ka Chi\*

When the door of the room opened, Tyrant was wearing a golden robe. His palms were held together, his face was like a solemn senior monk. They didn't know why, but Big Yellow and Jiang Chen couldn't help but laugh at his current look.

Tyrant immediately changed his expression after seeing them and smiled, "Little Chen, Big Yellow, I thought you two have gone to the Nebula Sect? Why have you all returned? I know, it has to be because you guys' image were too bad, so you were expelled by the sect."

"Bastard, master dog's image can instantly put you to shame ok? Master dog is doing extremely well in Nebula Sect and there has been a group of girls who are willing to become master dog's follower."

Big Yellow boasted shamelessly, as if he was really telling the truth which made Jiang Chen almost kick him in the head.

"Tyrant, it seems that the enlightenment this time has helped you tremendously. You have reached the Second Grade Combat



Emperor.”

Jiang Chen walked forward and patted gently on Tyrant’s shoulder.

“Congratulations to great master for his advancement, we should celebrate this.”

Abbot Yuan Ming congratulated.

“Abbot, I have words to say with my brother, you can all leave us here.”

Jiang Chen said to Abbot Yuan Ming.

Abbot Yuan Ming was an understanding man. Jiang Chen must have something important to say, to return from so far away just to seek Tyrant. He quickly led his fellow senior monks out of the monastery.

“Little Chen, why have you all come back? Of course, you’re here just in time. If you came two days later, I will be gone.”

Tyrant said.

“Gone? Where?”

Big Yellow asked.

“Back to the Western Continent. My master said that once I reach the Combat Emperor realm, he will allow me to return to accept the ancestors’ inheritance and also to impart two seal techniques to me. He would also allow me to retrieve the Buddha Sect’s ancient scripture that was left behind by my ancestors. I’m now a Second Grade Combat Emperor so I’m preparing to return to my master and begin another level of cultivation. It’s very thoughtful of you guys to come pay me a farewell visit before I go.”

Tyrant blurted his own words and guessed their intentions.

Jiang Chen rolled his eyes unpleasantly as he laid his leg on Tyrant’s butt. Tyrant’s natural attitude was no different than Big Yellow’s foolish arrogance which was totally incurable.

“You can’t go back now. Come with me to the Death Mountain. After coming out from the mountain, only then could you return to the Western Continent.”

Jiang Chen said. Despite the fact that Tyrant was all over himself, he said a single fact which was that they wouldn’t have seen him if they were just a little late.

“The Death Mountain? Isn’t that the forbidden area of Mysterious Domain? I heard that it only opens every thirty years. It’s going to be opened again?”

Tyrant's eyes sparkled. As a cultivator of the Divine Continent, he had heard the story of the Eight Forbidden Areas. Although he wasn't from the Mysterious Domain, he knew that Death Mountain would open once every thirty years.

“You're still considered smart. It will be opened in ten days' time. There will be a lot of violent cultivators from the five major powers that will participate in this exploration. This is also a good chance to train up. Beneath the mountain lies a wealth of treasures, we don't have any reason to miss this opportunity.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Seems like it is very coincidental. That means that I can't go back now. Going in the Death Mountain to train is truly something good. My master wanted me to travel this far so that I could train and toughen myself up. Nonetheless, even if there are treasures underneath the mountain, it had already existed for a very long time. I'm afraid all of them have already been dug out.”

Tyrant asked the same question Big Yellow asked.

“What do you know? There are undiscovered spatial zones in the mountain that held items of the Colossal Sect. The layers of spatial zones are overlapping against each other, which means that the treasure isn't limited to just a few. In addition, the long period of time has allowed some unknown creatures to exist under the mountain. Therefore, we'll give the responsibility of finding the treasure to Big Yellow.”

Jiang Chen smiled. In the aspect of treasure hunting, he admired Big Yellow the most for this ability. Since he and Big Yellow had teamed up, he didn't need to delicately search for any lost treasure. It wasn't because he didn't have this ability. As the Greatest Saint, his abilities were unlimited, but with Big Yellow's help, he could save the effort of finding the treasure himself.

“Alright, then we'll go to the Death Mountain. After that, I'll head straight for the Western Continent. Oh yeah, how's your life in Nebula Sect? Did you all encounter any trouble? I see that the two of you have already become Combat Emperors as well, this is truly abnormal.”

Tyrant nodded as he had decided to go with them to the Death Mountain. He might not be able to get any treasure, but at least he would get to train in the forbidden area.

“We did have some small problems, but it's all settled.”

Jiang Chen said indifferently.

For the upcoming days, Jiang Chen stayed in Ran Feng Monastery, spending a few leisurely days with his friends.

In the third day of midnight...

Jiang Chen was meditating in his room when a wave of bone-chilling murderous aura came out of nowhere. By the time Jiang Chen sensed the killing intent, a cold, long and narrow sword

appeared in his sight, it was like something that had emerged from the depths of hell. With incredible speed, it aimed for Jiang Chen's throat as it appeared before him in the blink of an eye.

\*Pu Chi\*

As the long sword pierced through Jiang Chen's body, the shadowy person showed some satisfaction and immediately, Jiang Chen's body faded like an image.

Jiang Chen saw the shadowy silhouette but it had disappeared suddenly.

“Since you have come, don't leave now.”

Jiang Chen shouted. He locked the shadowy figure's Qi using his Great Soul Derivation Technique and tore open the Spatial Zone as he chased after the intruder.

Judging from the sword attack, it was a sneaky attack from the shadows. The attack was silent but deadly as if it was coming from the dead itself. If it was someone else, the person wouldn't have been able to escape this deadly attack. It was fast and cruel. Jiang Chen could tell that this was the doing of an experienced assassin that wouldn't fight his target if he failed so that he could retreat. This was clearly a planned assassination.

# Chapter 651 - The Scary Assassination Organization

---

\*Peng\*

A loud sound exploded in the spatial zone a hundred miles away from the Ran Feng Monastery. A dark silhouette glittered from within it. The figure was wearing a tight black shirt and his face was veiled with dark clothing which caused only his eyes to show. They were a pair of cold and bloodthirsty eyes. He was dressed in a very black clothing which made his entire body to thoroughly blend into the darkness of the night and his indistinct Qi made it very hard to sense him. He would have gone unseen and undetermined if one did not exert much effort.

This was a shadowy assassin, what a true killer should be. The expression in his eyes were emotionless.

At this moment, both of his eyes were staring at a figure in blue behind him. Besides the cold and cruel expression in his eyes, there was also fear in them as the young man dressed in blue was also gazing at him with the very same eyes.

The assassin felt shaken because he didn't manage to slip past the person he wanted to escape from this time. He had taken countless lives and had completed more than a hundred of missions without fail. Today, not only did he fail to kill his target and was running away from it, but the youth in blue in front of him had managed to lock on his Qi. Ordinary people wouldn't even be able to detect his existence. He knew that any attempt to run would result in the same conclusion. He definitely wouldn't be able to escape this

scary young man.

The young man in blue was of course Jiang Chen. He wasn't wearing his usual white robe but instead, the uniform of the Nebula Sect.

“Who are you? Why do you want to kill me?”

Jiang Chen said. He was sure that he had never offended an assassin like the one in front of him before. They were complete strangers.

The assassin didn't respond. His Qi trembled as the sword in his hand turned into a glimmering light and lunged towards Jiang Chen at lightning speed. It was a rapid and cruel sword attack, the light of the sword was like a poisonous snake.

Jiang Chen smirked coldly. He had seen through the assassin's intention. The assassin was a Third Grade Combat Emperor. Due to his exceptional method of assassination, he could even assassinate a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor without any mistakes.

Nonetheless, this assassin was unlucky to meet Jiang Chen who was much more scary than what he had thought.

The Heavenly Saint Sword appeared instantly in Jiang Chen's hand. His response was even quicker than the assassin's attack. His direct sword attack rapidly clashed with the assassin's sword like a lightning flash, creating big sparks in the dark night.

The assassin grunted, clearly disappointed as he was sent reeling by Jiang Chen's sword more than a hundred meters away. A trace of blood flowed along the side of his mouth, giving a tint of red on the black cloth. Although it was very hard to observe the condition of the man, Jiang Chen could identify it clearly. In fact, he could find the injuries of the assassin without even looking at him.

The assassin's expression changed drastically as he stared at Jiang Chen in obvious terror. The assassin's sword technique was an assassination technique which was not only soundless but it was also fast and cruel. It was a true sword attack meant to instantly kill the target. However, this young man in front of him was unexpectedly even more capable than what he had thought. He could feel that his opponent had both sharp senses and flexibility. This was because, his opponent had already anticipated where he was going to aim before he had even attacked. This was truly terrifying. If this youth were to work as an assassin, he would be able to easily earn a living through it.

“How's this possible? Aren't you only a First Grade Combat Emperor?”

The assassin said, his voice sounded rough and in terror.

\*Whiz Whiz\*

At this moment, two more strong Qi silhouettes flew over to the battle scene from far away. The Qi's were from Tyrant and Big Yellow respectively. They could feel the combat aura and wanted



to find out what was happening. Their eyes were fixed on Jiang Chen and the man in black.

The assassin saw the emergence of these powerful men. Even Jiang Chen alone was too strong for him so he decided that he shouldn't stay any longer. He twisted his body and disappeared. It was obvious that the assassin wasn't just using the technique of spatial zone. He knew a profound technique that could make him vanish without a trace, not leaving any evidence behind in the scene.

Many people might not be able to detect him, but Jiang Chen was an exception. At the exact same moment the assassin disappeared, Jiang Chen moved and stepped using the Azure Dragon's Five Steps violently on the sky.

\*Peng\*

The spatial zone was stamped and crushed, another grunt was heard in the dark night. The assassin had borne just one stamp from Jiang Chen but he was already kicked out of the spatial zone. The assassin's facial expression had now turned fazed. His entire body was shaky after absorbing the attack of Jiang Chen's Azure's Dragon Five Steps. This assassin clearly wasn't any ordinary man as he could still stand up after sustaining such injuries.

Although Jiang Chen was a First Grade Combat Emperor, he was still able to kill a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor. The assassin was merely a Third Grade Combat Emperor, if his technique wasn't good enough, he should have died long time ago.

“An assassin who hides in the shadow. Once you are exposed, you aren’t an assassin anymore. You have already lost your advantage.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Seems the information received had some errors with it.”

The assassin’s tone was emotionless, there wasn’t even a trace of panic in his voice. This was a necessary quality of an assassin, he had to stop caring about his life and death once he stepped into this profession.

“You’re from Dark Shadow?”

Jiang Chen’s eyes released a cold light, demanding the man for an answer.

The assassin’s expression changed, he never thought that his target would be able to guess his identity correctly.

“Tell me who ordered you to kill me, I can offer you your life. Someone who can hire the Dark Shadow to assassinate me must have a high social status”

Jiang Chen said.

“Haha...Since you already know my identity, do you think that I would willingly tell you what you wanted to know?”

The assassin laughed indifferently. He knew that he had completely failed and that he wouldn't have a second chance to assassinate his target anymore.

“In that case, go and die!”

Jiang Chen suddenly became very fearsome. He didn't have any friendly words to say to his enemy. His Heavenly Saint Sword rippled as his body turned into something like an arrow that was shot out from a bow and came before the man in a twinkle as the long sword pierced through the man's skull with a 'Pu Chi' sound.

At the final moment, the man gave up all his defenses after sensing Jiang Chen's Qi. He knew that he would be dead for certain. There were certainly errors in the intelligence report. He thought that the assassination mission was going to be completed smoothly. He even complained about the mission he got before he came here. He couldn't get over killing such a young weakling which made him think that they were looking down on him. The current situation told him that the intelligence report had cost him his life.

Jiang Chen was right about one thing. Once an assassin lost his stealth, he had lost every advantage he had. That was why the assassin didn't even attempt to counter attack at the final moment.

One sword attack was what it took to kill the man. However, not

only did Jiang Chen not feel any intoxication from it but instead, his face seemed troubled.

“Little Chen, who is this man? Why did he want to kill you?”

Tyrant came before Jiang Chen with a frown. He could feel the capabilities of the assassin which suggested that he must be a scary killer.

“An assassin, an expert and an experienced one at that too. Tyrant, have you heard about the Dark Shadow before?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Dark Shadow? I’ve never heard of it before.”

Tyrant shook his head when he heard the two words.

“That is very normal. Dark Shadow is an assassination organization. The assassins of this organization can be found everywhere in the Divine Continent. It is a major power in the Divine Continent that works secretly. It is a scary organization as the killers that they train are top class assassins. I have heard that anyone who is targeted by the Dark Shadow won’t have a chance to live. However, their activities in the Western Continent are few in number. The Western Continent is a holy land of Buddha Sect, and since Buddha Sect won’t have any conflicts with the outside world, they don’t need the help of the Dark Shadow. It’s very normal that you haven’t heard of them.”

Jiang Chen said. The Dark Shadow Organization had been established a long time ago. There were many powerful assassins in it. In his past life, he had some conflict with the Dark Shadow and had killed their leader which had stopped the activities of the Dark Shadow for a while. Since the incident had been a hundred years ago, the Dark Shadow had already returned to its former height. What made Jiang Chen uneasy was that he had created another conflict with the Dark Shadow in his new life again.

“When have you offended the Dark Shadow?”

Tyrant frowned as he revealed a look of distress. Although he might not know a lot about the Dark Shadow, he understood how hard it was to deal with this enemy based on Jiang Chen’s description. Once a person was targeted, he had to bear the sleepless nights and also the continuous assassinations.

“I didn’t offend anyone from the Dark Shadow. It is an assassination organization. They won’t work for ordinary figures. It has to be one of my foes who hired them to hunt me down to kill me. In truth, not that many figures are able to ask for the Dark Shadow’s help. If I’m not mistaken, the one who told them to kill me should be Heavenly Sect.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes released two rays of sharp light. He was contemplating. The only possible organization who wanted him dead so badly would be Heavenly Sect. Back in the Western Continent, Jiang Chen had killed their genius disciple and elders which incurred a great loss to their sect. Heavenly Sect couldn’t forgive him for what he had done. But because of Great Master Ran

Feng's connection with Jiang Chen, they wouldn't dare to face him directly, so finding the help of the Dark Shadow was the best solution.

“Mother's god! It seems like our conflict with Heavenly Sect isn't going to leave us.”

Big Yellow couldn't help but curse.

“If it was Heavenly Sect, it makes sense because they are scared of my master. He doesn't dare to kill by themselves but he sees Little Chen's potential. They thought that if Little Chen isn't taken care of, he will become a big trouble in the future. Well, this is truly infuriating.”

Tyrant found the link and explained the reasons behind wisely.

“The Dark Shadow is very hard to get along with. I have killed one of their men today thus I have offended them. Even without the request of Heavenly Sect, they won't let me live. They will send even more powerful assassins to take care of me.”

Jiang Chen said.

“It seemed that this group of people are like specters, they never stop haunting you once they have targeted you.”

Tyrant said.

“Don’t worry, the Dark Shadow won’t send their strongest assassin because of this small mistake. They will measure the true strength of the target and find a killer that is best suited for the task. To the assassins, this is a trial and also their training. Humph! I don’t fear them. They dare to assassinate me? Then they can only wait to count the dead souls. I’ll turn these specters into real ghosts.”

Jiang Chen said coldly. He always had a lot of enemies which made him grow accustomed to threats. If he could kill the leader of the Dark Shadow in his previous life, why couldn’t he do it in this life as well.

## Chapter 652 - Rescuing Someone's Life

---

The emergence of the Dark Shadow made Jiang Chen feel uncomfortable. Although he wasn't afraid of them, the organization was still a tough and troublesome enemy. Today, he had killed one of their people and that would definitely offend them. His life from now on would always be in danger and they would always be in pursuit for him.

“Little Chen, do you think that it might be Nan Bei Chao who hired the Dark Shadow's assassins?”

Big Yellow asked.

“Not possible. You still don't understand Nan Bei Chao's personality? He is an extremely arrogant man. All he wants to do is to kill me in person. Only through this could help him wash away all the shame that I brought upon him. Moreover, Nan Bei Chao may not even know that I have come to the Mysterious Domain. Otherwise, he would have come in search of me.”

Jiang Chen disagreed with Big Yellow's opinion straight away. Nan Bei Chao was extremely proud of his own power because of his inborn Monarch Qi. If he wanted to get rid of Jiang Chen, he would have done it himself.

“That's right. That super proud dude, how can he use people's strength to kill you?”

Big Yellow nodded. He remembered what had happened in the Qi



Province. Jiang Chen and Nan Bei Chao held the two main roles in the battle. Nan Bei Chao had extraordinary pride and he had lost his pride when he lost to Jiang Chen last time, but he made sure that he was going to get it back.

“Who is Nan Bei Chao?”

Tyrant asked curiously.

“A very powerful person. A hundred years ago, when the Greatest Saint slashed open the door of Immortal World, some Immortal souls descended into our world. Nan Bei Chao is a reincarnation of one of those Immortal souls. That dude is a strong opponent. Now, he has appeared in the Mysterious Domain with a Third Grade Minor Saint Divine Beast White Tiger. Even the master of the Nebula Sect, Nebula Kidd, has lost to his White Tiger recently. I’m afraid that there won’t be peace in the domain after his arrival.”

Jiang Chen spoke as he quickly used his Divine Sense to stuff all the information about Nan Bei Chao to Tyrant, mostly the incidents that happened in the Qi Province.

“You have countless enemies wherever you go, huh? It seems like your life isn’t going to be easy now that the Dark Shadow and Nan Bei Chao popped out suddenly.”

Tyrant sighed. He had known Jiang Chen for a very long time. Everywhere Jiang Chen went, he would have even more enemies. Now, another stronger enemy had come into the picture. This only

happened because Jiang Chen was an abnormal being. If he was another person, he would be dead by now.

“Only a lifestyle like this is meaningful. There are still some days remaining before the opening of the Death Mountain. However, we have another company in the form of the Dark Shadow, so we will depart tomorrow for the Death Mountain.”

Jiang Chen said. The Dark Shadow was a very scary group. It wouldn't take long after the assassin was killed before they were informed. According to their course of actions, they would send a stronger assassin to murder Jiang Chen. If he continued to stay here, he might bring another disaster to the Ran Feng Monastery and Zuo Family.

Since it wasn't very long until the day of the exploration, there was no harm going there early. Once the Death Mountain was opened, the crowd would certainly be messy, making it very hard for the Dark Shadow's assassin to assassinate him.

Most importantly, Jiang Chen had to quickly enhance his own strength. There weren't any advantages for him to stay in the monastery given his current strength. He initially wanted to stay overnight here for a few days before going there, but the emergence of the Dark Shadow had stolen away his leisure.

The following day, two men and a dog left the monastery without informing Abbot Yuan Ming as they headed for the Death Mountain.

Jiang Chen's team wasn't deemed to be neither a weak team nor a strong team. The highest grade that was allowed was an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor. They are certainly no match for such high grade opponents.

Therefore, enhancing their strength was vital. Jiang Chen's main purpose on his journey until now was to advance his grade. His grade had improved drastically due to his diligent training, but it was never enough every time he encountered an obstacle.

They weren't moving very fast. They were sightseeing on their way and only reached the isolated wilderness in the evening.

There was a boundless stretch of wilderness in the area but it had a very few inhabitants. Since there was still a few days before the opening of the Death Mountain, the people they met on the way weren't that many. There were only Combat Soul cultivators who tried their very best to rush to the Death Mountain.

The Mysterious Domain was a big place, so travelling to the Death Mountain was considered quite far for Combat Soul cultivators because they hadn't mastered the technique of spatial zone.

\*Hong Long\*

A blare was heard from the air and a wave of combat aura was released. Jiang Chen and Tyrant stared at each other as they flew towards the source of the sound.

Above the wilderness, there was an intense battle happening. Three seniors in yellow robes had surrounded a senior in black.

These four had powerful Qis, having at least the Qi of Fifth Grade Combat Emperor. The old man in black was carrying a fierce and malicious expression, but because he had already sustained many injuries on his body, he became vulnerable under the attack of the other three men.

“Despicable!”

The old man in black said it cruelly.

“Sot Old Man, your Devil Religion does all kinds of evil things so your death is not to be regretted. I have tried very hard to contain you. Naturally, I will have to exterminate you, the cursed one.”

An old man in Yellow Robe said with a cold smile on his face. The old man in black wasn't a stranger to Jiang Chen and his friends, he was Sot Old Man of Dark Devil Religion, the one who had helped Jiang Chen in Liang Province.

The other three were men from the Freedom Palace. The one who spoke was Thunder Core, the deadly foe of Sot Old Man. Today, three elders of the Freedom Palace had besieged him, which wasn't an easy task.

“Thunder Core, the way your Freedom Palace operates is truly crooked. Fight me alone if you have the guts. I don't fear you!”

Sot Old Man's face was full of fury.

“Haha...Sot Old Man, talking about the integrity in front of you people of the Devil Religion is pointless. We have locked down the entire spatial zone here. You're now seriously wounded which means that your death is certain. I think that you should offer yourself to us so that you can die smoothly.”

Another elder of Freedom Palace shouted. In their eyes, Sot Old Man was already a corpse. In a situation like this, Sot Old Man was going to get killed unless there was some kind of favourable accident were to happen.

Miracles could indeed happen at any time under this circumstance.

Jiang Chen was watching the scene from a dark place as his eyes released two rays of cold light, especially after seeing Thunder Core. He didn't have any favourable impression of the Freedom Palace.

“Little Chen, that old man have saved you in the Liang Province and he is one of the Dark Devil Religion's people, but unexpectedly, he is the one who's besieged.”

Big Yellow said.

“He saved me that day so today is the day for me to save him.”

Jiang Chen smiled. He was determined to save Sot Old Man. Since he had encountered this situation, he wouldn't do nothing about it. Even if he wasn't doing this for Sot Old Man, he had to do this for his friend, Han Yan.

“It's easier said than done. Those three are Fifth Grade Combat Emperors. My combat strength only allows me to get rid of a Third Grade Combat Emperor. I am totally no match for a Fourth Grade. These are Fifth Grade Combat Emperors. Can we even defeat them? Furthermore, there are three of them.”

Tyrant looked worried as he said it to Jiang Chen. He didn't feel that it was a simple task to rescue the old man as the opponent was too strong. There were three Fifth Grade Combat Emperors which were way more powerful than them.

# Chapter 653 - Scary Thunder

---

Jiang Chen frowned slightly when he heard what Tyrant had said. The situation before them was obvious. Sot Old Man lacked the strength to fight any of his enemies, while Tyrant and Big Yellow weren't strong enough to fight a Fifth Grade Combat Emperor. In addition, given Jiang Chen's current strength, he could only fight a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor. Of course that's unless he used the strength of his Saint Bone which would give him the strength to fight a Fifth Grade Combat Emperor.

However, the consumption of energy when using the Saint Bone was just too large. He could only afford to use it once. Even if he could eliminate an elder among the three, he still couldn't deal with the other two after that. At that time, his strength would decrease due to the high energy consumption of the Saint Bone.

“It seems that there is only one skill that can be used.”

Jiang Chen's eyes narrowed into slits. He had to save Old Sot Man. There was only one way to defeat the three Fifth Grade Combat Emperors. It was to use the Lightning Tribulation. Exploiting the energy of that disaster would ensure that the three of them would be killed by the lightning strikes.

After Jiang Chen had reached the Combat Emperor Realm, the tribulation didn't seek for him. This was because, he knew how to control the timing of the lightning tribulation's arrival but this could only happen between the process of advancing from First Grade Combat Emperor to the Second Grade Combat Emperor. If he pushed his grade to the Second Grade Combat Emperor, the

lightning tribulation will arrive immediately. Initially, Jiang Chen had been thinking about when to let the lightning tribulation descend from the sky. If the lightning tribulation were to emerge when he's at the Death Mountain, it would be a waste as it would be just used to damage and kill without a purpose. Moreover, if it still didn't emerge then, he would need to find a way to advance his grade when he reached the Death Mountain. However, if he tried to ignite the power of the tribulation inside the mountain, it might activate its weakened formation. At that time, it would bring unimaginable disaster to those who entered the mountain. This meant that, everyone there including Jiang Chen himself, couldn't escape from the unfortunate event.

Due to that, he couldn't potentially bring disaster to the Death Mountain. However at this time, not only did he find a solution for that, he encountered such a perfect situation to release the disaster and kill the three elders of Freedom Palace for good at the same time, particularly Thunder Core. When Jiang Chen had contradicted him in Liang Province, he would've killed Jiang Chen if he wasn't stopped by Sot Old Man. Jiang Chen was someone who always harboured bitter resentment, which meant that he had never forgotten about that matter.

Today, it was Sot Old Man who was surrounded by the Freedom Palace's men. Jiang Chen didn't need to think twice about saving the old man.

“Which skill? Don't tell me that you are going to use the talisman given by my master.”

Tyrant was stunned.



“Why would I do that? That will be just a waste. I have a fine skill but the two of you can’t go to the battle, instead get as far away from me as possible. Otherwise, you guys will get caught in it. The power will be very great and it would probably be out of my control.”

Jiang Chen reminded Tyrant and Big Yellow. While Tyrant was still lingering in thought, Big Yellow had already flew away to a further place. Apparently, Big Yellow had guessed what Jiang Chen was going to do. It wasn’t hard for him to guess because he saw the tribulation that Jiang Chen had brought during his advancement to the Combat Soul and Combat King realm. Therefore, another tribulation that would happen in the Combat Emperor realm wouldn’t surprise him.

Tyrant still couldn’t figure out what skill Jiang Chen was going to use, but upon seeing that Big Yellow had already left, he immediately followed suit so that he wouldn’t regret not following Jiang Chen’s instruction.

In the battlefield, Sot Old Man’s expression was grievous. He looked around the formation and gave out a laugh suddenly. “Haha...I, Sot Old Man, have never thought that I would die here.. Thunder Core, make your attack now. Once I have become a ferocious ghost, I’ll return to haunt you.”

“Humph! Sot Old Man, I’m afraid that you won’t even have the chance to become a ghost. You’ll die here and your skill will be eliminated.”

Thunder Core made a cold humph. He wanted to kill Sot Old Man so badly, and end the sufferings that had been caused by this old foe. His murderous aura erupted, letting Sot Old Man feel its ferociousness.

“Three stupid old men want to bully one old man, don’t you know what shame is?”

At this moment, a rough voice coming from afar was heard.

“Who is it?!”

The three elders shouted out of surprise, as they turned simultaneously towards the source of the sound. Sot Old Man also did the same. As he turned, he saw a good-looking young man in blue with his arms crossed behind his back, it seemed as if he was out here for a leisure walk as his face was carrying a pleasantly warm smile, but the aura he emitted was intimidating.

“It’s you?!”

Thunder Core recognised him at first glance and couldn’t help but feel surprised. The reason for his surprise wasn’t because of Jiang Chen’s appearance, but his boldness to appear before them. He was thinking about how foolish this young man was, to not see through the current situation. Wasn’t he courting death to walk into such a battlefield?

Besides that, Thunder Core and Sot Old Man had sensed Jiang

Chen's grade, giving them another surprise. Although a First Grade Combat Emperor wouldn't concern them at all, they could still remember that Jiang Chen was only a Fourth Grade Combat King at that time in Liang Province. Not many days had passed, but he had already reached the Combat Emperor realm. His speed of advancement was really inconceivable.

"Your memory is not bad, old man. You can still recognize me. All of you shameless elders of Freedom Palace secretly planned against an old man? How good of you?"

Jiang Chen said it emotionlessly.

"Where did this kid come from? He dares to behave atrociously in front of us? Doesn't he want to live anymore?"

An elder of the Freedom Palace was infuriated all of a sudden. They had a high social status in the domain, had a prestigious position in Freedom Palace, but they were insulted by a kid that appeared out of nowhere, how could they swallow it?"

"Jiang Chen, run! You don't have to care about me. Just tell young master to avenge me."

Sot Old Man shouted at Jiang Chen frantically as if it was an emergency. To him, this young man was just too impulsive. He wanted to walk into the battlefield with just the strength of a First Grade Combat Emperor, did he want to die so badly? Even though he said that, he felt a sense of gratitude, seeing that Jiang Chen was brave enough to stand out like that. Despite whatever had

happened, his young master's friend was a person of kindness who valued friendship.

“You want to leave? I’m afraid that it won’t be that easy. Since you came here, don’t leave.”

Thunder Core’s murderous aura became visible. He used his Divine Sense to tell everything about Jiang Chen, including his identity, to the other two elders. Their facial expression changed as they too started releasing their murderous aura towards Jiang Chen. This young man was growing too fast, if he wasn’t eliminated, he would be a threat sooner or later.

If they couldn't use a genius like him, then he had to be removed. The fact that he had allied himself with the Devil Religion meant that they wouldn’t have a chance to use this resource anymore, therefore he must die.

“I have never intended to go anywhere. You all want to kill me? I’m afraid that it won’t happen. As for the three of you, if you choose to leave now, you may still have a chance. Or else, your death will be certain.”

Jiang Chen feigned a cruel and intimidating speech. However, this didn’t scare them off, instead, it made them laugh as if they had heard a seriously funny joke. A First Grade Combat Emperor declared that he wanted to eliminate them, wasn’t this a stupid and funny joke?

“Humph! In that case, don’t blame my impoliteness!”

Jiang Chen made a cold humph.

“Haha...kid, don't try to pretend. Why don't you try to show us what's your 'impoliteness'?”

Thunder Core sneered at Jiang Chen. He felt that this young man was a cute naïve little boy. However, his impression of him changed suddenly. The next moment, he started to feel how foolish he had become.

\*Hong Long\*

A strong Qi shot out from Jiang Chen's body. The Qi caused the supposedly mild wind and calm weather to turn into sudden thunderclaps and wild winds as if it was the scene of the end of the world. The lightning came too fast and in a twinkle, the sky was overcast with countless dark clouds. Terrifying pressure was sent downwards from the sky, giving everyone a heart-startling feeling.

All the elders, including Sot Old Man's faces changed drastically. The three elders couldn't continue to laugh anymore. It would be impossible for them not to realise what was about to happen given their high Combat Emperor grade.

“It's a tribulation! God! This young man can actually cause a natural disaster?! By my grandmother! This is a monster!”

An elder of Freedom Palace finally changed his look.

“I have forgotten about this. At the time he advanced to the Combat King realm in the Liang Province, I heard that he had caused a tribulation. Let’s leave now or else we will be implicated in the catastrophe!”

Thunder Core barked. At this point, he couldn’t care about Sot Old Man anymore as he was confronting a legendary natural disaster right now. Even with his Fifth Grade Combat Emperor level of strength, he couldn’t stay calm in such a situation.

For people who had higher level of grade, their understanding about the tribulation deepened. The more they knew about it, the more they knew about how scary the tribulation was.

“My mother! Young master’s friend is a real monstrous genius who can cause a tribulation!”

A part of Old Sot Man was shocked but he was mostly surprised with delight. He thought that Jiang Chen was just a reckless kid with only the strength of a First Grade Combat Emperor, seeking for his death in the battlefield. Based on the current situation, Jiang Chen already had a hidden trump card before he appeared.

Jiang Chen looked up towards the sky that was covered with layers of dark cloud. He saw that there were nine reddish lightning strikes which made him reveal a bitter smile.

The nine cycles of tribulation. Anyone would have a bitter smile while facing such a scary situation. Jiang Chen could defend

himself against such a tribulation because of his cultivation of the Dragon Transformation Art. Nonetheless, he felt a sense of surprise in his heart. A lighting tribulation like this could enhance his physique further, activating his hidden potential. As long as he could survive this tribulation, he would be able to reach the Second Grade Combat Emperor. This was what he expected would happen.

“We can’t afford to make any delays. Quickly, run! Leave! We’ll observe from a further place. He definitely can’t survive such a scary tribulation. Once it’s over, his physique will fall into a very weak state. We’ll strike at that time to kill him.”

Thunder Core barked his words.

As soon as his voice dropped, he heard a thunderclap approaching . It was a very thick and sturdy lightning, similar to a giant python as it carried an intense Heavenly force as it raced towards Jiang Chen.

The moment the lightning struck, Jiang Chen moved like a wild leopard. With the combination of Spatial Shift, he moved very fast as he reached the nearest elder.

“Old man, I gave you the chance to run but you didn’t want to, taste the lightning tribulation.”

Jiang Chen said coldly. That old man’s face turned ugly. It was too late for him to run now. The Heavenly Tribulation had locked down on his Qi. It created a sound of ‘hong’ and with a flash of

lightning, the tribulation was now this elder's, and it struck him.



# Chapter 654 - Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill

---

\*Hong Long...\* \*Argh\*

Along with a shrill wail, the Fifth Grade Combat Emperor was overwhelmed by the lightning strike. To a person totally inexperienced in surviving through a tribulation, the attack was lethal. The destructive force of the Heavenly Tribulation was based on the combat strength of its target. The tribulation force caused by this elder was far greater than what Jiang Chen imagined.

The Fifth Grade Combat Emperor elder was struck and burnt to smoke, leading to his demise. His corpse descended from the sky. Thunder Core and the other elders' expressions looked extremely pale. Their faces were the epitome of fear. The horror was far too great for them to handle.

A Fifth Grade Combat Emperor was struck by lightning, causing his death just like that. A gloomy scene occurred. Jiang Chen and the elder were both struck by the same lightning but the elder was burnt to death on the spot, while nothing happened to Jiang Chen when the lightning struck him. It was as if he had engulfed the whole electric current since he was perfectly fine. He even became more energetic.

This was absolutely unbelievable, how could the difference be this wide?

Sot Old Man was so stunned that his mouth were wide open as he

stood framed on the ground. It was a totally shocking scene. Despite the fact that he had a cruel and brutal mind, he had never seen such a scene before. He was currently in a trance from the previous lightning attack.

“Why are you staying stunned there for? To die?”

Jiang Chen’s voice reached Sot Old Man’s ears like a thunderclap, vibrating within his eardrums frantically. He finally awoke from his trance and without replying to Jiang Chen, he immediately ran for his life. How could he not understand Jiang Chen’s warning? If he continued to stay where he was, he would be seriously affecting Jiang Chen’s performance. No one could truly control the Lightning Tribulation, not even Jiang Chen. The most he could do was to exploit the power of the tribulation by leading the destructive force to another area. The lightning that came after the one before would only continue to be even stronger, the radius of blast would be bigger, and it would be even more fearsome. If he stayed, he would not only affect Jiang Chen’s performance while fighting against Thunder Core, he might even be struck dead due to the overwhelming lightning.

At that time, Sot Old Man’s concern for Jiang Chen had faded away. It was his first time seeing someone exploit the power of the tribulation to kill their enemy, which was truly shocking. He could imagine that those two dudes would be finished if they were slightly slower.

\*Hong Long\*

The sky was trembling and was covered with millions of clouds.

Another thunderclap rumbled and it was followed by a long red dragon flash of lightning.

Thunder Core's facial expression turned hideous. He didn't dare to delay as he shouted, "RUN!"

He had to run faster or else he wouldn't have the chance to. They had to depend on their incredible speed as a Fifth Grade Combat Emperor to leave the battle.

"Want to run? It's too late for that!"

Jiang Chen's eyes glittered. They were fast, but his Spatial Shift was even faster. In a twinkling, he had successfully caught up with Thunder Core along with the second lightning strike. Thunder Core wailed as he was instantly wrapped by the flash of light. He faced the exact same conclusion as the previous elder. Another Fifth Grade Combat Emperor died under Jiang Chen's hand.

After bearing the second lightning strike, Jiang Chen was still as good as new and remained as energetic. With his current condition, he could endure six cycles of Heavenly Tribulation without a problem. The true challenge lied in the last three cycles.

Seeing that not only his comrades were killed by the lightning, the last elder was so scared that his soul almost came out. He pumped his speed to the maximum as he disappeared into a spatial zone. Jiang Chen didn't chase after the old man.

This was not because Jiang Chen didn't want to chase after him, it was that he couldn't. If a Fifth Grade Combat Emperor used all of his effort to escape, it was quite easy for him to escape as he had a high mastery of the spatial zone. However, if Jiang Chen was determined to hunt down that last elder, he might be able to catch up with. The only problem was that he couldn't allow the Heavenly Tribulation to keep following him for long distances, as that would bring disasters to other domains.

As it was a nine cycle tribulation that he was facing, he didn't dare to take it for granted. He had to reserve some strength to deal with the remaining seven more fearsome Heavenly Tribulation. As for the elder of Freedom Palace who managed to escape, Jiang Chen just let it be. If he met him next time, he would kill him for sure.

Jiang Chen was certain that if he could reach the Second Grade Combat Emperor after surviving this nine cycle great tribulation, he would be powerful enough to take care of a Fifth Grade Combat Emperor quickly.

\*Hong Long\*

The thunder rumbled. The third Heavenly Tribulation began to form like a lightning dragon, and struck Jiang Chen without warning. The trio of Tyrant, Big Yellow and Sot Old Man saw the scene from afar and even then, their heart beats were racing and their muscles were shuddering. Nonetheless, they didn't saw neither a sign of nervousness nor panic on Jiang Chen's face. It was as if surviving through the tribulation was a relaxing task.

Jiang Chen drew out his weapon. Dazzling light blinded them as the lightning bathed the entire sword and were rippling back and forth on it, making it seem very divine.

The Heavenly Saint Sword from Jiang Chen's past life was deemed to be the greatest Saint Weapon, but its only flaw was that it hadn't been honed by thunderbolt. Jiang Chen did not merely want his Heavenly Saint Sword to return to its peak power, he wanted the sword to be enhanced along with him, both receiving the strong power of the lightning so that the long sword could solidify, condensate and become more fearsome.

Sure enough, after the third lightning struck, Jiang Chen was still standing in mid-air under the thundercloud exactly like a man who had suffered no injuries. This scene made Sot Old Man and Tyrant speechless, they had seen abnormal beings but they weren't as abnormal as him!

"Young master's friend is out of this world. He is intensely tortured by the lightning but he just stood in his position, immovable like a mountain and still survived without a scratch. If this isn't seen with our own eyes, who will believe it? Many said that a Ninth Grade Minor Saint will cause Saint Tribulation during the process of advancement. Every Saint is very careful of it from the beginning until the end. It is like being on the verge of death until you survive. Many Saints failed and died during the tribulation. I have never really seen such a calm confrontation of the tribulation, he is... a real monster!"

Sot Old Man said with a startled tone. Jiang Chen had certainly made him speechless. The way that he had exploited and survived

the tribulation was unprecedented. Of course, Sot Old Man knew that there were some people in this world that couldn't be judged by logical means. In fact, his capability to deal with the tribulation smoothly matched with his ability to initiate the Heavenly Tribulation at his grade, which was viewed as a miracle.

A man who could create miracles should never be judged with an ordinary eye.

“He is damn abnormal!”

Tyrant mumbled. This was the first time he saw Jiang Chen initiate a tribulation, so he was really shocked. Despite the fact that he said it with a surprised tone, his eyes revealed a sense of worry. He could feel how scary the tribulation Jiang Chen was facing. The later the stages of the tribulation, the scarier its power was. Jiang Chen could probably only be calm now, but that wouldn't be the case when he was near the later stages of the tribulation.

\*Hong Long\*

The fourth lightning condensed, its force was more powerful than the third. The entire sky was full of flashes of lightning like a spider web, each of them slithering like serpents. It was truly terrifying.

“The medicine that I have and the Nine Solar Saint Water are enough to refine six more Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pill. I can borrow this opportunity to create it.”

Jiang Chen's eyes were flickering with light. Making pills like the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pill wouldn't be too much for him to handle. He had already refined two of the pills last time. If he successfully refined another six pills, he would have eight in total. There were great benefits in having those pills. Even if he wasn't going to use the pills for trading or bargaining, he could give it to his friends. His friends like Han Yan, Nangong Wentian, and Wu Ningzhu didn't have these pills, not even Zuo Ling Er had it.

Under the heavens, only Jiang Chen could refine such a pill as the condition of refining them were never easier than any pill refinery. In such a harsh condition, not even a Saint Grade Master Refiner could produce those pills.

However, Jiang Chen's time was limited. He had to refine all the pills before the descent of the seventh Heavenly Tribulation, so that he could face the last three tribulations with all of his strength as they were the scariest disaster of the nine cycles. Despite his confidence, he wouldn't take this event for granted.

\*Hu... Hu...\*

Below the thunder, Jiang Chen had casted the True Dragon Flame and Heavenly Thunder Flame, turning the area in front of him into a sea of fire. Then, he threw beads of pills into it.

“What's he doing?”

Tyrant was startled.

“My god, is he refining pills?! This dude is refining pills during a tribulation?! Is my vision blurred?!”

Sot Old Man patted his head a few times to confirm what he was seeing. He had no doubt that Jiang Chen was refining pills. If this news was spread out, many people would be startled that their mouths would be left open unconsciously.

'Jiang Chen, this is a tribulation that you are talking about! You think that this is a refinery room? You might not even be able to survive through this tribulation even with your full combat strength, but you still have the time to refine pills?' The thought alone made the old man drunk.

“I know what he is doing now, he is refining the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pill. I finally understand why he had such pill in his possession. The pills were all refined by himself. It is a little too hard to believe that this dude is the only person in this world who can refine a Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pill, that is irrefutably abnormal.”

Tyrant suddenly found the link between the facts. Back in Western Continent, Jiang Chen had given him and Great Master Ran Feng one Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pill each. From what he's seeing now, he judged that this scary pill was produced personally by Jiang Chen himself. This was truly terrifying as he wasn't even a master refiner. Tyrant knew very well how difficult it was to refine such pill.



Jiang Chen's gaze was like a torch, his palms were fluttering as he casted a chain of continuous seals. Refining a pill like this was a piece of cake to him even with the disturbance of lightning since he was very familiar with the process.

\*Hong Long\*

By the time the sixth lightning struck, there were already six shining pills, fully refined and jumping up and down in the sea of fire.

\*Hong Long\*

The seventh lightning finally emerged and Jiang Chen's facial expression immediately turned serious. After he kept the pills, he looked upwards to the sky. He could feel the fearsome Heavenly Force coming from the thick layer of clouds.

# Chapter 655 - The Ninth Cycle

---

Jiang Chen looked up and saw the lightning condense as red as blood. In a mere moment, it became a lightning dragon that was fierce and had emotionless eyes. This was the Heavenly Tribulation, an intense heavenly force. Lightning dragons represented a punishment from the heavens. It had always emerged to punish all heaven defying beings.

The eyes of the lightning dragon locked onto Jiang Chen as if it was alive. The power of this lightning was far greater than the previous six.

From afar, Tyrant, Big Yellow, and Sot Old Man's faces changed again. They could feel that this seventh Heavenly Tribulation was ten times stronger than the sixth.

Nevertheless, Jiang Chen didn't look nervous or anything. Despite the powerful tribulation, it still couldn't make him surrender. As he was a cultivator of the Dragon Transformation Art, he needed to have such great qualities like bravery, boldness, and audacious guts that wasn't scared of the heaven and earth, and all these qualities were seen on Jiang Chen's face.

"Come on!"

All of a sudden, Jiang Chen shouted as he pointed to the blood red lightning dragon. The powerful Qi caused his sweat pores to open up. He was casting his Dragon Transformation Art to its maximum capacity. As it circulated, the Heavenly Saint Sword

rippled intensely.

While facing the seventh tribulation, Jiang Chen chose to give up all of his defences, and instead used his blood and flesh to endure it.

“What’s he doing? This heavenly tribulation is so much stronger than the previous one, but he isn’t defending at all?”

Sot Old Man’s face turned shocked. He didn’t know why Jiang Chen wanted to act in such a way, but he knew that this was way too dangerous.

“He wants to use his physique to handle the heavenly tribulation so that he can use the lightning strike to toughen his flesh and also absorb the force of the lightning into his body. This would enhance his physique to a scary extent. He does this so that the potential inside him can be activated, pushing his grade further.”

Big Yellow said.

“This dude is far too audacious.”

Tyrant let out a sigh. He was another one among the three who knew his friend, Jiang Chen, quite well. Using one’s own body to face the tribulation? This was an extremely outrageous act! Besides Jiang Chen, he couldn’t find another person who would do that.

The blood red lightning dragon was furious, as if it could sense

Jiang Chen's defiance. It turned into a sea of blood red lightning that filled the surroundings with flashes of electricity, trapping Jiang Chen completely. Sot Old Man was a Fifth Grade Combat Emperor, but even with his grade, he still couldn't see clearly what was happening in the sea of lightning flashes. Two men and a dog looked very worried. This scene wasn't child's play, it was about surviving the tribulation and a tiny mistake could put one's life in danger.

The thunderclap in the sea of lightning rolled in the air continuously for a minute before it stopped. A slightly blurry image of Jiang Chen was revealed from within the light. His face looked flustered, many parts of his shirt were torn, his hair was messy, and his face was pale. There were also some blood flowing at the side of his mouth and his Qi wasn't smooth anymore.

After seeing what happened, the three of them couldn't help but heave a sigh of relief and raised their thumbs up secretly for their friend. Using their own flesh to confront the tribulation? The extent of his achievement was unable to merely be described by the word 'scary'.

\*Hong Long\*

Before they could rejoice for their friend's success, the eighth Heavenly Tribulation took shape. It was another dragon-like lightning that was about two times longer than the seventh.

Sot Old Man felt that he couldn't even catch his breath. The Qi was far too powerful. If he stayed in the middle of that thing, he would be blasted into nothing but slag. He wondered how Jiang

Chen was going to deal with that.

What worried them was the tribulation after this, because there was still the final tribulation which was the strongest of them all.

Jiang Chen's pupil had become reddish as he gripped his Heavenly Saint Sword and it became a dragon-like sword. He raised it up towards the sky, pointing at the lightning dragon.

Jiang Chen's combat intent was great. That was right, he wanted to not only fight the heavens, but he also wanted to challenge them. Even if it was the Heavenly Tribulation, it wouldn't create fear in him. This wasn't the first time that he had battled against the heavens. He had broken open the gates of heaven in his past life without any fear.

\*Raaaarrrrr!\*

The lightning dragon became violent and wild after sensing Jiang Chen's intention. The lightning dragon was the incarnation of heaven's wrath, which also represented the Heaven's Prestige. The heavens would never allow any blasphemy, particularly from a heaven defying being. It would descend and wipe all of them out.

"Come on, one more round!"

Jiang Chen shouted. He held the Heavenly Saint Sword as he charged towards the lightning dragon.

The lightning dragon became frantic. Then, it rushed down with its mouth wide open, desiring to swallow both Jiang Chen and his sword.

\*Hong Long\*

Another heaven and earth-shaking rumble occurred. The isolated field below them had been left in ruins. There were newly-created pits and thick smoke everywhere. This time, the sea of lightning was ten miles in radius. Continuous cracking sounds could be heard from within. The three of them held their breaths and focused their eyes at the centre of the sea of lightning. That was the only thing they could do. There was no help that they could provide to their friend.

\*Bang!\*

A heavy thing descended from the sea of lightning in the sky. It fell hard on the ground, creating a deep hole. That thing was Jiang Chen.

“Not good.”

Sot Old Man was in shock. He could sense Jiang Chen's condition. It was getting worse. His body was bleeding from top to bottom. The eighth tribulation was just too terrifying.

“I'm clueless about Jiang Chen's situation now.”

Tyrant was worried about his friend.

\*Cough\*

Jiang Chen slowly climbed out of the hole. Currently, he had lost all of his composure. There was black smoke rising up from his head. His face was so dark, it looked as if he had been smoked. His attire was a hideous mess which was totally embarrassing.

However, Jiang Chen still stood on his feet, similar to his previous posture. He slightly pushed his lips upwards as he looked up again at the last Heavenly Tribulation, and pointed at it with his middle finger facing downwards.

\*Hong Long\*

The ninth tribulation finally descended. This was the most powerful tribulation of all the nine cycles. The power of this tribulation was the combination of all the previous eight.

“Old god! There is only one more tribulation left, but it is also the scariest one. I have no idea if Jiang Chen can pull it through.”

Sot Old Man’s facial expression was ugly. It was Jiang Chen who had saved him today. He had sensed the beginning of the tribulation after Jiang Chen’s release of Qi. If Jiang Chen wasn’t here to save him, the tribulation could have been delayed which would have given Jiang Chen more time for preparation.

Therefore, if Jiang Chen had made the ultimate sacrifice in this accident, he wouldn't be able to explain it to his young master. Even if he wanted to save him, he couldn't. He couldn't even move into the area.

“Don't worry about him. He will be able to pull it through. That dude is undefeatable.”

Big Yellow wagged his sturdy tail and said with confidence. He was the one who had followed Jiang Chen the longest and knew Jiang Chen better than anyone. From the Qi Yuan Mountain until now, there were so many encounters along their way, including both small and big battles. Even if it was a very difficult one, Jiang Chen could still get through it safely.

Jiang Chen didn't care about his wounded body as he stood up again. Then, he jumped and flew towards the sky. The Heavenly Saint Sword in his hand was producing a buzzing sound, conveying Jiang Chen's killing intent to the enemy.

“Haha...Come on!”

Jiang Chen laughed freely. The tip of his long sword was pointing at the thick thunderclouds. A ninth cycle Heavenly Tribulation? He didn't fear it. The blood in his body was circulating as quick as it could, and the potential strength in his body was being activated continuously. Once he survived this nine-cycles tribulation, he would advance to the Second Grade Combat Emperor for certain.



Jiang Chen was well aware of his current condition. He took out a Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pill and swallowed it. The effect wasn't as good as the first time he took it, but it would still help a lot for his current injuries.

\*Roar\*

Jiang Chen had successfully provoked the lightning dragon every time he had defied it. This was the ninth Heavenly Tribulation. Not only was the body of the lightning dragon very long, solid, and condensed, but its body was carrying great power, incomparable to the previous eight tribulations. It was truly quivering to one's soul.

The lightning dragon stuck out its giant head and glared at Jiang Chen with its cold and cruel eyes.

At the next moment, the lightning dragon moved like the previous ones. As it dived down, the air around it turned into a sea of lightning, and Jiang Chen was at its core.

From far away, the trio's hearts were already in their mouths. This was the first time they had ever witnessed such a Heavenly Tribulation. They were completely startled by it. Besides that, they were also very worried about Jiang Chen's safety. The ninth tribulation was just way too terrifying. They were clueless as to whether Jiang Chen could endure it.

The sea of flashes of lightning remained for two minutes before it stopped. Jiang Chen fell once more from the sky, hitting the

ground really hard.

The nine-cycled tribulation was over. The ninth tribulation still shook their guts. As soon as it ended, the dark clouds above the sky vanished. This big piece of wilderness was as if it had been through the end of the world, it was completely in ruins.

Three silhouettes flew to the scene like arrows shot from a bow. They didn't have any interest on the condition of the place as they rushed towards their friend, Jiang Chen.

At this point, Jiang Chen's eyes were closed. There was blood all over his body like a bloody man but they could still feel his pulse, it hadn't stopped, but he had fainted due to his injuries.

What surprised them the most was that they could see Jiang Chen's wounds were recovering in front of their very own eyes. This was the recovery technique of the Dragon Transformation Art. It was way too powerful that it couldn't be compared to neither godly pills nor to an ordinary man.

Furthermore, there were no pills that could help him now as his injuries were too serious. He had to depend on the self-recovery technique of the Dragon Transformation Art. Thus, it was impossible for him to heal in such a short period of time.

“His injuries are way too heavy. He fainted, so he's vulnerable for now. We have to leave this place immediately as the tribulation has drawn a lot of attention.”

Sot Old Man said.

“That’s right, let’s depart here first.”

Tyrant nodded and lifted Jiang Chen. The trio turned into three rays of light and disappeared.

# Chapter 656 - The Formation Of Big Yellow

---

As soon as they left the scene, many silhouettes arrived in the area. Many people had seen the big incident from afar. Such immense Heavenly Tribulation, it was very difficult for people not to realize it. The reason that they didn't come earlier was because the tribulation was too powerful.

The isolated field was like an aftermath of a disaster. Many of them had their facial expression changed. They could guess that someone had been here to confront the tribulation but this was their first time they'd seen such scary disaster. It made them ask, 'Who is that man?

Among them, there was an old man in yellow robes. This was no doubt the elder of the Freedom Palace, a Fifth Grade Combat Emperor. While he was looking around the field that had been in ruins after the somewhat end-of-the-world disaster, his body was slightly shivering. As for the dead bodies of the other elder and Thunder Core, where were they? They had certainly turned into ashes or nothing under the violent tribulation.

"That kid is too strong, he must not be allowed to live anymore. We have to think of a way to exterminate him or else , the consequences will be disastrous."

The elder said in a cold tone. Who would hope for their enemy to be stronger than them? Someone who was as monstrous as Jiang Chen would only cause disasters in the future. Adding the fact that he advanced far too quickly, if he really developed himself into a powerful extent, then, the nightmare of Freedom Palace would be

realised.

Ten thousand miles away from the scene, there was a secluded valley that was surrounded by mountains, including wet and dark caves. A few silhouettes appeared suddenly. After a moment of checking the geographical area, they entered one of the caves.

Although the cave was a little wet, it was still considered clean and wide. There was a large green rock, which was a suitable object to place Jiang Chen on.

“Seeing Jiang Chen in this condition, he need a few days’ time to heal. We have to wait here until he has recovered before we go out.”

Tyrant said.

“You are all Jiang Chen’s friends?”

Sot Old Man looked at Tyrant and Big Yellow. Although he had never seen this man and the dog before, he could feel the special relationship between these two and Jiang Chen. The dog was also no stranger to him. When the young master sent him on a mission, he had told Sot Old Man about his friends. The young master told him that there was a dog who always followed Jiang Chen, a tall guy who held a ruler who was called Nangong Wentian and also Wu Ningzhu, a woman in black that had unparalleled beauty.

“Right. We are sworn brothers.”

Tyrant nodded.

“I’m Sot Old Man of the Dark Devil Religion.”

Old Sot Man cupped his fists as he said it to Tyrant and Big Yellow. Although he was a Fifth Grade Combat Emperor and they were his juniors, he didn’t put himself high up as a senior. After all, his life was saved by one of their friends.

“I know you. You were the one who helped little Chen in the Liang Province. Master dog was watching you secretly. You are not a bad person, old man. Or else, little Chen wouldn’t have risked his life to save you.”

Big Yellow said proudly.

Old Sot Man didn’t say any words as he lowered his head to look at the pitiful Jiang Chen lying on the green rock, motionless, he felt a surge of gratitude. He felt that saving Jiang Chen that time was the best thing he ever did. Otherwise, he would be dead by now.

“Don’t worry, there’s no need to be anxious. The life force of this dude is even greater than a cockroach. That Heavenly Tribulation cannot be escaped from. Nevertheless, It will bring a lot of advantages to him. If I’m not wrong, his grade would advance to the Second Grade Combat Emperor after he awaken.”

Tyrant said with a smile. He had seen how tough Jiang Chen was, especially the time when he was seriously injured in the Liang Province, but even that failed to take his life.

“Nonetheless, I think brother Jiang isn’t going to wake up for a period of time. We have let one elder slip away and the Freedom Palace won’t let this matter go just like that. It will send higher grade experts to seek revenge. Hiding here won’t be able to allow us to escape their senses. It is only a matter of time before they discovered us here, but bringing brother Jiang to flee isn’t feasible as well.”

Sot Old Man said worriedly.

“Flee? Why would we flee? We will stay here, we won’t go anywhere. Observe my technique.”

At the time Big Yellow finished his words, he swooshed as he went out of the cave. The old man could see him mutter incantations while two of his dog hoofs were crawling in mid-air, casting divine talismans that condensed into a large formation, fully sealing the entrance of the cave.

After he was done, he returned to the cave and said to Tyrant and Sot Old Man.

“Master dog has set up the formation. As long as it isn’t a Minor Saint who comes to visit us, no one will find out about us.”

Big Yellow looked very confident when he said this. He had mastered the formation holy book, meaning that his achievement in formations and seals far surpassed everyone else.

Sot Old Man's face revealed a look of fear. He walked slowly to the cave entrance. Even with his eyesight, he couldn't detect the existence of the formation. He wasn't a man who had no knowledge of formations. He had seen many powerful formations but as for a formation that was as profound as Big Yellow's, it was his first time seeing it. If it wasn't for seeing Big Yellow setting up the formation, he wouldn't believe that a formation was set up.

“Smart.”

Sot Old Man couldn't help but gave Big Yellow a thumbs up. His eyes were full of praise. He glanced at Jiang Chen and realised that this genius had such a divine creature who followed him.

“I see that your injuries aren't light as well. Try to make good use of the time to heal.”

Tyrant said to Sot Old Man. As a disciple of the Buddha Sect, he didn't feel very good about people of the devil religion, but he was a friend of Jiang Chen which changed the entire situation. He wasn't someone who obeyed the law blindly and conventionally. His life was one without the restraint of the rules and laws of Buddha Sect. He wouldn't judge a person according to the rules most of the time. This old man had saved Jiang Chen before, so he considered him his friend.



Sot Old Man nodded. He retrieved a healing saint medicine out of his diantian and consumed it. After that, he sat down and meditated, focusing on the healing of his injuries.

Big Yellow and Tyrant walked to the cave entrance and guarded there.

Jiang Chen was lying motionless but there were tremendous changes happening in his body. The Nine Cycles Major Tribulation had brought him endless advantageous changes, igniting the hidden potential strength inside of him. The Dragon Transformation Art was still circulating, the stored lightning force was continuously toughening Jiang Chen's bones and muscles. Every muscle cell was able to obtain a very good activation. It was imaginable that when Jiang Chen awoke, his physique would be enhanced to an insane level. After he had advanced to the Second Grade Combat Emperor, he might be able to send a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor to hell with just a punch.

The Dragon Transformation Art was a terrifying technique, it even had very high recovery ability. As the power of lightning was exerted on his muscles, his injuries were being repaired by the technique. Those ignited potential powers would only explode from his body when his wounds were completely healed. At that time, the dragon marks would condense rapidly and push his grade to the Second Grade Combat Emperor.

Despite the fact that Jiang Chen seemed very weak and looked seriously injured, his body was still vigorous, which was countless times better than the time he was at the Western Continent. His bursting vitality was related to the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon

pill.

The pill was just too powerful, it was a Saint pill. Even if he had swallowed more than one, which meant that the second pill didn't have as much of an effect, it was still very helpful to his current condition.

Jiang Chen didn't make a mistake in his predictions. He anticipated that he would become like what he had now become after confronting the Nine Cycles Major Tribulation, therefore, he swallowed a pill earlier. Or else, the time need for his recovery would double.

One day later.

Three powerful Qis appeared far from the area. The three of them were wearing the uniform of the Freedom Palace. One of them was the elder who had escaped from Jiang Chen yesterday. The other one was same as him, he was also a Fifth Grade Combat Emperor. The young man who led them had the most powerful Qi, a Sixth Grade Combat Emperor.

This was the core disciple of Freedom Palace, a genius that was out of the ordinary and none of his Sixth Grade Combat Emperor peers was his opponent.

“Search delicately everywhere. We must find him!”

An elder said cruelly.

“This young man can initiate Heavenly Tribulation, this is a representation of his monstrous innate talent. His advancement speed is unimaginable. He has to be exterminated as soon as possible to eliminate future troubles.”

The elder who had escaped said. He had witnessed how scary Jiang Chen was, and was absolutely sure that his existence would be a huge threat to them.

“Humph! Daring to kill our Freedom Palace’s elders! It is death that he wants! Where would the dignity of the Freedom Palace be if he is not taken care of?”

The young man made a cold humph. His face was carrying a very arrogant aura, which was very common among geniuses.

“Wang Shao personally joined us this time which means that we have to kill this man by any means necessary to reclaim our Freedom Palace’s dignity!”

The elder flattered the young man. Although they were the respected elders, their statuses weren’t as great as the core disciples. There was no need to say it if he was a Sixth Grade Combat Emperor. Someone like him was extremely useful to them in the future. Therefore, no matter if it was at the Freedom Palace or Nebula Sect, many elders would fawn to the core disciples.

“There’s one valley there, perhaps they are hiding inside. Let’s go there and have a look.”

The young man who was called Wang Shao said. His real name was Wang Yi, he was one of the hall of fame for core disciples. He was going to participate in the Death Mountain discovery but was now here to hunt and kill Jiang Chen.

Three silhouettes suddenly appeared in the originally quiet valley. These two men casted their Divine Sense together to scan the entire valley, not leaving an area untouched.

“Mother! People of the Freedom Palace really did come.”

Tyrant saw the three men through the entrance and swore.

Old Sot Man could sense the strong Qi and stopped his meditation. He walked to the entrance with a fully prepared look.

“Don’t worry, they won’t be able to identify my formation.”

Big Yellow said with confidence.

# Chapter 657 - Second Grade Combat Emperor

---

Even though Big Yellow was very confident about himself, Tyrant and Sot Old Man were feeling the opposite. They were nervous as their opponents were just too strong. A Sixth Grade Combat Emperor and two Fifth Grade Combat Emperors, a team like this was just too powerful for them to handle. Jiang Chen was still lying and wasn't ready to engage in battle. Though Sot Old Man's a Fifth Grade Combat Emperor, he hadn't fully recovered from his injuries yet. Even if he was in his peak condition, the result wouldn't vary much.

The Divine Sense were like three shapeless sickles, scanning every possible area of the valley, not leaving even a stone unturned. As Big Yellow and the rest were Combat Emperors, they could create a dissimilar dimension. These dimensions were built in the macrocosm. However, when a stronger cultivator came, he could easily detect the newly-created dimension, which would make escaping way harder than it should be. Moreover, it took tremendous effort to build one as it couldn't simply be built instantly. Therefore, they decided to hide in the cave.

Wang Yi was a Sixth Grade Combat Emperor, a precious genius of the Freedom Palace. His combat strength was many times stronger than the other two elders. However, Big Yellow's formation was incredible enough to even veil them from the two Fifth Grade Combat Emperors who had scanned them just now. They didn't pause in the process but still found nothing.

The three of them were circling around the area but couldn't find

a trace of Jiang Chen.

“They’re not here, let’s go to another place.”

An elder said.

Wang Yi knitted his eyebrows tightly. He scanned the valley once more before leading the elders to another place.

Tyrant and Sot Old Man heaved a big sigh after sensing that their enemy’s Qi were getting further away. The scene just now fasten their heartbeats, they were almost found out. This explained why their pulse was so fast. If they were to be found, there would be a fierce battle and they might even lose their lives.

“Dammit! Why are the two of you so nervous? Are you two not confident of my formation?”

Big Yellow swore at them. He didn’t feel a bit of satisfaction from their expression. He was certainly confident of his own formation.

Both of them looked at each other and gave Big Yellow a thumbs up simultaneously. Their praise for him was sincere and they were impressed with his formation, which polished their impression of the boastful Big Yellow, because even a Sixth Grade Combat Emperor’s Divine Sense wasn’t able to detect his formation. Finally, they could quietly rest in the cave. With Big Yellow’s formation, there wouldn’t be a mistake because the Freedom Palace wouldn’t send a Minor Saint just to kill Jiang Chen.

“Big Yellow’s formation is truly something. I can peacefully meditate now. My injuries aren’t that serious, it will take at most three days to fully recover.”

Sot Old Man said before he meditated again. His state now wasn’t full of fear like before. He was more relaxed now as he didn’t need to worry about the hunt of the people from the Freedom Palace anymore. Furthermore, those people who came here wouldn’t return to the same place again.

For the following time, Big Yellow was so bored until he fell asleep on the ground, snoring. Tyrant meditated, his mouth was muttering the Lotus incantation. Jiang Chen was lying in his original position, there was golden light drifting around the surface of his body at random times. Sot Old Man was petrified like a fossil, he had fully entered into the state of self-meditation.

As for the team of the Freedom Palace, they gave up eventually like what Old Sot Man had anticipated after they had gone very far and searched everywhere but couldn’t find a trace of the Qi of Jiang Chen and Sot Old Man.

“My mother! We’ve searched for three days straight, the Death Mountain will open in a few days’ time.”

An elder said. He felt very uncomfortable in his heart when he thought that Jiang Chen wasn’t taken care of. He had already witnessed the terror of Jiang Chen. The scary Heavenly Tribulation gave cold chills every time he thought about it.

“Let’s go to the Death Mountain first. This is a big event of the Mysterious Domain. I believe that Jiang Chen is going there too. Let’s wait until they reach the Death Mountain, and that day will be the day of his death. Let him live for these few days.”

Wang Yi said it with a cold tone.

“That youth isn’t easy to be dealt with.”

The elder frowned.

“Humph! The reason that he can kill Thunder Core and an elder is because he borrowed the destructive power of the Heavenly Tribulation. He’s merely a First Grade Combat Emperor, how powerful can he get? I don’t believe that he can cause another tribulation in the Death Mountain.”

Wang Yi made a cold humph and flew to the direction of the mountain.

The valley had been quiet. Sot Old Man had entered into full meditation state for three days straight. He finally opened his eyes and two streams of light shot out from it, trembling the spatial zone, perfectly releasing his original Qi as a Fifth Grade Combat Emperor. There was a terrifying devil aura lingering outside of his body.

“I have finally fully recovered. I need to take revenge.”



Sot Old Man said in cruel tone. He wasn't someone to be offended. None of the devil religion's people could be offended, particularly Sot Old Man who sought revenge even for the smallest grievance.

Weng Weng

There was a buzzing sound in the cave. The golden light around Jiang Chen's body became brighter. His condition had improved so much that his pitiful face disappeared and the expression of fortitude returned to his face.

“Brother Jiang is recovering quite fast, it seems that his body will be completely healed in less than a few days. Ya, you are all here because of the Death Mountain?”

Sot Old Man looked at Tyrant and Big Yellow.

“That's right. Jiang Chen has joined the Nebula Sect and he's one of their disciples now. We were on our way to the Death Mountain and met you in our journey.”

Big Yellow said.

“The Nebula Sect is one of the strongest five. Nebula Kidd will be madly delighted for someone as gifted as brother Jiang to join his sect. It will take less than a few years for the Nebula Sect to dominate the entire Mysterious Domain because of brother Jiang's

existence.”

Sot Old Man’s had a long term vision. A rare genius like Jiang Chen had entered the Nebula Sect. To the other four major powers, it was a huge threat, but Sot Old Man considered himself lucky as his young master was brother Jiang’s good friend. So, even if there was any big changes happening in the domain, the Dark Devil Religion wouldn’t be affected a lot.

“That’s of course. Oh, I just want to ask this, is your young master Han Yan?”

Big Yellow opened his mouth and asked. Although he had guessed who their young master was, he hadn’t gotten the confirmation from Sot Old Man.

“Yes. Our young master is called Han Yan. At the time that he was lashed out by the windstorm of the spatial zone and was badly hurt, he luckily meet our master. When our master found out that he had an Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline, he felt extremely delighted and brought him back to the religion and accepted him as a foster child. When I left, young master is cultivating in the Devil Blood Pool meaning that he must have been out now. He will be joining the expedition in the Death Mountain as well.”

Sot Old Man said.

“Haha...Han Yan, that kid also wants to join the expedition, this is very good. I can’t believe that that kid has made so much progress that he has become a young master of a major power

when he comes to the Divine Continent. Jiang Chen and I are constantly being hunted down everywhere we go. Compared to him, our situation is infuriating.”

Big Yellow refused to accept his friend’s rapid progress. While he was comparing his and Jiang Chen’s encounters all the way here and Han Yan’s, he felt that the difference was like heaven and earth.

“Big Yellow, who’s Han Yan?”

Tyrant couldn’t help but ask. He had heard that Jiang Chen was a friend of the young master of the Dark Devil Religion. Now, he knew that they had known each other long time ago.

“We came from the same place. Initially, there were five of us, but after we encountered a spatial zone windstorm, we were separated...”

Big Yellow told them everything about Han Yan, Nangong Wentian and Wu Ningzhu. He could wipe out his concerns about Han Yan now since he had become a young master, but Nangong Wentian and Wu Ningzhu’s whereabouts were still unknown which still concerned him.

Sot Old Man and Tyrant were very shocked to hear that. In fact, Big Yellow and the others came from a very far place like the Eastern Continent. They had never expected so many outstanding geniuses such as Jiang Chen, Big Yellow and, the Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline, Han Yan to emerge from there.

In the next few days, Jiang Chen was still in the state of coma and hadn't awoken. In these few days' time, the Death Mountain was crowded with people.

There were a lot of them who had reached the mountain. Numerous cultivators gathered, they were both from the major and minors powers of the Mysterious Domain. All of them wanted to try their luck to seek for the treasure that lied in the Death Mountain. The geniuses of the five major powers had appeared simultaneously, but none of their more powerful experts had come yet.

On the ninth day which was a day before the opening of the Death Mountain, the sleeping Jiang Chen finally had some response. The golden cocoon outside his body broke and crumbled. The originally lying Jiang Chen sat up but he hadn't opened his eyes yet. Powerful waves of Qi were rushing out of his body that shook the entire mountain above them.

At this point, Jiang Chen had fully recovered. A small movement of his body created small lightning sparks. The Nine Cycles Heavenly Tribulation had toughened his body to an unimaginable strength but his physique wasn't the only thing that was enhanced tremendously.

In Jiang Chen's body, dragon marks started to condense. The way that he advanced his level was the same as the advancement in Combat King. For every level he advanced, it required two thousands dragon marks. Within a few minutes, two thousands dragon marks were completely formed.

Jiang Chen was as still as a mountain while gathering large amounts of Heavenly Rank Restoration pills to help him in the advancement. Every advancement of his was a large project that could make anyone drop their tongue in shock.

Bang

His aura became stronger. If it wasn't for Jiang Chen controlling the power, the whole mountain would have collapsed.

“Second Grade Combat Emperor.”

Tyrant and Sot Old Man's eyes glittered. As they had felt Jiang Chen's dramatic change of Qi, their faces revealed a pleasantly surprised look.

A while later. The two thousands dragon marks weren't the limit. After Jiang Chen had reached the Second Grade Combat Emperor, the dragon marks still continued to condense.

# Chapter 658 - A Pill, A Gift

---

There was a layer of Qi rippling all over Jiang Chen's body. His Qi was increasing consistently. Tyrant and Big Yellow didn't show any tremendous changes in their facial expression as they knew how crazy their friend was, but Sot Old man was freaked out. After Jiang Chen had reached the Second Grade Combat Emperor the excess Qi was pumping out of his body, which gave a certain pressure to this Fifth Grade Combat Emperor.

In other words, Jiang Chen, who had achieved the Second Grade Combat Emperor, was probably stronger than a Fifth Grade Combat Emperor in terms of combat strength. This was unbelievable. It was the first time Sot Old Man had seen a being as powerful as him. After thinking back to his ability to initiate the tribulation, it made sense for this young man to possess such great power. He shouldn't use ordinary eyes to judge this young man in the first place.

After the Nine Cycles Major Tribulation, Jiang Chen's potential power had been ignited. He had acquired a great benefit. The dragon marks in his body didn't stop increasing until it condensed another thousand more dragon marks after the advancement.

From the beginning until now, Jiang Chen had accumulated forty three thousand dragon marks in his body. He had reached the middle state of Second Grade Combat Emperor with an extra thousand dragon marks, which had strengthened his combat skill by many times. With his current combat ability, he could defeat a Fifth Grade Combat King and was capable to fight a Sixth Grade. If he used his Saint Bone power, he could have taken a Sixth Grade Combat Emperor's life. These were all due to the Dragon

## Transformation Art.

However, Jiang Chen still felt a little disappointed as the Dragon Transformation Art failed to undergo a new transformation. A surge of anger raced from his back while thinking those who caused this to happen.

The Dragon Transformation Art had reached this stage. Jiang Chen recalled when he first cultivated the art, its description stated clearly that there would be dramatic changes on the art once his body accumulated ten thousand dragon marks.

Now, he had gathered more than forty thousand dragon marks, the art became more mysterious than before. Those True Dragon Combat Techniques, the blood talisman in the purgatory, the dragon blood essence and the dragon roar from his deep soul had indicated as what the description had told Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen felt that even if he had condensed ten thousands of dragon marks, it definitely wasn't the maximum potential of the Dragon Transformation Art and it wasn't the end yet.

Of course, he himself didn't know what's the final point of the technique was. He had to continue to discover and unlock the mysteries during the process of his cultivation. Nonetheless, there was one thing he was certain about, cultivating this art wouldn't bring any disadvantages to his body, but instead it would allow him to go further in his cultivation path, making him stronger.

Forty three thousand dragon marks were in his body now, it gave

him excess confidence in the expedition into the Death Mountain. As for the metamorphosis of the Dragon Transformation Art, he had to wait for it. It was the same as Tyrant's enlightenment that would come naturally by chance, not by effort or deliberation.

Jiang Chen rose up slowly from the rock and knew instantly what had happened simply by glancing around his surroundings.

“Brother Jiang, you are awake.”

Sot Old Man said, revealing a pleasant smile.

“How long have I been asleep?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“A few days, tomorrow will be the opening day of the Death Mountain.”

Sot Old Man answered.

“Seems like we aren't behind schedule yet. Sot Old Man, are you also preparing to enter the Death Mountain?”

Jiang Chen looked at Sot Old Man and realised that he had also fully recovered from his injuries.



“You’re right. I’m a Fifth Grade Combat Emperor so I’m still eligible to enter the Death Mountain. I also want to find out something interesting that lay under the mountain.”

Sot Old Man nodded and said.

“Will your young master come too?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Young master will definitely come. This is a big event in the Mysterious Domain, thus he must participate. Brother Jiang will be able to meet him tomorrow.”

Sot Old Man laughed and said.

“Haha. Very good. That bastard has become a young master. I really want to see how much he has improved.”

Jiang Chen let out a pleasant laugh. He had an unexpressed feeling when he thought of meeting his good buddy soon.

“Brother Jiang, shouldn’t we head for the Death Mountain now? There must be a lot of people over there by now.”

Sot Old Man asked Jiang Chen what to do next as if he needed Jiang Chen’s permission on his decision.

“The Death Mountain will be open tomorrow. We don’t have to rush. Sot Old Man, I will give you one treasure to allow you to advance your grade to the Sixth Grade Combat Emperor before we head for the Death Mountain.”

Jiang Chen turned his palm and retrieved a Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pill, then brought it before Sot Old Man.

“This Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pill is concocted by my own hands. Once you have absorbed the pill, not only will it enhance your physical strength your advancement won’t be a problem anymore.”<sup>[1]</sup>

Something as precious as Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pill wouldn’t be taken out by Jiang Chen easily. It would be impossible for him to give that as present to someone else. However, Sot Old Man wasn’t a stranger to him, he was a follower of Han Yan, which meant that he was one of them. In addition, Sot Old Man had saved him before, he had never forgotten about his help at the time in Liang Province.

Jiang Chen was cruel towards his enemy but very kind and generous to his allies. The situation he was in now was different, he lacked experts on his side. If Sot Old Man could advance to the Sixth Grade Combat Emperor it would undoubtedly be a good thing, and when the time comes, he would be capable enough to handle the unsolved troubles.

“What? Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pill?”

Sot Old Man who was focusing at the pill on Jiang Chen's hand exclaimed. He recalled that Jiang Chen had really concoct pills during the tribulation, but he didn't expect it to be the legendary Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pill.

Even with Sot Old Man's knowledge, the most he knew about the pill was from the legends. As this pill was too difficult to be concocted, not even the strongest person in this world could produce the pill.

Therefore, this pill only existed in myths, it had never appeared in Divine Continent before. Sot Old Man never thought that it would appear before him.

He was well aware of how precious the pill was. If the existence of such pill were to be spread, it would cause a reign of terror.

Today, this legendary divine pill came to find him, even with the composure of a Fifth Grade Combat Emperor, he couldn't hide his astonishment.

"This...brother Jiang, this pill is too valuable, I can't accept it."

Sot Old Man's voice was slightly shivering. Not even him could estimate the value of such pill. If it was some other person holding this pill, Sot Old Man would have robbed it given his personality. However, it was Jiang Chen who was holding it, of course he couldn't be inclined to accept.

“People of Dark Devil Religion are always straightforward. Take it when you are given. If you don’t want it, I’ll keep them.”

Jiang Chen acted like he was going to keep the pill.

“I want it.”

Sot Old Man swiftly took the pill from Jiang Chen’s hand and chuckled.

“I was just being polite just now. Brother Jiang is right we, the people of Dark Devil Religion, are always straightforward. I will remember your kindness. If there’s any errand that you require help, I’ll be the first to help out without refusal.”

Sot Old Man stopped all his unnecessary bashful actions. He could also feel that Jiang Chen was a straightforward person. If he continued to act bashfully in front of Jiang Chen, he might be looked down by the young man. By getting this pill, it allowed him to advance his grade in a very short period of time. For their current situation, this was undeniably good.

# Chapter 659 - The Young Master of Dark Devil Religion

Sot Old Man tried hard to suppress the excitement inside him the moment he obtained the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pill. He consumed the pill in the cave immediately. He was already at the peak of Fifth Grade Combat Emperor, only a small step was required to reach the next grade.

With the help of the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pill, it took less than a day for the old man to push his grade to the sixth grade. It was pushed to the peak of the sixth grade, which was just one step away to Seventh Grade Combat Emperor. Besides that, Sot Old Man's entire appearance remoulded, his potential power was ignited and his physique was enhanced enormously. In other words, the old man's hope for achieving the Minor Saint realm in his life wasn't merely a hope anymore, because the amelioration of the pill proved otherwise.

Sot Old Man was full of vigour. He looked at Jiang Chen, without saying a word he bowed slightly to him. This action represented all his unsaid gratitude. He wouldn't be able to forget Jiang Chen's kindness. If Jiang Chen ever required his help, he would honour what he had said before and do his best to assist him.

“Very well. The Death Mountain will open today. We have to hurry there. No more delays.”

Jiang Chen looked at the colour of the sky. Although it was just daybreak, the Death Mountain was going to be opened soon. With

their fast speed, they could reach there without being late.

The Death Mountain was located at the north of the Mysterious Domain. The atmosphere surrounding the mountains was filled with black fog. Seeing it from the outside, it looked like numerous black layers of mountains were overlapping one another, similar to the stairs to heaven. It was like a sharp heavenly sword piercing into the thick clouds.

The area opposite the Death Mountain looked like a giant skeleton of an old man's face opening his enormous and ferocious mouth, anyone who had looked at it directly could feel their souls shivering due to the fierce aura coming out of the big mouth.

This was truly a forbidden area. In a hundred miles radius of the Death Mountain, there wasn't any greenery, their lives were inhibited by the ghastly Qi of the area. This was a desolate and inhabited place. Some high grade cultivators might need to pass through this place. While these high level Combat Emperors were wandering around the mountain, some were sucked in by a vortex that bursted out of the Death Mountain randomly and never came out.

This was the reason they named this mountain as the Death Mountain. This mountain only opens every thirty years, and cultivators only chose to enter during this time which roughly lasted for a month.

At this moment, although it was only daybreak, the Death Mountain was crawling with people. Cultivators could be found everywhere even in mid-air. There were also people in groups of

threes and fives. Some that wore the same uniform gathered together, obviously, they were of the same sect.

These people's faces showed arrogance as they thought that they were superior to the cultivators who had no sect.<sup>[1]</sup>

There were a lot of cultivators present. Although it was the five major powers who led the opening of the Death Mountain, they didn't dare to dominate it as disallowing the minor powers' cultivators to participate would cause dissatisfaction to many minor powers all over the domain. Once their loyalty to the major five is lost, their control over the domain wouldn't last long. Moreover, there were many strange things in this world, these minorities weren't as lowly as they thought, many of their members were gifted with special abilities.

For instance, some of these cultivators were gifted with unique techniques enabling them to detect the location of lost and hidden treasures. However, even if these people could find the treasure, they would all be taken away by the major five eventually. Only beings like Big Yellow was monstrous.

"The Death Mountain only opens every thirty years. Most people only have one chance in their lifetime to enter the mountain. I hope to obtain some inheritance of some experts under the mountain, and my name will be known among the upper ranks, allowing me to be famous."

"Stop dreaming. Only lucky ones can obtain treasures. Why don't you take a look at yourself? Your mouth sticks out just like an ape! Proving that you are the epitome of unluckiness"

“You’re quite right. The true treasures doesn’t belong to us. The Death Mountain is opened by the five major powers, they are generous enough to let us enter the mountain. You dare to compete with the geniuses of the major five for the treasures? Isn’t that seeking death yourself?”

“I have heard that the lower limit and upper limit of entering the Death Mountain are Combat Soul and Eighth Grade Combat Emperor, respectively. And every core disciples of the five major powers is stronger than the other. I wonder what kind of people will be present. Plus, the relationship among the five major powers aren’t that good. When these disciples meet, there will be conflicts.”

“That is the competition among the five major powers. It is not related to us. We just have to take care of ourselves. Once we enter the Death Mountain, we should stick together. Many have said that inside the mountain is dangerous. This place is the ruins of an ancient super large sect, and most of the dead disciples have turned into dark souls. It is truly scary.”

.....

Noises of discussions were everywhere. They had known about the legend of the Death Mountain. Although the opening of the mountain was a golden opportunity for many, they knew the risks behind it. By just strolling around the mountain, they would need to put their lives at stake. However, the path of cultivation had been always challenging. Despite the fact that there were a lot of dangerous obstacles that lied before them, many of them were still



willing to give it a try.

There were five awe-inspiring groups outside the Death Mountain. The people around them were crouching on the ground at one fixed side. No one dared to stand near these five groups. These people were the disciples of the five major powers. There were at least a hundred of them in every group. These were just the early birds, the high rank disciples were yet to arrive.

“The true geniuses of the major five are not present yet, but they will be here very quickly. They will definitely be here before the opening of the Death Mountain.”

“Look, quickly. Those are the geniuses of the Nebula Sect. They are the first to arrive.”

Someone cheered at their arrival and raised their heads to look at the direction. They felt a very strong Qi lingering in the air, a young man in blue was flying rapidly in the sky along with many elders who wore their uniforms. The requirement for entering the Death Mountain was only limited by the level of grade, not the age of the cultivators.

This group had at least forty people, it was a blend of Combat Kings and Combat Emperors. They came before the temporary campsite of the Nebula Sect. The disciples who had arrived early looked at them with respectful gazes.

The leader of the group seemed to be a mere twenty-seven or twenty-eight years old. This youth's Qi was overwhelming, and his

extremely good-looking face was as sharp as blade. His grade had reached the peak of Eighth Grade Combat Emperor, which was only a step away from the Ninth Grade Combat Emperor.

He was called Guo Shao Fei, one of the disciples in the Hall of Fame and also a figure on the Sky ranking.

Besides him, there were also a few more powerful Eighth Grade Combat Emperors that came, each of their faces was carrying an intimidating arrogance. Zuo Ling Er was one of them. She stood at the front of the line beside Guo Shao Fei. She looked around her surroundings as if she was looking for something. She had improved so much since her entry to the Nebula Sect. Currently, she was a Second Grade Combat Emperor.

A newly advanced Second Grade Combat Emperor shouldn't be qualified to stand beside Guo Shao Fei, but her identity was different from an ordinary one. She was an origin disciple of Hua Gu Yi, which meant that her status was even higher than a core disciple. In addition, she was a rare gift to the sect given her innate talents. It was definitely what the sect had been targeting for, so who would dare to neglect her existence?

“Look, he is the leader of the Nebula Sect's group, Guo Shao Fei. Even an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor has to listen to him. I heard that he is number five on the Sky Ranking, truly terrifying.”

“All of you, look at that little girl. Someone said that the Nebula Sect has accepted two rare geniuses, one of them is that little girl who is only twelve years old and has already reached the Combat Emperor realm. This is what they call a monstrous genius, very

scary. The other one is even scarier, he is the Jiang Chen who was able to initiate a disaster.”

“What? Jiang Chen has joined Nebula Sect? I also heard that, previously, there is a rumor that Jiang Chen is a true monster. His technique is violent and cruel, meaning that he is someone who shouldn’t be trifled with. He is really a twisted devil king but I’ve never thought that he will join Nebula Sect.”

“Faster, look, a very strong devil aura. It’s the people from Dark Devil Religion.”

.....

Not very far away in the sky, a black devil cloud appeared all of a sudden. A part of the sky was fully covered with a cold devil aura like a mat. In the blink of an eye, the aura approached them and morphed into roughly forty men in black. Each one of their faces had a cold expression.

Judging purely by their Qi, they weren’t slightly inferior to Nebula Sect, but one thing is doubtful, it was that their leader was a young man of only Sixth Grade Combat Emperor.

This person’s white hair was dancing in the air, and had a very good-looking appearance. Both of his eyes were so deep, nobody couldn’t see its end. A side of his mouth was slightly tilted which told everyone that he was an inhibited guy. Behind him was a few powerful Eighth Grade Combat Emperors. They included both young and old men but they were all standing behind the young

man. Apparently, even with their high grades their status wasn't above him.

The white-haired guy wasn't a stranger, he is Han Yan. Currently, he was now a Sixth Grade Combat Emperor. If his two friends saw this, they would feel so startled their mouth would be left wide open. The Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline could finally develop its potential power. By the time he came out of the devil blood pool, his grade rose to Sixth Grade Combat Emperor, he improved at a very scary rate.

“Look quickly, that is the new young master of the Dark Devil Religion. I heard he is a foster child who is picked up by the master of the religion.”

“According to the rumors, that man has the Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline, a rare genius that appears every ten thousand years. There is a time when he entered the Devil Blood Pool for cultivation, never has anyone thought that he will reach the Sixth Grade Combat Emperor in that amount of time. I believe that even with his grade, his power is on par with those Eighth Grade Combat Emperors.”

“Yeah, that man is adored by the master of the Dark Devil Religion, his status in the religion is very high. No one have received the same status as him, not even the geniuses and elders.”

# Chapter 660 - The Rising of Fiery Aura

---

Guo Shao Fei of the Nebula Sect is a genius who's also on the Sky Ranking. He had always been very well known in the sect. No one was surprised that he appeared at the Death Mountain. Instead, the people who attracted the crowd's eyes was the young master of Dark Devil Religion and Zuo Ling Er.

These two had only recently emerged in the Mysterious Domain. The term 'young master of Dark Devil Religion' alone was enough to intimidate a lot of people. It was the identity of the master's foster child. Just by owning this identity he could intimidate almost everyone, regardless of where he went to.

Although Zuo Ling Er's wasn't as strong she had the biggest potential. You couldn't find someone as gifted as this twelve-year-old Combat Emperor. Even in the Immemorial Family in the Pure Land, you couldn't find a monstrous genius like her. Her very existence in the Mysterious Domain was a miracle.

After Han Yan arrived, his gaze fell upon the Nebula Sect's group, trying to make a quick recognition. However, disappointment filled his face after that as he was not able to find the person he wanted to see. If Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were here, he would be able to recognize them from the group instantly.

The news of Jiang Chen joining Nebula Sect reached Han Yan as well. This young master had been asking someone to keep tabs on Jiang Chen's movement in secret.

“Not in the group of the Nebula Sect? It seems that he hasn’t come along with them, but how can these two miss such a great event?”

Han Yan smirked. He knew his two good friends too well. Those two were twisted devil kings that were only afraid of world peace. Wouldn’t it be meaningless to participate in this Death Mountain expedition without them? Furthermore, they wouldn’t miss this great chance to train themselves.

Hong Long

Waves of powerful Qi were drifting towards their direction again. However, it wasn’t coming from a single individual. Judging from the Qi, it wasn’t weaker than the Nebula Sect and Dark Devil Religion’s group, so it went without saying that this had to be from the five major powers.

A team of experts were flying in the sky not far away from where Han Yan’s group from. This was the group from Tan Family. The leader was also a young man who had a very powerful Qi. The expedition to the Death Mountain was actually a competition between geniuses. Every major power had sent their best genius to this big event so that it wouldn’t be disgraceful and silly for them. Normally, these geniuses were the leader of a team and at least at the peak of Eighth Grade Combat Emperor. It would be very shameful to have someone who had a lower level than their competitors’ leaders to lead the team.

“Look, it’s the Tan Family. That young leader in white whose hand is holding a fan seems like Tan Zhi Bai. He is the aborigine of

Tan Family which is different from those non-native disciples. His identity is very prestigious and his grade isn't lesser than Guo Shao Fei."

"The Tan Family is a huge clan. It is also the reason why they can be one of the major powers. The family itself is very strong, having geniuses in abundance. Thus, their overall strength aren't lower than the other four powers."

"Ya, seems like this expedition is going to turn into a dragon versus tiger battle. If these geniuses can get precious treasures underneath the Death Mountain, their future will be boundless."

.....

Talks and noises filled the air, as everyone was discussing about the participating disciples of the five major powers. The crowd looked at them in admiration, thinking how blissful and honourable it would be to be a disciple of one of the major powers.

The young leader of Tan family stood at the centre of the group. Although the formation of the Death Mountain was weakened, no one was allowed to enter until all the leaders of the major powers had arrived.

"Quickly, look. The people of Freedom Palace."

Someone shouted while seeing a few of the Freedom Palace's representatives landing down. A youth also led the group but the

young man looked very sturdy, had thick hair and his face was mostly bearded. Anyone could tell that he was a burly type of person. His height was two heads taller than an average person, and his bicep muscles were pushing outwards, making it look tight like a small hill. Obviously, he was a physique cultivator.

“That is Li Long, a figure on the Sky Ranking, representing the Freedom Palace. I heard that he has trained his muscle to the maximum. He can break a lofty mountain with just one punch, which in itself is very terrifying.”

“I really admire these geniuses. With their gifted innate talent plus the various cultivation resources, how possibly can we, odd cultivators, be compared with them?”<sup>[1]</sup>

“It’s no use admiring them. That is why we have to enter the Death Mountain to seek for unexpected treasures. If we are lucky we can be just like them, becoming the best among all cultivators. Even if we can’t join the major powers, it’s still not bad to join others.”

.....

The odd cultivators’ words were full of praise of admiration and envy towards the geniuses after seeing their elegant demeanour. However, the truth was always cruel. If they wanted to change their current situation and status, they needed to put in ten times more effort compared to others to be able to achieve their goals.

After that, three people walked out of the Freedom Palace’s



group. These three men were the people who sought for Jiang Chen and Sot Old Man in the last few days. The first was Wang Yi, a Sixth Grade Combat Emperor. He then pointed at the Nebula Sect's group.

“Jiang Chen of Nebula Sect, show yourself now!”

Wang Yi's voice was so loud that no one could miss it.

Wah!

Surprised mumbling erupted from the crowd and all their gazes fell upon Wang Yi. They could see that his expression was hostile. Those who had talked about Jiang Chen before rolled their eyes immediately. It seemed that this Jiang Chen was a devil that caused nuisance, there would never be peace in wherever he goes. It wasn't just a nuisance, he had offended the Freedom Palace. This was before the opening of the Death Mountain, and someone from the Freedom Palace already wanted to find him so badly, it made them wonder what had actually caused these people to be so angry.

The originally calm and steady Han Yan released two stream of cold light after hearing what Wang Yi had just said. He didn't care whether Jiang Chen should be denounced, his friend had already offended too many people. As his brother, he would lend out his helping hand even if it means going against the whole world, he wouldn't hesitate to stand on his side.

“Who are you? You dare order my big brother to get out? Are you seeking death?”

Zuo Ling Er was the first person who couldn't take it. Wang Yi's tone made her furious. She took a step forward and pointed at him.

“Where did this yellow-skinned girl come from? You of Nebula Sect better hand over Jiang Chen to me, or else it will mean going against us.”

Wang Yi said while gritting his teeth.

“So what if we are opposing you? You think you can dominate the entire Mysterious Domain? Furthermore, junior brother Jiang isn't here.”

Guo Shao Fei said coldly. He began to grow interested towards this junior Jiang Chen who he hadn't seen before but just heard of. He had known about all the incidents that were related to Jiang Chen in the sect. He had to admit, this young man was really a freak who liked offending others. He had even offended the Freedom Palace, one of the major five. However, Guo Shao Fei wasn't concerned about that as the Nebula Sect never feared the Freedom Palace.

“That Jiang Chen has killed two Fifth Grade Combat Emperor elders from the Freedom Palace. We have to settle this grudge, this is related to our dignity. Guo Shao Fei, you should hand Jiang Chen over to me before the opening of the Death Mountain. The harmony here should not be destroyed because that won't bring you any benefits.”

Wang Yi continued to bellow his words.

“What? Jiang Chen has killed two Fifth Grade Combat Emperors? Isn’t he just a Combat King? Even if he has stepped into the Combat Emperor realm, how could he kill a Fifth Grade?”

“Absurd! How powerful is this Jiang Chen? He can even kill two Fifth Grade Combat Emperors. This is truly unbelievable!”

“That’s right, if this is true it explains why the Freedom Palace is so angry about him. They have lost two Fifth Grade Combat Emperors, it is a big loss to them.”

.....

Before Jiang Chen could appear, he had become a hot topic of everyone.

“Humph! Who do you think you are? You dare to talk to me in such a way? Ordering me to hand over people to you? I think you simply don’t know what is the meaning of death.”

Guo Shao Fei let out a cold humph, belittling Wang Yi. Logically, he wouldn’t care about Wang Yi because of the difference in their level of grade. If Wang Yi was shouting at him in the past, he would have easily crush himed with one finger.

“He may not be qualified, what about me? Guo Shao Fei, Jiang Chen has killed two of our elders. We have the right to speak.”

The tall and sturdy guy, Li Long, took a step forward. He didn't attempt to show his anger, but his voice rumbled like lightning that was so ferocious.

“Li Long, are you kidding me? Junior brother Jiang is merely a First Grade Combat Emperor. Even if he is powerful, how can he possibly kill two of your Fifth Grade Combat Emperor elders? Or are you implying that your Fifth Grade Combat Emperors are so weak that even a First Grade Combat Emperor can kill them?”

Guo Shao Fei smirked coldly but he was startled inside. He knew the Freedom Palace wouldn't be joking with him about this matter. The two elders must have died under the hands of Jiang Chen. This really shocked him as defeating a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor, Man Hong, and two Fifth Grade Combat Emperors were two different things.

“If he was in his First Grade Combat Emperor grade, he won't stand a chance, but that young man initiated the Heavenly Tribulation. He used the Heavenly Tribulation to kill two of our elders. I am certain many of you have seen the aftermath of the tribulation.”

The elder who successfully escaped said.

Everyone was startled again after hearing what the elder just said. Heavenly Tribulation? That should be a very far-fetched incident. Although many had seen the condition of the ruined wilderness, they never thought that it was caused by a tribulation.

“I have long heard about Jiang Chen, a monstrous genius that can initiate the heavenly tribulation. Turns out, he used the power of the Heavenly Tribulation to kill the elders of the Freedom Palace. No wonder...”

“He is a truly heaven defying man. The loss that the Freedom Palace suffered is immense, they have even lost their precious dignity. They definitely won’t let this matter go. Jiang Chen still hasn’t appeared, making the two large sects’ suppress their fiery anger that’s waiting to explode.”

# Chapter 661 - Engaging In Battle

---

The suppressed combat aura between the two groups were about to erupt. The Freedom Palace had lost two Fifth Grade Combat Emperors. The ones that they lost were elders, which meant that it varied a lot compared to disciples. Elders represented the dignity of the sect, if their murderer wasn't being hunted down or was compensated, the sect would be looked down upon by the others and would eventually become a laughing stock of everyone.

Guo Shao Fei was taken aback. The incident suddenly stirred his interest in this junior brother Jiang, but he had to make sure that the morale of Nebula Sect wasn't weaker than his opponent's regardless of what had happened between the elders of the Freedom Palace and Jiang Chen. Guo Shao Fei couldn't show any weakness.

Guo Shao Fei wasn't a fool. Especially the figures on the Earth Ranking, none of them were fools, they were all not only good in combat but also in terms of intelligence. Everyone knew of the crime that Jiang Chen had committed in Nebula Sect, but he wasn't even slightly penalized for any of those crimes. Obviously, he was cared of by the upper ranks of the sect or even by the sect master. Jiang Chen was a rare genius that could initiate the heavenly tribulation, which meant that this kind of genius would only appear every ten thousand years. Guo Shao Fei naturally wouldn't treat such a person as his enemy. Furthermore, Jiang Chen was also his junior brother, meaning that he should protect him.

“Not only are the elders of the Freedom Palace murdered by a mere First Grade Combat Emperor, they even dared to announce

such a shameful incident openly to everyone, truly shameless.”

At this point, an enigmatic voice sounded. Everyone turned and found the source of the sound, it was from the Dark Devil Religion’s young master, Han Yan, who spoke. He couldn’t let these hostile people of the Freedom Palace continuously denounce his friend.

“Right, Jiang Chen has colluded with the Dark Devil Religion. He used the Heavenly Tribulation to kill two of our elders because of Sot Old Man. The Nebula Sect is a righteous sect, how can they even tolerate their own disciple working with the Dark Devil Religion?”

The elder who escaped from Jiang Chen said when he saw Han Yan. He wouldn’t miss the chance to condemn Jiang Chen even further regarding his alliance with the Dark Devil Religion.

“What did you say, old man? What’s wrong with our Dark Devil Religion? We have men who are even nobler than yours. It has to be because your elders besieged our elder, leaving Jiang Chen no choice but to interfere.”

A youth who was an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor shouted. His name was Mo Sang. He was at the same grade as Guo Shao Fei and was also a rare genius in the religion. If the young master hadn’t appeared all of a sudden, it would’ve been him who would lead the expedition this time. None dared to look down on him, every word he spoke had a lot of weight.

The people of the Dark Devil Religion started to respond. In the beginning, they didn't know why the young master had joined in the arguments between the Freedom Palace and the Nebula Sect. Now, they all understood that it was related to their religion as well. Jiang Chen's acts were to save an elder of their religion. In that case, they wouldn't do nothing about it anymore. The impression that they had for Jiang Chen slowly improved and became better.

“You people of the devil religion are always committing wicked acts. Anyone has the right to punish you people. Even if it's me who met your elder, I'll definitely kill him.”

Tan Zhi Bai of the Tan Family said while pointing the tip of his folding fan. Initially, it was a conflict between the Freedom Palace and the Nebula Sect but in a moment, the Dark Devil Religion and Tan Family had gotten involved as well.

“See, the inharmonious major five have begun a conflict because of Jiang Chen.”

“I heard that Tan Zhi Bai and Mo Sang have engaged in a battle before. So, Tan Zhi Bai's resentment against the Dark Devil Religion isn't so surprising.”

“Let's see what's going to happen next. It's becoming even more heated up. Look, the Skyhill School has come. The Death Mountain is going to open soon, but no one knows whether these major powers will start a fight before it opens.”



.....

The Skyhill School didn't appear to be interested in the current conflict. They only stood in their groups as if they were also bystanders like the odd cultivators.

“Tan Family, eh? Do you have the right to kill us? Try to do that now if you have the guts, I'll be sure to tear you apart.”

Mo Sang was infuriated. A wave of devil aura shot out from his body. A slight disagreement would always prompt the people of Dark Devil Religion to fight, this had always been their personality. They could be cunning and sinister, but they were always very straightforward in a battle and they didn't follow any rules.

“You want a piece of me? Bring it on! I'm not afraid of you.”

Tan Zhi Bai made a clap with his folding fan and jumped to the sky. Mo Sang naturally didn't feel threatened as well, turning into a devil light and also rushed towards the sky. In the blink of an eye, the two of them clashed, their battlefield was the sky, making the whole area below to darken.

“Hehe...They are fighting now. This is really exciting.”

The leader of Skyhill School's group chuckled. He had a good and masculine look and seemed to be around the age of twenty seven or eight. He had a moderate body shape and glittering eyes which

made anyone able to easily recognize him as the most outstanding person of the group. He was called Yan Hui and his grade was at the peak of Eighth Grade Combat Emperor. Currently, he was watching the battle between Mo Sang and Tan Zhi Bai with a leisurely face and a relaxed mood.

These two geniuses were fighting intensely. If it didn't go well, it could simply turn into an ugly battle. Though the Death Mountain hadn't opened yet, if there was a big fight outside the mountain, it would be very interesting.

On the other side, the Freedom Palace and the Nebula Sect were still in conflict, each of them refused to give in to the other. Jiang Chen had a good reputation in Nebula Sect, particularly in the inner sect as he was an idol of countless disciples.

“Guo Shao Fei, we, the Freedom Palace, won't leave this matter unsettled. Someone from the Nebula Sect must account for this incident, so you should pass Jiang Chen to us.”

Li Long continued to say.

“Go and find my big brother yourself if you can but I doubt your ability though. Even if he stands before you, I don't think you will be able to catch him.”

Zuo Ling Er shouted while clenching her fists so hard that a cracking sound was heard. If it wasn't for her inability to fight this man, she would have already struck him given her forthright attitude. How could she ever allow someone to keep on defaming

her big brother?

Not very far away, four silhouettes appeared in a flash. There were three men and one dog. On the side, they saw the intense battle between Mo Sang and Tan Zhi Bai.

“Why are they battling?”

Tyrant was stunned.

“That is our rare genius, Mo Sang, but why is he fighting against the Tan Family?”

Sot Old Man felt startled.

“It seems that the relationship between Dark Devil Religion and Tan Family isn’t that good after all. I have a friend in the Tan Family named Tan Zhi Hao, and he will be helping you guys to reach a compromise in the conflict. Now that we are going into the Death Mountain, getting one extra friend is better than getting an enemy.”

Jiang Chen smiled. He could feel the prominence of Tan Zhi Hao’s identity in the Tan Family. As Jiang Chen had saved his life before, the Tan Family would certainly consider him as a friend.

Jiang Chen had no idea what had happened outside the mountain. Due to the quartet’s booming Qi, they were noticed by a lot of people very quickly. Their strong Qi drew many people’s

attention. The first who saw them coming was the group from the Freedom Palace.

“It’s Jiang Chen. He finally appeared.”

“Kill him now!”

Two elders of the Freedom Palace bellowed and led the way towards Jiang Chen’s direction. Wang Yi’s body swayed and rushed over to join them. These three were the team who was hunting for Jiang Chen. Now that they had seen him, their murderous aura erupted.

“Look, that young man in white is Jiang Chen, he is still very young...”

“Ya, seems like the Freedom Palace isn’t going to let him go this time. I have no idea how will he deal with them.”

“That is Sot Old Man from the Dark Devil Religion. Jiang Chen really has colluded with the devil religion. The Freedom Palace is right about this.”

.....

Many people were staring at Jiang Chen. Three men from the Freedom Palace lost their patience and had went towards them to block their path.

“Jiang Chen, you killed our elders. Die now!”

Wang Yi bellowed, his murderous aura bursting forth from his body.

“People of the Freedom Palace! Humph!”

Jiang Chen revealed a smirk, and made a cold humph. “Sot Old Man, block this dude for me.”

Without any hesitation, Sot Old Man instantly met his charge. He was now at the pinnacle of Sixth Grade Combat Emperor, and is certainly able to hold Wang Yi back. His devilish aura rose to the sky, and using the dark cold Devil Weapon he was holding, he slashed it at Wang Yi.

“Jiang Chen, you can’t use the Heavenly Tribulation anymore, I want to see what other tricks you have up your sleeve.”

The two elders gritted their teeth while positioning themselves in the left and right of Jiang Chen, then attacked him at the same time. The three attackers from Freedom Palace were too fast for one to react. It would be too late for a rescue team to save Jiang Chen and Sot Old Man.

However, Jiang Chen didn’t require any help.

Keng

The light from the sword shined brilliantly, Jiang Chen's tyrannical aura was coming out of his body when the Heavenly Saint Sword appeared in his hand. The sword was so divine and the surface was fully covered with blood red dragon marks. The sword was now a very powerful Emperor Weapon, being many times stronger than before.

Swoosh

Without saying a word, Jiang Chen slashed at the elder who escaped his grasp before. His slash shook both heaven and earth. When the sword had locked his Qi, the initially confident elder could feel his confidence crumbling. He sensed the Qi of hell, the taste of death.

In a moment of panic, the elder drew out his weapon and attempted to deflect Jiang Chen's attack.

Unfortunately, Jiang Chen's attack was too powerful for a Fifth Grade Combat Emperor to defend against. The power of Jiang Chen's Heavenly Saint Sword was inestimable. Stunning the eyes of many people, the sword slashed through the elder's body. The elder wailed in agony before dying. His body was slashed into half and fell from the sky.

“What?”

Another elder who was also lunging toward Jiang Chen exclaimed. He looked at Jiang Chen in terror as though he had just seen a grim reaper. His original bursting Qi suddenly dimmed as if it had disappeared, similar to a low tide.

“Since you have come, why don’t you die together?”

Jiang Chen met him with another strike. The light of the sword turned into a piece of web, completely containing the elder. Jiang Chen’s slash was too fast for the elder to react. It was an all-out attack, the Fifth Grade Combat Emperor couldn’t resist it at all.

Argh

Another wail was heard, another elder of the Freedom Palace was dead!

## Chapter 662 - Brothers Reunion

---

It was too fast, there was no doubt about it. Jiang Chen's simple slashes had gotten rid of the two Fifth Grade Combat Emperor. The scene was extremely domineering. Everyone couldn't believe their eyes. Even Sot Old Man and Wang Yi who were battling felt the same way and they stopped their battle. Even the intense battle from far away between Mo Sang and Tan Zhi Bai stopped. This was the first time they saw Jiang Chen, but they never thought that this young man could be so wild that he even dared to kill two of their elders in front of the Freedom Palace. In fact, this wasn't simply killing, it was also slapping the Freedom Palace's face, defaming them.

“My God! Is he Jiang Chen? I have heard about his cruelty and emotionless style of dealing with things. The rumours didn't judge him wrongly. He is a being that would kill without even blinking his eyes. Even though the Freedom Palace is just ahead of him, he dared to killed the two elders before them. This boldness is absolutely unparalleled.”

“Unmatched, no one can match with him. This is called tyrannical. Not even caring about who it is, he will just cut your body off.”

“I have never seen such a powerful man, but what surprises me the most is that Jiang Chen is merely a Second Grade Combat Emperor. The Fifth Grade Combat Emperor elders didn't even stand a chance to at least defend themselves when he attacked. This is too scary. So this is why they call him the man who can initiate the heavenly tribulation. His combat strength is truly heaven defying.



.....

Everybody on the scene was startled by the battle. The entire crowd was having an adrenaline rush now because of Jiang Chen. Many of them had never seen him before, some had only heard of his name today since the Mysterious Domain was a big place and thus it wasn't illogical for some to not know about him. That scene had imprinted a strong impression of Jiang Chen in everyone's head that he would definitely become well known as he had done something that no one else would dare to do.

Jiang Chen held the Heavenly Saint Sword, the tyrannical aura surrounded his body from top to bottom. He strode to Wang Yi and clamoured, "Scram!"

This clamour was as loud as thunder. It trembled Wang Yi's eardrum so much that he could hear a buzzing sound. As a Sixth Grade Combat Emperor, he wasn't supposed to fear him, but he didn't know why, perhaps it was influenced by Jiang Chen's powerful Qi and his cruel killings. Wang Yi couldn't help but walk two steps backwards.

"You garbage! you want to kill me with just e this?"

Jiang Chen gave him a scornful look and flew towards the Nebula Sect with large steps, followed by Tyrant and Big Yellow. Sot Old Man was the last, attempting to prevent Wang Yi from performing a sneak attack.

“Why would I fear him? He is merely a Second Grade Combat Emperor. Even if he can kill a Fifth Grade Combat Emperor, so what? He is still no match for me, but why am I afraid of him?”

Wang Yi had the urge to self-injure himself to punish his foolish reaction. He was intimidated by his opponent, a mere Second Grade Combat Emperor opponent? What a disgrace!

“Big brother!”

Zuo Ling Er welcomed her big brother delightfully. They had been separated ever since they entered the Nebula Sect. This was the first time that they met each other. She felt very happy when she saw how divine her big brother was, her eyes, shining like stars, full of admiration.

“Not bad, Xiao Er!”

Jiang Chen touched Zuo Ling Er’s head gently. She was now at the Second Grade Combat Emperor, which was did not meet his estimation.

“Junior Jiang, you were a little reckless back there.”

Guo Shao Fei said. Jiang Chen had killed two elders of the Freedom Palace in front of so many people, which was undoubtedly reckless. In other words, the conflict between Jiang Chen and the Freedom Palace wouldn’t vanish until either one of them die.

However, Guo Shao Fei was looking at Jiang Chen with eyes full of praise. He clearly saw what Jiang Chen had done just now. If it was him, he wouldn't be able to kill the elders even if he was a Fifth Grade Combat Emperor, or at least not as easy as Jiang Chen did.

“Big brother, Guo Shao Fei is from the core sect. He is the leader for this expedition.”

Zuo Ling Er introduced.

“I disagree with brother Guo. They wanted to kill me, was I supposed to just stand there and be killed by them?”

Jiang Chen greeted brother Guo with his fists. His first impression of brother Guo wasn't bad at all.

The disciples of the Nebula Sect were looking at Jiang Chen with an admiring look, including the core disciples. Many of them had heard of but hadn't seen this man, especially the outer disciples. Although it was the first time they saw him, they had already viewed him as a War God.

“Jiang Chen, you're truly audacious!”

Li Long of the Freedom Palace was infuriated. They had lost another two Fifth Grade Combat Emperors before the opening of the Death Mountain. Furthermore, the elders were killed in front

of them, causing shame to the palace. If they couldn't get rid of Jiang Chen, they wouldn't have the face to continue existing in this domain anymore.

Jiang Chen didn't respond to Li Long's threat, and walked towards the Dark Devil Religion. It showed that he didn't bother what Li Long was saying. This was a huge insult to high rank grade cultivators like Li Long.

“Are you seeking death?”

Li Long raged and lunged towards Jiang Chen.

“Li Long, you want to kill our people in front of us?”

Guo Shao Fei blocked the way, giving no opportunity for Li Long to strike Jiang Chen.

“Guo Shao Fei, get out of my way! This is a matter between Jiang Chen and the Freedom Palace.”

Li Long's eyes were fiery red when he bellowed.

“You, an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor attacking a Second Grade Combat Emperor, don't you feel ashamed? I dare you to find a Second Grade Combat Emperor among your people to fight with him.”

Guo Shao Fei confronted him. If he backs away, he will be considered a weakling, and would be looked down.

Guo Shao Fei's words made many people rolled their eyes frantically. Allowing a Second Grade Combat Emperor of the Freedom Palace to fight Jiang Chen did not vary from putting him to his death

Li Long gritted his teeth, he had no other choice. He knew it would be impossible to seek revenge on Jiang Chen in front of Guo Shao Fei, and the Freedom Palace couldn't afford to start a war with the Nebula Sect as it would bring great loss to the Freedom Palace.

Li Long's revealed a murderous gaze. He must kill Jiang Chen, it would be hard to find a chance to do that after entering the Death Mountain.

Jiang Chen walked straight and reached before the Dark Devil Religion, Sot Old Man greeted Han Yan with his fists.

Nonetheless, Han Yan attention was directed not only on Sot Old Man, but on Jiang Chen as well. He had been watching him ever since he arrived.

“You are still as domineering as always, wherever you go.”

Han Yan said.

“Young master of the Dark Devil Religion, is this bullshit? You are a Sixth Grade Combat Emperor now, seems like you have been living an easy life.”

After Jiang Chen finished, he extended his arms to hug his friend, Han Yan did the same. They ignored everyone's gazes around them and gave each other a warm ,big hug.

It was a strong hug that was full of brotherhood, which couldn't be understood by outsiders. It had been a long time since they stepped into the Divine Continent together. Finally, the brothers could reunite again. That pleasant feeling wasn't describable.

They weren't people that were good at expressing their feelings. In fact, they didn't need to as this hug expressed everything.

“Have the two finished hugging? Are you ignoring master dog's existence?”

Big Yellow couldn't stand this anymore and opened his mouth ,biting Han Yan's back side.

“You stupid dog! You haven't changed one bit!”

Han Yan landed his leg on Big Yellow's head. Later, the two men and dog were laughing happily in front of countless people without any care. Jiang Chen didn't care about the current situation, all he desired was to be able to do what he wanted.

This scene was witnessed by everyone. Many understood why the young master would defend Jiang Chen at the beginning during the denunciation. It wasn't as simple as because Jiang Chen had saved Sot Old Man, they could tell these two had knew each other for a long time, their relationship was far greater than any ordinary friendship.

The people of the Dark Devil Religion looked at Jiang Chen in delight. They instantly became a fan of him due to his actions. It proved that their young master was also a domineering being, to be befriended by such a person.

At this point, Mo Sang and Tan Zhi Bai stopped all of their movement and went back to their own group, but their urge to fight each other never stopped.

Judging from the current situation, even if someone initiated a battle, no one would be willing to fight as everyone was here to enter the Death Mountain to acquire some benefits. Battling here wouldn't bring them any benefit.

Jiang Chen turned to scan the group of the Tan Family. His gaze swept through the crowd but didn't find either Tan Zhi Hao or Tan Lang. It made him frown suddenly. Tan Zhi Hao was already a Combat Emperor when they were at the Liang Province, he wouldn't miss an expedition like this. He felt weird that he couldn't find his friends in the Tan Family group.

Jiang Chen greeted the leader of the Tan Family and said. "I'm Jiang Chen, a friend of Tan Zhi Hao."

This was the only thing that he could say. He only revealed his relationship with Tan Zhi Hao deliberately to tell them that there wasn't a need to fight as they were allies.

“Humph! Tan Zhi Hao, he can't even fend for himself. What does your friendship with him got to do with us?”

Unexpectedly, Tan Zhi Bai smiled coldly and said.

“What do you mean?”

Jiang Chen's face changed. It seemed that Tan Zhi Hao had faced some difficulties in the Tan Family. His favourable feeling towards the Tan Family had faded instantly as he revealed two cold lights from his eyes.

“Only a piece of garbage.”

Tan Zhi Bai said in a plain tone while the folding fan was moving in front of his chest.

This was something that Jiang Chen had never expected. He was a good friend of Tan Zhi Hao. If his friend were to encounter some troubles, he couldn't do nothing about it. This might even involve Tan Lang. It was he who had suggested Tan Lang to follow Tan Zhi Hao back to the Tan Family. If Tan Lang was being treated badly, Jiang Chen wouldn't be able to forgive himself.



# Chapter 663 - The Opening Of The Death Mountain

---

Jiang Chen's face didn't look good. He thought that the Tan Family was his ally. However, from the looks of it now, it was impossible for them to be his ally but they could possibly be his enemy. Jiang Chen didn't continue the conversation. Even with the presence of Tan Zhi Hao, he couldn't do much to help alter the situation. Jiang Chen had to find another way to solve it once he came out from the Death Mountain.

The fiery aura among four of the major five powers was strong even if they hadn't really engaged in a war. If it wasn't due to the big event which was the opening of the Death Mountain being the top priority, they would have already started a bloody war ever since they found out about Jiang Chen's bold action. This place wasn't suitable for that kind of activity at all as it wouldn't bring any benefits to any of the major powers. The Freedom Palace, the one who wanted Jiang Chen dead so badly, would have numerous chances to take his life once he entered the Death Mountain.

Suddenly, five strong Qis' flew towards the crowd from different directions with a very fast speed. Many disciples who were in lower grade couldn't even catch a glimpse of their silhouettes. They appeared above the sky within a split second.

It was like they had made an appointment for a meeting as they had all appeared at exactly the same time.

Their emergence quietened the crowd down at the scene. An intense Saint Aura was released from their bodies like a high tide

wave in the sea, totally covering the sky. The people felt pressured by these auras that their souls shivered slightly, stirring up their sense of admiration for them.

The silhouettes were Nebula Kidd of the Nebula Sect, Freedom King of the Freedom Palace, Skyhill Taoist of the Skyhill School, Tan Zhen Tian of Tan Family and Wu Yi Mo of the Dark Devil Religion. They were either called the five great heroes or the legendary five tycoons. Sects like the Nebula Sect and the Freedom Palace had their masters' names inherited by every successor. Each generation of sect masters would be named as Nebula Kidd and Freedom King as this was the law. It represented prestige and strength.

These five Fourth Grade Minor Saints were strong enough to represent the entire Mysterious Domain's peak Combat Strength. Everyone's gaze fell upon them with burning eyes, especially those odd cultivators and some disciples of minor powers. They were all excited to be able to see the legendary tycoons in person. It wasn't something that they had even dreamt of, especially not all five of them together. This matter was enough for them to boast in front of those who didn't have the chance to come when they returned.

Freedom King was wearing a purple coat armour on his sturdy body. After he arrived, he saw the two dead bodies. He recognized them as they were the elders of his palace based on their uniforms.

“What happened? Who killed the elders of my Freedom Palace?”

Freedom King raged. A strong aura suddenly rushed out of his body, inciting fear among the crowd.

“Master, this was the doing of Jiang Chen of Nebula Sect. He killed four of our Fifth Grade Combat Emperors elders.”

Li Long greeted Freedom King with fists and pointed at Jiang Chen’s direction.

After his sentence was finished, the five tycoons fixed their eyes on Jiang Chen. They could feel that Jiang Chen Qi, he was merely a Second Grade Combat Emperor, but how could he possibly kill a Fifth Grade Combat Emperor? Wasn’t this too unbelievable?

Nebula Kidd was the one who was startled the most. Back when Jiang Chen first entered the Nebula Sect, he was merely a Ninth Grade Combat King. Within a short period of time, he had reached Second Grade Combat Emperor and he was able to kill Fifth Grade Combat Emperors with that level.

However, even if he also was surprised by Jiang Chen, he was the most calm of all as he knew the true identity of Jiang Chen. He didn’t feel very shocked by the fact that Jiang Chen could do such a heaven defying act. Since he was the reincarnation of the Greatest Saint, if he hadn’t created such heaven defying miracles, it would be very unnatural.

Nebula Kidd became more confident to work with Jiang Chen after seeing his drastic improvement. His future was probably in Jiang Chen’s hands now. Following behind the back of the once Greatest Saint wouldn’t bring any disadvantages to him.

“Humph! A weak kid dares to kill my elders! You are seeking death!”

Freedom King made a cold humph. He launched an attack with his palm-like claw at Jiang Chen. Who wouldn't know how powerful a Fourth Grade Minor Saint was? His Qi was strong enough to immobilize Jiang Chen.

To Freedom King, he was a very rare genius, but he was an enemy now. He was as fragile as an ant in front of a Minor Saint and could be pinched to death easily.

\*Hong Long\*

Nebula Kidd casted a skill, he couldn't allow Freedom King to kill Jiang Chen. His defensive skill met Freedom King's.

“Freedom King, you are belittling me, isn't it? This is my disciple, you can't kill him as you like.”

Nebula Kidd was enraged. His relationship with Freedom King hadn't been very good, and Jiang Chen was very important to him. If a master didn't stop his opponent from killing his disciple, he would be laughed at by everyone for his cowardice.

“Nebula Kidd, you wish to start a war with me just because of a disciple?”

Freedom King's face was solemn.

“Bring it on. I’m not afraid of you. You are also one of the tyrannical lords of this generation, but as a Fourth Grade Minor Saint, how shameful it is for you to bully a Second Grade Combat Emperor? Won’t you become a laughing stock once this news is spread? Or perhaps you don’t have a young one to represent you?”

Nebula Kidd’s words showed his determination.

“Haha...Freedom King, this is too shameful. It is already shameful enough that your Fifth Grade Combat Emperors couldn’t handle a Second Grade Combat Emperor. Let your core disciple deal with him if you have the guts. There is no need for you to handle him personally because even me feel humiliated for you.”

The master of the Dark Devil Religion, Wu Yi Mo, laughed, not willing to let go of the chance to send an insult to Freedom King.

Freedom King’s expression changed, he made a cold humph and stopped his attempt to attack. To personally handle a Combat Emperor by himself was really a shameful act. There were more than enough core disciples who could get rid of him.

Freedom King gave the orders secretly using his Divine Sense to the core disciples. “Listen, don’t let me see this young man walk out of the Death Mountain alive.”

Li Long motioned his body and bowed at Freedom King after receiving the order.

“Alright. No more delays. We should hurry to open the Death Mountain.”

Tan Zhen Tian said.

After that, the five masters came together and built three imaginary passageways in the spatial zone that connected directly to the internal part of the Death Mountain.

“Look! The Death Mountain is going to be open in no time. The five Minor Saint Tycoons opened it with their combined strengths.”

“We are going to enter the mountain for an expedition, I have been expecting this for a long time.”

“I must get something good when I enter.”

.....

Many had started to feel nervous. This was the day that they had been waiting for. They have all been preparing for this big event to happen and would rush into it as soon as it was opened.

Very quickly, the three passageways turned solid in the sky above their heads.

The three passageways were of different lengths and would lead to different places under the Death Mountain. There were three levels that were being opened. Every level had a different difficulty and danger. The first level was suitable for Combat Soul, the second level was for the Combat Kings and the third was for the cultivators of Combat Emperor.

“Let’s go, we are going in.”

Some had flew up wildly and chose the passageway according to their level of grade and entered in a flash. The entrance of the passageway was enormous, big enough for them to enter in a large group like a swarm of wasps.

The geniuses of the five major powers were also getting into different passageways according to their cultivations. Fundamentally, very few of them would choose the passageway that leads to a higher level of difficulty than what their current grade can handle. Even a very powerful Combat King wouldn’t choose to enter the third level, because the higher the level, the more dangerous it becomes. They were here to seek for treasures, not for their deaths and none would bet their lives on this expedition.

“Big brother, let’s go in together.”

Zuo Ling Er stood beside Jiang Chen.

“Who’s this little girl?”

Han Yan asked. He had already found out that there must be a special relationship between these two when Zuo Ling Er stood out to defend Jiang Chen.

“This is Zuo Ling Er, my good foster sister. This is my good brother, Han Yan.”

Jiang Chen introduced them to one another. Han Yan smiled. He felt slightly shocked to learn that this twelve-year-old little girl had already reached Second Grade Combat Emperor. He wouldn't want to compare such genius with those in the Eastern Continent.

“Ah Han Yan, this is Tyrant. You can call him monk, he is also one of my good friends. We have faced life-and-death trials before.”

Jiang Chen patted Tyrant's shoulder while introducing him.

“Young master.”

Tyrant put one palm on his chest and said with respect.

“Great master is being too polite.”

Han Yan quickly responded.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow couldn't continue seeing this anymore, one raised his leg, and the other opened his mouth, then



attacked Tyrant from left and right.

“Will you die if you don’t pretend?”

Jiang Chen was speechless for this shameless monk although his solemnity could really convince people. Han Yan had obviously been deceived by his elder monk face.

Han Yan hadn’t met Tyrant before, but he could see it from how Jiang Chen and Big Yellow treated him. He could guess what type of person this monk was, probably another weirdo.

“Let’s go. The others have already entered. We can’t be left behind.”

Tyrant said and quickly flew towards the passageway on the third level like a fleeing suspect.

“Let’s go.”

Jiang Chen said. A few people flew into the same passageway. Not long after Jiang Chen had entered the channel, he suddenly felt a very strong wind attacking him from behind. The force was too strong for him to handle even with his current grade.

“Seeking death!”

Han Yan was infuriated. A wave of devil aura billowed from his

body and he turned into a sturdy black pillar of light, colliding with the attack behind.

\*Hong Long\*

The huge impact caused the entire passageway to be shaken. The one who made the sneak attack wasn't anyone unfamiliar, he was Li Long of the Freedom Palace. Han Yan defended the attack with his Sixth Grade Combat Emperor's strength, but he was slightly pushed away due to the strong impact.

However, Han Yan's face remained calm. If he completely activated his bloodline, he could undoubtedly confront Li Long.

# Chapter 664 - An Ancient Palace

---

“Li Long, are you seeking death?”

Han Yan and many others were infuriated. This was the passageway to the spatial zone. If a fight were to happen in the area, it would cause havoc and many would suffer ghastly consequences, they would be sucked into the slit of the spatial zone, and would be stuck there forever.

“Li Long, if you want to die, don’t bring us along. I will be the first to retaliate against those who launch any attacks in here.”

Tan Zhi Bai’s Qi was bursting from afar and said loudly. That scene just now was breath-taking. The collision of their skills had shaken the entire passageway slightly, and had created some tiny cracks. If this continued, the passageway would be broken and by that time, it wouldn’t be beneficial to anyone.

Li Long’s secret attack had caused many people to become furious. Tan Zhi Bai wasn’t the only one. In fact, all of them were angry about that incident. Even the disciples of the Freedom Palace wiped off cold sweats of fear and thought that Li Long was too rash, such an act would make everyone his enemy.

Li Long made a cold humph after seeing all their responses, he failed to kill Jiang Chen just now because he never thought the young master of Dark Devil Religion was so powerful. It would be virtually impossible for him to launch another attack. Once he had offended all of them, he would be a common target when they

entered deeper into the Death Mountain.

“I will kill you.”

Jiang Chen looked at Li Long behind him, and said in a cold and hostile tone. He had already set his target to Li Long. When he was determined to kill someone, there was one thing that he would ensure, which was to let the other person die before him.

Han Yan gave Li Long an angry glance at and said, “Let’s go, let’s ignore him for now.”

People were moving rapidly deeper into the Death Mountain. In an instant, a white fog was formed in front of them. It was a very thick fog that covered everything ahead, and not even the high grade Combat Emperors could see through it.

However, there was one who could see through the blurry fog. Jiang Chen’s eyesight was way sharper than any of them or maybe it was due to the power of his Great Soul Derivation Technique. In the fog, he could clearly see what lied behind it. There were layers upon layers of spatial zone entrances everywhere. These entrances wouldn’t give anyone any chance to choose which way they wanted to go, because there was a powerful force that would erupt and suck anyone who was nearby without any warning.

“Big brother, the white fog in front looks gruesome, is it dangerous?”

Zuo Ling Er asked curiously.

“It is a very thick fog, even I can’t see what’s inside of it. Perhaps, there is an unknown danger lying behind it. This place is called the Death Mountain and death can happen at any time.”

Han Yan said.

“No need to worry. There isn’t any danger ahead. We haven’t entered completely into the inner part of the Death Mountain yet. There are just an abundance of spatial zone entrances. Anyone who enters any of the entrances will be sucked into it and sent to a different spatial zone. The spatial zones under this mountain are countless, they are overlapping one another as this place was once inhabited by the Colossal Sect many years ago. Therefore, there will be a lot of treasure left behind. It depends on the spatial zone, some brings good luck, some are dangerous and some are both. Whatever we get depends on our luck. All of you, come and stick near me, I will use my force to create a shield that will allow us to squeeze ourselves into the same spatial zone.

Jiang Chen said it in low tone.

They nodded and immediately came nearer Jiang Chen. Without a doubt, they had high confidence in Jiang Chen. There weren’t anyone who could see through the mist but him, which was not surprising at all.

“Go.”

Jiang Chen strode forward and the others followed rapidly. In a split second, they had reached the edge of the white fog and a shapeless energy was released from Jiang Chen's body, enveloping everyone.

The moment they stepped into the foggy area, many couldn't help but shiver. They saw numerous entrances of spatial zones, every one of them was like the head of an ancient wild beast, a dark and cold Qi was coming out of the hole. The Qi had a very great power of absorption. If it wasn't for Jiang Chen's energy that was pulling them together, they would be sucked into different holes.

Fortunately, Jiang Chen had foresight that this would happen and prevented them from wandering off from the group.

The spatial zone passageway in this place was virtually no different from the others, so it was pointless to choose an entrance. When Jiang Chen was about to be sucked into one of the entrances, Big Yellow promptly said, "Go into the left one, quick!"

Jiang Chen was already near the entrance and was continuously being sucked in by the strong Qi of the hole. It would be extremely difficult to change the direction now. However, he had to follow Big Yellow's words, because this dog must have sensed something from it.

"Tell me earlier next time!"

Jiang Chen had the urge to vomit out blood. He casted the True

Dragon Palm to forcibly oppose the absorption force. The contrasting force made Jiang Chen suffer tremendously, he trembled as he walked towards the hole suggested by Big Yellow in a flash.

After Jiang Chen and the rest had entered into it, a dark shadow like the forces of evil followed behind them. This being had never appeared before, no one knew when this shadow had emerged. It was like that it had come specifically for Jiang Chen and had chosen the same passageway as them.

....

“Someone has entered, we can’t delay no more. All the treasures will be gone if we are late.”

An odd cultivator shouted. Consequently, a group of people frantically rushed forward into the white mist. Every one of them who entered was sucked into a different passageway and was sent to different areas.

As riches and luck had to depend upon the heavens, wherever they were sent to right now would be their fate. This was a symbol of one’s luck. Some might be able to obtain treasures that would amaze the entire world, others might be sent to the land of death and die, ending up as desolate bones.

Each of the silhouettes were covered by the white fog. All of them disappeared within a few minutes. After they had all entered into a particular hole, the passageway of the spatial zones behind them

vanished. The opening of the Death Mountain only happened for a few minutes as none of the five masters of Minor Saint rank dared to stay near the Death Mountain for long because that might activate the energy of the forbidden area and devour everyone within it. At that time, anyone who was in the mountain would die, something the five of them couldn't afford to happen.

....

In a flash of a light, Jiang Chen and the others entered an independent spatial zone. There were also many others who had entered with them. The ground was very different from what they expected. This place was dark and a wave of ghastly Qi lingered in the air, causing people to feel pressured.

“We have reached the inner part of the Death Mountain. We have to be more careful.”

Sot Old Man reminded.

The moment Jiang Chen found his balance on the ground, he felt a sudden wave of cold aura behind him. He abruptly turned his head and found an empty space behind, he found nothing. Even if he hadn't seen anyone behind him, the murderous aura just now was crystal clear.

“Dark Shadow.”

Jiang Chen frowned as his eyes glittered with a brilliant light.



The Dark Shadow had finally appeared. That's what they always do: they would continue to haunt someone until that person was killed.

Jiang Chen didn't show any signs of surprise. He was waiting for the Dark Shadow's assassin to make a move . He knew that the assassin was finding a chance to kill him. Jiang Chen had always raised his guard against the Dark Shadow's assassin ever since the last incident in the monastery. He couldn't underestimate the assassin who came this time. This assassin had to be a lot stronger than the previous one, and therefore, Jiang Chen had to be very careful even though it was impossible to guard against them.

“Big Yellow, what have you sensed?”

Jiang Chen looked at Big Yellow and knew that there had to be something great that existed in this area because Big Yellow had chosen it.

“I have no idea what it is, but I can tell you that there is a treasure hidden here.”

Big Yellow said intuitively. It was his intuition for treasure; his innate ability to detect any treasure was an awesome mystical power.

“Big brother, seems like that there's nothing here.”

Zuo Ling Er looked around and saw nothing apart from the dusky

fog and the ancient dark Qi that made her feel very uncomfortable.

“Ling Er, don’t be afraid. We’ll go to another area to find out.”

Jiang Chen said while choosing another direction to go. All of them strode quickly behind Jiang Chen and past through a desolate field before they could see a giant thing lying ahead.

“There is a building in front, probably left behind by the Colossus Sect. Let’s go over and find out.”

Han Yan said.

They increased their speed and came before the building.

It was an ancient palace that had been built for an unknown number of years. There were marks on the exterior of the palace, they were scars from a long time ago. The palace was huge. Despite the fact that this building had already been here for so many years, it still looked magnificent to the extent that anyone would fix their eyes on this admirable building for a long time.

Big Yellow sniffed and said, “There is treasure here, but also danger.”

Everyone felt nervous but also became excited after hearing Big Yellow’s latest update. The gate of the palace was open, waves of fog were spilling out of it. The air was stale, the Qi of death in the air caused discomfort to everyone.

“Go, let’s go in and see. Everyone has to be careful. Ah, Han and Sot Old Man, the three of us will lead them.”

Jiang Chen looked at Han Yan and Sot Old Man. In the team, they were the strongest. If there was a dangerous situation, they would be the first to deal with it.

“Alright.”

Han Yan and Sot Old Man nodded. Together with Jiang Chen, they walked one step after another into the palace. The moment they reached the gate, an irritating stench of blood drifted from inside. They saw two dead bodies lying in the palace with their eyes wide open. Their hearts were dug out and their facial expressions were hideous, showing the terror they had experienced before their death, as if they had seen the scariest being in the world.

# Chapter 665 - Terrifying Dark Souls

---

Hiss

Everyone gasped. The two people in front of them suffered tragic deaths and their bodies still lingered with the Qi of death. It seemed like they had been attacked by scary beings, even their hearts were dug out.

“A very cruel means of killing. These two are First Grade Combat Emperors. Based on their expression, they didn’t even have the chance to react before their hearts were taken out.”

Tyrant said. Many could predict what had happened to them. These two were odd cultivators that had just come in. They must have entered because they assumed that there were treasures hidden here, but had never expected that such a bad thing would happen. The blood on the floor hadn’t dried up yet. Obviously, they were killed not long ago. It was possible that they were killed just before Jiang Chen and the others came here. However, they hadn’t detected any big movements when they came in. Perhaps, these two people died without even having the chance to let out a cry.

It was way too terrifying, not even giving these two a chance to make a sound before they died. Who could have been this powerful?

While they were still discussing, a wave of gruesome wind blew over as a green sharp claw suddenly charged out of thin air without

any signs or warnings. It came with an incredible speed and was going for Jiang Chen's heart. The claw was full of Qi of Death, and its gloomy coldness shivered people's soul.

Humph

Jiang Chen made a cold humph. The hidden creature probably could made a sneak attack on a First Grade Combat Emperor, but it would be extremely difficult to do that to Jiang Chen.

Keng

The claw violently struck Jiang Chen's chest and a sound of metals jingling was produced, along with a brilliant spark. A golden armour appeared on the surface of Jiang Chen's chest, blocking the attack of the unknown being. The armour was the Firethorn Combat Armour. Jiang Chen had reached to a mastery where the armour would reveal itself whenever it sensed danger.

Hiss

The attack was a failure. The claw emitted a black Qi of death before it disappeared back into the darkness. However, before it was halfway back, it was caught by Jiang Chen in a flash. Jiang Chen's palm was now full of dragon marks and had turned into a razor-sharp dragon claw.

The unknown figure's sharp claw that was full of green fur trembled strongly and emitted even more Qi of death. This Qi was

deadly. It was more poisonous than any poison in this world. Nevertheless, this was ineffective to Jiang Chen. It was absolutely harmless to him because of his Dragon Transformation Art that could inhibit almost anything.

“Get out of there!”

Jiang Chen clamoured. He exerted strength into his dragon claw and pulled the thing from the darkness. It was a skeleton man that had stayed here for a very long time, his body was wrapped by a thick Qi of death and a layer of green fur that smelt like stench of a rotten corpse.

Krrrs

After it became visible, its mouth was moving in a wave-like motion, creating a very unpleasant and piercing sound as if it was the sound of sawing a log. Its jaw dropped and dashed forward to bite Jiang Chen.

Kyahhh

Zuo Ling Er exclaimed, she had been a treasured girl that had never seen such a horrible creature before. Despite the fact that she had exceptional combat strength she was only a kid, which meant that her mind-set hadn't reached to a certain maturity yet. Therefore, it was common for her to be shocked by this violent creature.

Jiang Chen's eyes were cold. The human skeleton only possessed the combat strength of a Second Grade Combat Emperor, which didn't make Jiang Chen worry at all no matter how fast the skeleton could move or how strong its Qi of death could be. Jiang Chen broke the sharp claw of the skeleton and clawed on its skull with his dragon claw, crushing it.

The human skeleton only had a moment of struggle before its Qi completely dissipated and fell to the ground.

“Big brother, that is very scary. What's that thing?”

Zuo Ling Er asked.

A few of their faces turned ugly. They had never seen such creature before. The skeleton had to be a human previously, but they didn't know why it had turned into such a scary creature after death, it had gone beyond their comprehension. Even Sot Old Man who had lived in the world of cultivation for about a half of his life had not encountered such creature before.

“That is dark soul.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Dark soul?”

Tyrant and the others asked. This was their first time hearing this 'dark soul' thing.

“That’s right. There are many unusual things in this world. Some people died with everlasting regret because they have things that they cannot let go of. People like this would condense a certain aura of grief on their bodies after they die. If there is a conducive environment, they will turn into a very scary dark soul that only kill living beings. They are born without any conscience, thus they are very cruel and emotionless. The dark soul in front of us has been existing in this place for a very long time. The only thing he knows is how to consume human hearts which shows that he has completely lost his conscience. Their bloodthirsty nature makes them kill anyone that comes into the area. Moreover, because they have existed in this place for a very long time, they can move in fast speed and are mostly untraceable, making them very difficult to deal with.”

Jiang Chen said. He had entered the Death Mountain before and had encountered dark souls at that time, but that dark soul wasn’t as powerful and horrid as the one before them.

“Everyone has to be extra careful from now on. There isn’t only one dark soul in this place. This two people was obviously attacked by two dark souls simultaneously, leading to their instant death.”

Jiang Chen reminded his friends again.

“Dammit! Where do these dark souls come from?”

Big Yellow couldn’t help but ask.



“It was the souls of the disciples of Colossal Sect. No one knows what happened at the time when everyone from the sect was killed. Many disciples and elders turned into dark souls to continue to protect their belongings. They will treat anyone who comes in as their enemy and will kill them without any hesitation.”

Jiang Chen said.

They suddenly felt sympathetic towards the dark souls, but that wouldn't free these dark souls from their miserable form, and they would undoubtedly attack any living being who entered their property.

“This palace should be a treasure vault, but it is still unknown as to how many treasure are still kept inside.”

Jiang Chen looked around but found nothing. The palace was empty. Then, he found a stairway that led upwards. The surface of the staircase was covered with dust so thick that it increased the thickness of every block of the stairs by three times.

“Keke, there must be something good upstairs, come, let's go up and find out.”

Big Yellow said and strode forward. At this point, another claw popped out of the air and headed towards Big Yellow's head.

Bang

The sharp claw clashed with Big Yellow's head. As his head was too hard, the claw failed to break his skull. Since Big Yellow didn't prepare for this attack, he was knocked away and fell to the ground.

Big Yellow was cursing at the abrupt attack from the creature. He made a circle on the ground and stood up. His mouth was still swearing about the shame the unknown creature caused him.

Some Qi of death remained on Big Yellow's body, but that didn't harm him.

"Be careful. The dark soul here is untraceable. It hides in the shadows in the air. We can't sense their existence, it seems like going upstairs won't be an easy task."

Tyrant knitted his eyebrows.

"Dammit! This group of stupid ghosts. I dare you to come out and fight me one on one, I'll bite you to death!"

Big Yellow raged. It had always been the others to get the worst of anything, he had never felt something worst in his life and it pained him for not being able to take revenge on his attacker.

"Big Yellow, come back here!"

Jiang Chen barked at Big Yellow. "All of you, stand at this doorway. I'll clear off every dark souls in here before you all come

in.”

“These dark souls are untraceable, how can you wipe them out without knowing where they are?”

Han Yan said.

“Dark souls are afraid of fire. They probably aren’t afraid of ordinary fire, but they are afraid of mine. My flames can make them visible.”

Jiang Chen smirked. He strode into the internal part of the palace. The dark souls didn’t launch any attacks, it was as if they knew this young man in white wasn’t a person to be trifled with, but Jiang Chen could sense their movements.

Hong

All of a sudden, a wave of flames shot out of Jiang Chen’s body. Using his body as its centre, the flames erupted out, turning the entire part of the palace into a sea of fire. Jiang Chen’s flames was as hot as sun and sparks of electricity clapped in the fire. It was the True Thunderfire that had undergone three tribulations and had been enhanced to a very scary level. Now that the True Thunderfire had fused with the True Dragon Flame, it was now considered to be the most powerful flame in the world, a definite counter to dark and cold properties.

“Brother Jiang’s flames are terrifying. His flames has strong

insulation against our devil aura.”

Sot Old man’s face had a shocked look. He had never seen such wild flames before. That kind of sun-like Qi could disrupt the circulation of devil Qi in his body. This made him feel very fortunate that Jiang Chen was a friend of the young master. If he was an enemy, the threat would be very great.

“Little Chen still has many other terrifying techniques. Even I, with my Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline, the differences between us doesn’t vary much.”

Han Yan smiled and said. He didn’t sound envious at all. As his brother, the stronger Jiang Chen became the happier he felt for him.

Chi Chi

The dark soul were burnt by the flames, they struggled painfully and seemed to be in a state of agony.

“Since you have died, you should die peacefully. Let me help you escape from your misery.”

Jiang Chen’s voice was as loud as thunder. He exerted his True Dragon Palm and crushed the dark soul into pieces.

...

# Chapter 666 - The Delicious Feast of Big Yellow

---

Even a stronger Dark Soul than the one before couldn't withstand Jiang Chen's flames as the suppression was so overwhelming and deadly that they couldn't bear the flames. In a brief moment, the burning flames made the Dark Souls visible and all of them had shown themselves.

There were six of them hidden in this place. Jiang Chen had killed two of them before, it means that there were only four of them left. They were all human skeletons and had very gruesome facial expressions. However, they all shrieked in pain while they were burnt in the sea of fire.

Although these Dark Souls had strong combat strength and could even kill Combat Emperors, they had a huge disadvantage: they weren't supported by Yuan Force. They could only depend on their powerful bones and the Qi of death. Nevertheless, their Qi of death would just be incinerated the moment it neared Jiang Chen's flames. In other words, they had become completely vulnerable and defenceless under his flames. Even without killing them directly, they would all be burnt to ashes.

However, Jiang Chen didn't want to torture them as he felt sympathy for these Dark Souls' miserable experiences. Therefore, a wave of powerful energy burst out of the sea of fire, crumbling the four Dark Souls completely. He wiped them all out, not leaving any of them behind, granting them a quick and pleasant death.

Wah

After all Dark Souls were incinerated, the flames faded, returning to Jiang Chen's body. All of the Qi of death disappeared after the inner area of the palace was heated up, giving them a pleasant feeling right away.

“Big brother is awesome!”

Zuo Ling Er jumped up and down happily while looking at her big brother in admiration.

“Let's go upstairs.”

Jiang Chen simply swept the dust on his sleeve and strode towards the stairway.

“We don't know if there are still Dark Souls upstairs.”

Han Yan said.

“Not really, the Dark Souls only guard the ground floor, upstairs should be the treasure vault.”

Jiang Chen smiled. When Big Yellow heard the word 'treasure,' he became so impatient that he turned into a golden light immediately and rushed upwards.

Above the palace, the area was big and was decorated with many

items. Despite the fact that this place had been left untouched for a long time, the glittering brilliance couldn't be covered. These were the divine weapons of the past. Now, they were all just drifting in the air. Blades, spears, swords, halberds and many others... everything that could be used for killing were here. Even the weapons of the lowest quality were limited edition Combat Weapons. There were many King Weapons and around forty Emperor Weapons as well.

There were at least a few hundred weapons altogether. A Combat Weapon was extremely important to a new cultivator. Even in the Divine Continent, Combat Weapons were very valuable. These weapons were enough to be used by a mid tier power.

“There are so many weapons here...It is merely a palace but there are so many treasures here. You can't even begin to imagine how much treasure this sect had in the past.”

Sot Old Man's eyes revealed a cool light and let out a sigh as the weapons confused his eyes.

“This floor doesn't only contain weapons.”

Jiang Chen's gaze wasn't on the weapons as he wasn't interested in them at all. Comparing these things with his Heavenly Saint Sword, they were garbage unless they were Minor Saint Weapons or Great Saint Weapons.

His gaze fell onto the floor, and he saw grey chests. It was grey because of the dust, its original color shouldn't be like this.

“These chests were used to store magical treasures, there should be valuable items inside.

Wakakaka”

Big Yellow laughed. He felt the same way as Jiang Chen did, the both of them were totally not interested with the weapons here. Big Yellow rushed to a chest impatiently and opened it.

Suddenly, the light shone in all directions. The chest was full of pills. Every one of them glimmered with a golden light, the thick pleasant smell of the pills filled the palace, replacing the stale smell.

“It’s Heaven Rank Restoration pills, numerous of them! There’s probably over a hundred million of them!”

Sot Old Man exclaimed. The chest wasn’t very big, but the space inside wasn’t small. The space of some things couldn’t be judge by its exterior appearance. The value of the chest containing the Heaven Rank Restoration pills was too precious. Such a valuable item was truly intimidating.

Jiang Chen’s eyes sparkled. He didn’t mind letting go of the other treasures, but these pills were the most important to him now. Although he had an abundant amount of Heaven Rank Restoration pills with him now, his advancement in the Combat Emperor realm would require a tremendous amount of these pills. It would never be enough for him.



“This is really a good thing.”

Jiang Chen’s eyebrows curled.

“It’s just some useless medicine.”

Big Yellow curled his lips, showing no interest towards the pills. His advancement was about the same as Han Yan’s, they cultivated using the energy of their bloodline. They don’t need any pills to support them. Therefore, the pills weren’t attractive to him.

Big Yellow quickly opened the second chest. However, it was the same as the first chest, full of Heaven Rank Restoration pills. And both the third and fourth chest contained Heaven Rank Restoration pills.

Seeing all these pills, Big Yellow’s face turned green. It was disappointing, very disappointing.

“A lot of pills...”

Zuo Ling Er’s eyes twinkled like stars. Besides her, Jiang Chen also had a flower blooming like smile. Such great wealth was really too good to be true. All of these pills would be sufficient for his advancement in the Combat Emperor realm until the Minor Saint realm.

“Dammit! There are NO good things here! There is one more left, if this also contains stupid items, I’ll eat the whole chest!”

Big Yellow gritted his teeth and unlocked the last chest. He saw elixirs in the chest, different kinds of them. Although the long period of time they were inside the chest had reduced the effectiveness of these elixirs, they were still very hard to be found.

There were Dragon Fruits that illuminated a blood red light, Dragon Ginseng that had been kept for a very long time, Frosty Lotus of Heavenly Mountain.....

“Wakaka”

Big Yellow’s eyes became focused and then let out his usual laugh, then he opened his big mouth wide and bit on the Frosty Lotus of Heavenly Mountain. Big Yellow was a classic glutton. After finishing the lotus, he crunched on all the elixirs with his big mouth. Under everyone’s stunned gaze, Big Yellow used only a few minutes to finish and swallow every elixir like how a tornado sucked up houses. After eating, he belched loudly.

“My god! He ate all the elixirs?”

Sot Old Man’s eyes widened with shock, even Zuo Ling Er had her mouth slightly open. Those were rare items and the amount of elixir in the chest was larger than the chest itself, no one could imagine the exact area of storage space used for storing all the elixirs . These invaluable elixirs were completely ruined by Big Yellow.

Of course, Sot Old Man wasn't shocked by the loss of the rare elixirs but on how did this big yellow dog could stuff them all up into his stomach. The consumption of a huge amount of elixirs would bring crazy effects to the body. Too much energy inside the body would make the body burst, but nothing happened to Big Yellow after he finished consuming them.

Jiang Chen and Han Yan looked at each other and couldn't help but shake their heads simultaneously. However, Big Yellow would acquire an enormous amount of energy after consuming these elixirs. The energy of these elixirs would push his grade to the next level. If he didn't, then he should feel sorry for these elixirs.

Buzz

What happened next was that a golden light started to glimmer on the surface of Big Yellow's body. The effects of the elixirs started to work inside him. To an ordinary being, such energy was already unbearable, but Big Yellow could bear it; it was his abnormal feature. His Qi rose rapidly like a tsunami and the force from his bloodline started to appear. Within minutes, he had pushed his level to the Third Grade Demon Emperor.

It continued until it reached peak of the Third Grade Demon Emperor before stopping, he was only one step away before reaching the Fourth Grade. Such methods of advancement was really shocking.

“Wakaka! Nice, really nice. Master dog is feeling good!”

Big Yellow laughed, and was bouncing up and down like a kid. After he had reached the new grade, his confidence was bursting out of him. He could feel his enhanced combat strength that would allow him to even get rid of a Fifth Grade Combat Emperor.

“This is the scary part of the bloodline of a divine beast. His strength becomes greater as his level of grade goes higher.”

Tyrant said. It was the Dragon-horse bloodline that flowed in Big Yellow’s veins, which couldn’t be judged by common sense.

All the elixirs had been consumed. Big Yellow felt very satisfied about it. He didn’t care about the previous Heaven Rank Restoration pills and weapons anymore, but he couldn’t give up on them either because this was his fine luck, how could he miss it?

Dong Dong Dong

At this time, sounds could be heard from the stairs. Three silhouettes walked up to the stairs. The three were wearing the uniform of the Tan Family. They were the geniuses of Tan Family, one was a Third Grade Combat Emperor, the other was a Second Grade Combat Emperor and the last one was only a Ninth Grade Combat King. A Combat King actually came into the third level? Truly confident.

“Whoa! There are so many pills and weapons! Haha! I’m going to be rich!”

The Ninth Grade Combat King ignored Jiang Chen's group's existence as he eyed the weapons and the Heaven Rank Restoration pills, as if those things already belonged to him.

However, the other two Combat Emperors didn't feel the same way as their junior did, instead they knitted their brows as they noticed that the people here were people that they couldn't afford to offend. Jiang Chen even dared to kill the elders of the Freedom Palace, he was irrefutably cruel. Moreover, the Dark Devil Religion's young master's cruelty was not any lesser than Jiang Chen's.

“You are from the Tan Family?”

Jiang Chen looked at the three men with a pair of cold eyes. Since he knew about the latest news of Tan Zhi Hao, he didn't feel any good about this family anymore.

“Yeah, we are the disciples of the Tan Family. Jiang Chen, since we have found these treasures together, we must divide them. I think we should divide it evenly, the first half is for us and the other half for you. You have offended the Freedom Palace and should ally with our Tan Family and be our friends, am I right?”

The Ninth Grade Combat King said to Jiang Chen. A mere Combat King dared to boast about the Tan Family's pride? They doubted if this guy had some problems with his head, couldn't he see what situation he was in?



# Chapter 667 - Tan Zhi Hao's Encounter

---

Swoosh

As the voice of the junior dropped, a golden light lunged towards his direction. It was the silhouette of Big Yellow.

Ka Cha

A melodious sound was followed by a bloody splash. An arrow-like object passed through the two men's faces. The two of them shivered and realized that one of their comrade's head was gone. Only the body was left standing there.

At one side, a big yellow dog as sturdy as a horse was holding a bloody head in his mouth. Big Yellow's eyes revealed a fiendish look. He threw the head to one side and said, " Pooh, Stinky, very disgusting. I have no idea where this garbage come from. A garbage that grumbles so much about how to divide the treasure. Master Dog wants you to know how to write the word 'Death.'"

Tan Family? Yeah, it had a very high reputation as one of the five major powers, but it was nothing in Big Yellow's eyes. Big Yellow's line of thought was very simple. The treasure was found by him, so he would only say four words to those who came to divide his treasure: 'Sorry, go and die.'

Big Yellow hated it the most when people had the word 'arrogant' written all over their faces. Not even he, Master Dog, had the capability to be this arrogant. A Ninth Grade Combat King

dared to make indiscreet remarks in front of a group of Combat Emperors. This caused Big Yellow to decide to use death to teach him how to be a better man. Of course, he couldn't continue to be a man anymore.

Also, Big Yellow did things based on Jiang Chen's facial expression. These people of the Tan Family obviously weren't Jiang Chen's friend. They wouldn't have the chance to be friends with Jiang Chen and the rest of them as there were only enemies in front of the treasures in the Death Mountain.

Sot Old Man was the only one who was startled by Big Yellow's cruelty. He had never thought that this dog would kill someone without a warning. The rest were unaffected, especially Jiang Chen and Han Yan, because they knew Big Yellow all too well. Based on his crime just now, getting his head bitten off by Big Yellow was deemed to be a pleasing death.

Puff

The disciple's headless body fell to the ground with blood still spilling out of the large opening. The faces of the other two Combat Emperors of the Tan family changed suddenly. They eyed Big Yellow with fury and intense fear.

“You...You dare to kill our people?”

The Third Grade Combat Emperor's tone was slightly shivering. He suddenly regretted rushing up the stairs. They had sensed that there were people in the palace, but they didn't expect to see Jiang



Chen and his friends. How could they match these people? He had the urge to whack that Ninth Grade Combat King junior for his stupidity even if the person had already died. Jiang Chen didn't even fear killing the elders of the Freedom Palace in front of so many people, so he wouldn't hesitate to kill the disciples of the Tan Family as well.

Also, Jiang Chen was now the disciple of the Nebula Sect and befriended by the Dark Devil Religion. These two were two big mountains who supported him. Thus, how could he fear the Tan Family?

“Jiang Chen, you dare to go against us, the Tan Family won't forgive you.”

That Second Grade Combat Emperor barked while the Third Grade Combat Emperor beside him rolled his eyes frantically, wanting to stuff anything into his mouth to shut him up. The most important thing to do now was to leave the scene as soon as possible, not to verbally threaten their opponents. This type of threatening would only work for certain type of opponents. The people in front of them obviously wouldn't be threatened by it at all.

“Killing one is killing, killing three is also considered killing.”

Sot Old Man's eyes revealed a glittering light. He struck one of his palms on that Second Grade Combat Emperor's chest without giving him a chance to defend himself. His chest was pierced through by Sot Old Man's palm attack and he died on the spot.

Sot Old Man was also a violent man. No one wasn't cruel in the devil religion. There was a time when Sot Old Man had taken his revenge on his foe and had killed more than three hundred people in one night. This was the reason why he was called 'Sot,' which meant insane or mad.

Sot Old Man didn't pause after killing this man, he raised his palm and struck the last person, the Third Grade Combat Emperor.

"Wait."

Jiang Chen quickly stopped Sot Old Man when his palm was an inch away from the man's chest and he turned to Jiang Chen.

"I have questions to ask him."

Jiang Chen simply waved his hand and Sot Old Man moved backwards to the side of Han Yan. Jiang Chen walked slowly to the disciple and he got really scared. He felt extremely unlucky to meet these kind of people. Two of his comrades had died. With Jiang Chen's means of killing, he wouldn't be allowed to live anymore as Jiang Chen would always destroy any unsettled trouble.

"I want to ask you, where is Tan Zhi Hao?"

Jiang Chen's gaze was as sharp as a cold blade. The disciple of the Tan family could feel as if his entire body had entered a cold pond. Even his soul was shivering from the coldness. He knew that he

would be dead soon but didn't dare to not answer Jiang Chen's questions. He replied with a faltering voice.

“Tan Zhi Hao is being held in prison.”

“What's Tan Zhi Hao's status in your family?”

Jiang Chen continued to ask.

“Lineal master, his status is above me.”

He didn't dare to hide the facts.

Jiang Chen had even more doubts. He had guessed Tan Zhi Hao's extraordinary status in the Tan Family. It seemed that his status was on par with Tan Zhi Bao, a lineal master, but what made Jiang Chen confused was how did this lofty lineal master got imprisoned? Also, Tan Zhi Hao's talent was pretty good, absolutely worth the time for the Tan Family to nurture him.

“Why is he imprisoned? What has he done?”

Jiang Chen continued.

“Trespass...ing the Ancestral Shrine.”

The disciple stuttered.

“Why did he trespass the Ancestral Shrine?”

Jiang Chen continued to inquire about Tan Zhi Hao's encounters in the Tan Family. For a large family like the Tan Family, they treated the Ancestral Shrine as a forbidden area. Ordinary disciples wouldn't have the chance to enter. Tan Zhi Hao wasn't a reckless man. He wouldn't have broken the law and trespassed the forbidden area for nothing.

“It was Tan Zhi Hao's grandfather. In the Tan Family, he is one of the Tan Bloodline owners. He was brought up by his grandfather. A few years ago, his grandfather went to search for something in the Tan Family, but didn't return. For all these years, Tan Zhi Hao's status in the family wasn't considered very high and there were other young masters who was qualified for a status higher than him, but because his grandfather was a highly prestigious person in the family, no one dared to lay a finger on him. Not long ago, the family had found his grandfather's corpse and brought it back to the Ancestral Shrine. Tan Zhi Hao wanted to go in there to worship his grandfather but he encountered an obstruction, so...”

Apparently, the disciple knew the background of Tan Zhi Hao well. He wanted to tell Jiang Chen everything he knew, hoping that he could perform well enough to preserve his life.

Before the disciple finished the rest of the sentence, everyone on the scene understood what he was trying to say. Obviously, Tan Zhi Hao had always been supported by his grandfather. After his grandfather departed to search for something, his status in the

family worsen. He was always being bullied. Now that his grandfather had died, he lost a strong pillar of support, no one would take him seriously anymore. And for those young masters who bullied him, they didn't feel guilty for their actions.

Tan Zhi Hao wanted to pay homage his late grandfather which was human nature. As a grandchild who loved his grandfather, he wasn't given the permission to do it to his grandfather, which certainly enraged him, causing him to trespass the Ancestral Shrine without permission.

With Tan Zhi Hao being a criminal now, he probably wouldn't have the chance to turn over his current situation. After all, this was a cold-blooded family that might have already given up this young man for his mistake. His situation was somehow similar to Tan Lang. At that time, Tan Lang was also casted away due to a minor mistake that he had committed in the Asura Palace.

However, Tan Zhi Hao's situation was more problematic than Tan Lang's.

“That Tan Zhi Hao is really unlucky.”

Big Yellow couldn't help but saying what he's thinking.

“Let me ask you again, there is a person named ‘Tan Lang’ following Tan Zhi Hao's side, is he also imprisoned?”

Jiang Chen continued to obtain more information about his

friend. In his heart, he was more concerned about Tan Lang's safety than Tan Zhi Hao. For a family as large as the Tan's, the conflicts were never less than a sect's, especially conflicts regarding the matter of lineal masters. The only thing that Tan Zhi Hao could blame was his fate, but Tan Lang was in the Tan Family because of Jiang Chen's recommendation. He would definitely blame himself if anything were to happen to Tan Lang.

“As for this...I am clueless...”

The disciple answered. His tone and expression were solemn, it doesn't seem like he was telling any lies.

Jiang Chen nodded. To the Tan Family, Tan Lang was akin to an insect. It would be understandable for them to not know about him. He knew the person in front of him wouldn't dare to lie. In fact, Jiang Chen had already guessed the situation Tan Lang was in. As he was a person who valued friendship, he was certainly in the same prison cell as Tan Zhi Hao now. If Tan Lang was fine, Jiang Chen should have come to find him.

“Okay, done. You can go now.”

Jiang Chen said.

“What? You are letting me go?”

The disciple of the Tan Family was so stunned, he wasn't able to react. Jiang Chen had always been known to be violent and brutal,

he didn't even hesitate in killing the elders of Freedom Palace in public. He was obviously a devil king. His two comrades had been killed. According to this devil's personality, he should be eliminated as well. Now that he was released, he felt like he was dreaming.

“Why? You don't want to go? You still want to divide the treasure?”

Jiang Chen said in a calm tone.

“Noooo.....I do not dare...”

That man quickly denied the statement. Without even caring about the dead bodies of his comrades, he vanished in the blink of an eye. He feared that if he left a little later, Jiang Chen would have changed his mind and decide to kill him. Even if he had escaped far away from the palace, his soul still didn't feel calm, he could not believe that he was still alive. The scene just now was no different than escaping from a ghastly hell.

The disciple couldn't find the reason why Jiang Chen released him. Perhaps, it was because he was telling the truth and that satisfied Jiang Chen.

“Brother Jiang, why did you let him go? We should cut off the roots to kill the grass.”

Sot Old Man couldn't understand and felt that this wasn't Jiang

Chen's style of action.

“I, Jiang Chen, kill whenever I like. I will kill when I want and will not when I don't want. I have learned a few things from him. There wasn't a problem using that in exchange for his life. As for the part about the Tan family being my enemy, do you think I'm concerned about that?”

Jiang Chen simply explained. That Third Grade Combat Emperor wasn't a threat to him at all, killing him or not wouldn't make much of a difference. Jiang Chen wasn't afraid that the Tan Family would seek revenge on him. Furthermore, the relationship between the Dark Devil Religion and the Tan Family had always been very poor.

....



# Chapter 668 - More Remarkable Than Assassins

---

To Jiang Chen, those three disciples of the Tan Family that had appeared were nothing more than a music interlude but at least he got some useful information about Tan Zhi Hao and Tan Lang. He wouldn't be uninterested about his two friends' matter, but that would only happen after he had gone out of the Death Mountain, which would take roughly a month.

Although Tan Zhi Hao was imprisoned, he still has the Bloodline of the Tan Family. The worst that could happen to him was to get bullied, it wouldn't cost him his life yet, but it would be a different case for Tan Lang. He was an outsider, anyone in the Tan Family could easily end his life because of a slight conflict. Therefore, Jiang Chen was most worried about Tan Lang. If he successfully came out of the Death Mountain, he would head straight for the Tan Family.

“These treasures... you all divide them.”

Jiang Chen said while looking at the Heaven Rank Restoration pills and Combat Weapons.

“I'm not interested in these. Combat Weapons and Heaven Rank Restoration pills are useless to me. You need it little Chen, as your consumption of pills is very heavy.”

Han Yan said.

“I don’t want them as well.”

Sot Old Man quickly responded. Not even his young master wanted these things, of course he couldn’t as well. Sot Old Man was a very intelligent man, he understood the meaning implied in Han Yan’s words. These Heaven Rank Restoration pills were all for Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen had once saved his life and had given him the Nine Solar Lightning Dragon pills, he naturally couldn’t rob the items away from him.

“I’m also not interested.”

Tyrant expressed no interest in these treasure as well. He probably needed the Heaven Rank Restoration pills, but his consumption wasn’t as heavy as Jiang Chen. In truth, Heaven Rank Restoration pills were very valuable. Almost all of the cultivators needed them except for Han Yan and Big Yellow who used their bloodline to cultivate, but they knew how much Jiang Chen needed these pills, so they decided to give all of the pills to him.

“Big brother, your consumption of these pills is huge during cultivation. All the pills I required will be prepared by my master, I don’t need these either. He he...”

Zuo Ling Er chuckled. What she said was correct. Hua Gu Yi felt very fortunate to be able to accept such a monstrous disciple, she would naturally give most of her efforts and items to Zuo Ling Er.

“These pills are very useful to me indeed. In that case, I will be straight. Ah Yan, we will take half of these weapons each. We do not need them, but they will be extremely useful to your religion and my sect. The Mysterious Domain will descend into chaos soon, we must be prepared for it. Moreover, I have two Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pills here. You and Ling Er each get one, consume it and we will leave this place then head for the deeper regions of the mountain.”

Jiang Chen said before keeping all the Heaven Rank Restoration pills. He had taken half of the Combat Weapons, the other half was for Han Yan. Since Han Yan was the young master of the Dark Devil Religion now, he could use these weapons to bind his men together. When these weapons reached the Dark Devil Religion and the Nebula Sect, these two powers' overall strengths would increase by one level.

Jiang Chen took out the two Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pills and gave them separately to Han Yan and Zuo Ling Er. He had almost forgotten about this matter. Now was the right time to give these pills to the two of them as it was only both of them who hadn't consumed the pills.

“The legendary Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pill?”

Han Yan's eyes sparkled. Since he was a young master now, his knowledge about things widened tremendously. He had seen the formidable abilities of this pill in an ancient record before, but he had never thought that he could see it with his own eyes today.

“This pill was concocted by my own hands. Once you two have

consumed the pills, your level of grade will be enhanced further.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Alright.”

Han Yan didn't try to argue and received the pills from Jiang Chen and swallowed it immediately. They didn't need any formalities in their friendship, they were sworn brothers who would live and die together, and thus, there was nothing that they should be so calculative about.

Zuo Ling Er had never heard this kind of pill before, but she knew that Jiang Chen had brought her a good thing. When the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pill that was carrying a sunny hot Qi dropped on Zuo Ling Er's hands, her eyes glittered.

“This is a priceless Saint pill. Big brother, if I consume this pill my grade will improve and I can reach the peak of the Third Grade Combat Emperor.”

Zuo Ling Er was very happy that she could further enhance her combat strength. Although she was very strong, there was still a huge gap between Jiang Chen and her. If there was a chance of advancement, she wouldn't miss it as she didn't want to be a burden for her big brother.

After that, Han Yan and Zuo Ling Er consumed the pills.

“Big Yellow, Tyrant, you two and Sot Old Man guard here, I’ll go out for a while.”

Without waiting for them to respond, Jiang Chen vanished.

“Where is brother Jiang going?”

Sot Old Man asked.

“I don't know either, but he must have something important that needs to be done.”

Big Yellow simply responded. Every action of Jiang Chen had a reason behind, he wouldn’t perform an action without a proper reason.

More than ten miles outside the palace, Jiang Chen’s silhouette emerged in the desolate area. He stood there, rooted to the ground as if he was waiting for something to appear.

Half an hour had passed, but he just stood there with his eyes closed. The reason for that was still unclear.

Suddenly, the air vibrated as a skin-stingingly cold and long sword raced out of the darkness, aiming for Jiang Chen’s brain.

“You finally appeared.”

Jiang Chen immediately opened his eyes then used Spatial Shift and Nine Phantom Wolves simultaneously. His body lunged forward, meeting the sword in a flash. That long sword pierced through him, but it was a mere shadow.

“You have very sharp senses, managing to escape from my art of assassination.”

A cold and hoarse voice was heard from the air. After a while, a man in black walked out of the darkness. His entire body was filled with cold murderous aura. His face was veiled with black cloth, but his eyes told others that he wasn't old. His attire, the cold-blooded murderous aura and the near perfect art of assassination explained everything about his identity and background.

He was an assassin from the Dark Shadow.

“A Fifth Grade Combat Emperor.”

Jiang Chen scanned the man in black and smirked. He knew the Dark Shadow very well. It was a very scary organization. He was destined to be haunted by assassins from the moment he killed the first Dark Shadow assassin. They wouldn't leave him alone, even if he had entered the Death Mountain.

Before Jiang Chen had entered the spatial zone, he had already sensed a hidden murderous aura somewhere. He had guessed that the aura belonged to an assassin from the Dark Shadows as only them could have such a terrifying ability to conceal themselves.

An assassin of the Dark Shadow would always find the best time to kill. The man in black had been hiding in the darkness all along and wasn't distracted by the abundant treasure. This proved that he was qualified to be an assassin.

Jiang Chen had walked out of the palace to eliminate the chances of the assassin striking. Han Yan and Zuo Ling Er were focused on absorbing the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pill. If the assassin chose to strike him during this period, not only would it affect the two of them, it might even harm them. Thus, Jiang Chen had chosen to walk out of the palace.

The Dark Shadow's assassin would only attack their given target, they wouldn't aim for any other person. Jiang Chen had thought that if he appeared alone in an area, the assassin would emerge. It turned out to be true.

"You may be strong, but I'm not as stupid as those elders of the Freedom Palace. I alone will be enough to kill you."

The man in black was full of confidence. Apparently, he had already noticed Jiang Chen when he was still outside of the Death Mountain. He had seen how Jiang Chen had killed the elders of the Freedom Palace, but that didn't affect his decision to kill him. In other words, this was his task. An assassin of the Dark Shadow would never back down from their tasks.

"You are rather talkative. Assassins shouldn't be that talkative."

Jiang Chen said calmly as he drew out his Heavenly Saint Sword

slowly. He had to be very careful of his opponent's movement, especially if it's an assassin from the Dark Shadow. The assassin might be at the same grade as the elders of the Freedom Palace, but his strength wasn't the same as the technique that the Dark Shadow's assassins used was sneaky and swift, which was terrifying.

Humph!

The assassin made a cold humph. He stabbed his sword towards Jiang Chen, then he disappeared as if he was never there before.

The moment the assassin disappeared, a dangerously cold aura was sensed behind Jiang Chen.

Even Jiang Chen would have to admit that this assassin's art was terrifying and profound. The sword had initially stabbed from the front, but in a split second it had moved to his back which made them defenseless.

If it was an ordinary person who had faced such a sword attack, he would have been unaware and would have had no time to react.

Unfortunately, it was Jiang Chen, a wildly abnormal person. His Great Soul Derivation technique was beyond one's understanding, he could clearly track the assassin's traces and Qi.

Also, Jiang Chen's body was moving using the Spatial Shift and Nine Phantom Wolves, meaning that his speed was faster than the



assassin's. The moment that the assassin stabbed, Jiang Chen's Heavenly Saint Sword had stabbed behind towards the darkness, unexpectedly, the two metals clashed together.

Keng

The metals produced a jingling sound. The spatial zone was pierced through and this created a great spark. The assassin was pushed back by the impact for more than ten steps before he found his balance. He looked in terror.

“You can see through my sword art and movement skills?”

The assassin was very shocked. He had seen Jiang Chen's technique when the Fifth Grade Combat Emperors was killed while Jiang Chen was merely a Second Grade Combat Emperor. The assassin knew that he wouldn't be able to withstand the attack. He had to depend on his sword art which was as blurry as a specter and was as deadly as cobra, meaning that no one should ever know which direction the attack would come from.

However, Jiang Chen's ability was beyond the assassin's imagination. Jiang Chen could handle his sword art with ease and had super sharp senses that had even caused the assassin to be taken aback.

“When even your sword art can't make a mark on me, you are only left with your combat strength which is useless compared to mine. Now, you only have death waiting.”

Jiang Chen raised his sword and pointed towards the man in black. His opponent felt like Jiang Chen was the killer now. If Jiang Chen was an assassin, he would be a remarkable one.

...

# Chapter 669 - The Magma Flows Like River

---

The assassin's eyes turned very serious. He knew he had failed his mission. For someone who hadn't failed before like him, this was undoubtedly a joke. The only tainted spot in his life as an assassin.

The assassin had already estimated his own and Jiang Chen's combat strength. It was like what Jiang Chen had said. If his sword art wasn't deadly to Jiang Chen, he had no other techniques that could get rid of him. In that case, he should retreat.

\*Swoosh\*

The assassin's body twisted and vanished into the shadows instantly. His ability to hide in the shadows allowed him to flee even if he couldn't defeat his opponent.

“You want to run now? Too late for that, I have already sealed this entire spatial zone earlier in secret.”

Jiang Chen said coldly and stabbed at the air with his Heavenly Saint Sword.

\*Keng\*

A sword clashed with the Heavenly Saint Sword in the spatial zone, and the shadowy assassin was forced out of the spatial zone by Jiang Chen's sword stab.

“How can this happen?”

The assassin was very shocked. He never thought that his opponent would have an ability that allowed him to immediately locate the assassin's fleeing tracks.

In truth, if the assassin chose to run at the beginning, he probably could. However, Jiang Chen had now set a seal for the entire spatial zone secretly. No matter where the assassin was, his movement would be sensed by Jiang Chen.

“You have no chance to run anymore.”

Jiang Chen swung his long sword, producing endless golden lights with erupting murderous aura. He made a sway of his body and nine Jiang Chens appeared, then they all besieged the assassin.

Nine brilliant lights of sword shone on the nearby area and stabbed the assassin at the same time.

The assassin's expression changed drastically. His vision blurred and was clueless on how to defend against this attack.

\*Pu Chi\*

Jiang Chen's sword pierced through the assassin's back. The assassin then spurted a mouthful of blood, changing the color of his black veil to red.

The assassin's eyes showed fear and despair. He finally understood why no failure was allowed as defeat equaled to death.

“You have offended the Dark Shadow, so you will die a horrible death. Next time, the Dark Shadow will send stronger assassins, and you will definitely be dead when that time comes.”

The assassin said with his back still facing Jiang Chen.

\*Hong\*

A surge of destructive force burst from the Heavenly Saint Sword, ending the assassin's life. Another Dark Shadow's assassin was finished off by Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen pulled out his long sword and said with a plain tone, “Do you think I will stay at this grade when the next assassin come? You can send an infinite number of assassins to come after me, but they will all be killed. The Dark Shadow has offended me, it will be like last time in my previous life.”

Jiang Chen's face was full of confidence. He was never once afraid that his enemy was too strong. The Dark Shadow would send a more powerful assassin each time, but Jiang Chen would gradually become stronger. The geniuses of the Dark Shadow were fated to be Jiang Chen's objects for training and also his stepping stones towards his goal.

Jiang Chen lit a fire on the assassin's dead body, burning it until nothing was left. As for the precious sword of the assassin, Jiang Chen would naturally want to keep it as it was a rare Emperor Weapon. Any sword that was used for assassination was always rare to the cultivators.

In the palace, Han Yan and Zuo Ling Er were still in the midst of absorbing the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pill when Jiang Chen came back. Although it was only half an hour, both of their Qi increased enormously.

“Why did you go off?”

Big Yellow asked.

Jiang Chen showed the assassin's sword and swung it slightly in front of Big Yellow. This sword was abnormally sharp and carried a cold murderous aura. In one look, anyone would know that this blade was constantly stained with blood.

“The Dark Shadow's assassin's?”

Big Yellow and Tyrant exclaimed. They had seen the shadowy techniques of the assassin before, therefore, they immediately knew that the sword belonged to an assassin of the Dark Shadow.

“Are you guys talking about the legendary assassination organization?”

Sot Old Man joined the conversation quickly. Obviously, he had heard of them before, and feared such a scary organization who assassinated people secretly.

“That’s right, the Dark Shadow’s assassin wanted to assassinate me. Naturally, I don’t need to show them any courtesy. I’ve sensed the assassin’s Qi the moment we entered the spatial zone, the assassin didn’t reveal himself at the time and just hid in the shadows. I’m afraid that if the assassin struck during the time when Han Yan and Zuo Ling Er are absorbing the pill it will affect them. So I choose to draw the assassin out of the palace.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Seems like you killed the assassin.”

Tyrant smiled. He knew this because the sword was the proof.

“It won’t be all fun and games anymore after offending that assassination organization.”

Sot Old Man heaved a sigh when he saw that Jiang Chen wasn't panicked or concerned at all. It's as if offending this organization was a relaxing matter, just like a child’s play.

It seemed that only Jiang Chen was the only one in the Divine Continent who could maintain his composure while he was being targeted by the Dark Shadow’s assassins.

“I think Han Yan and Ling Er will need two more hours before they absorb the pill completely. Sot Old Man, you guard outside the palace. If anyone comes, just chase them away.”

Jiang Chen said to Sot Old Man.

“Alright.”

Sot Old Man turned around and left. He was a peak Sixth Grade Combat Emperor, so as long as he didn't encounter the two scary beings, Li Long or Tan Zhi Bai, he should be able to handle the rest of the cultivators. Even if he encountered some scary dark souls, he still could handle and kill them.

Two hours had passed. Han Yan's Qi underwent a tremendous variation. His surroundings were covered by a scary dark devil aura. The devil aura then turned into many very scary black devil dragons. Han Yan's Qi continued to burst out of his body, it was until he reached the peak of the Seventh Grade Combat Emperor before his Qi stabilized.

On the other side, Zuo Ling Er faced the same situation. Her entire body glowed with golden light. A wave of ancient barbaric strength as heavy as a mountain could be felt. Zuo Ling Er didn't just stop there. She instantly made a breakthrough and reached the peak of Third Grade Combat Emperor. Although she wasn't comparable to Han Yan, she was still considered terrifying as she was only a twelve-year-old girl.

“Big brother, your pill is too powerful. I can even feel the



trembling of heaven and earth as my body went through the transformation. This pill is much greater than an Emperor pill, it almost pushed my grade to the Fourth Grade and have even enhanced my pool of energy. I can easily advance to the Fourth Grade Combat Emperor very soon.”

Zuo Ling Er was very happy.

“Me too, my pool of energy is stronger than before. It won’t take long for me to be an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor.”

Han Yan’s eyes glittered with brilliant light. The Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pill had greater effects than he had expected, his entire body had undergone a dramatic change.

“En, an advancement is of utmost importance, especially in the deeper region of the Death Mountain. There is danger everywhere and only the strong can survive. Let’s leave this place and continue to seek for other treasures.”

Jiang Chen said.

Sot Old Man was guarding the entrance of the palace. In these two hours' time, there were some cultivators who had come near the palace, but they all turned and left after seeing Sot Old Man standing there as they knew that they were certainly no match for the old man.

....

A group of people had left the palace and flew towards the deeper region of the spatial zone under Big Yellow's guidance. In this place, listening to Big Yellow wasn't a bad choice. The place that he led them to might have danger, but it would definitely have treasures.

Along the way, they had met some odd cultivators. But when they saw Jiang Chen and his friends, they moved quickly far away from them.

This piece of land wasn't very large. There weren't any buildings besides that palace. There wouldn't be any treasure there but there were two dark souls which had been gotten rid of by Han Yan.

Han Yan's presence in the team allowed them to move anywhere proudly. They didn't need to worry about anyone because even if they had encountered Li Long, the Eighth Grade Combat Emperor, Han Yan had no problem dealing with him.

After about ten minutes of flying, the air became scorching hot suddenly. They could see a layer of heat wave drifting in the air not far away, dyeing the spatial zone in red.

"There's something weird ahead, let's go and see."

Jiang Chen said. Their group moved quickly towards the direction. They saw magma flowing like a river, blocking their path ahead.

There were more than thirty cultivators standing at the bank of the magma river, looking at the ghastly magma with their faces full of fear.

\*Hu Hu\*

Although they were a distance away from the scene, they could feel the heat released by the flowing magma. Even the Combat Emperors could feel the burning heat on their skin.

After seeing Jiang Chen's arrival, two people in the uniform of the Nebula Sect welcomed him.

“Brother Jiang.”

The two men greeted him with their fists. They were the core disciples of the Nebula Sect, but they were respectful towards Jiang Chen because they had witnessed Jiang Chen's domineering aura when he killed the two elders outside the Death Mountain. They didn't dare to patronize Jiang Chen even a bit.

“What happened?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Brother Jiang, there's a stream of magma river blocking our path ahead. We have a feeling that once we get through this river,

we can enter another spatial zone. However, this magma is too terrifying, not even Combat Emperors could endure it.”

One of the disciples said.

Jiang Chen and the others came near the magma river and looked at it. Jiang Chen saw the magma rippling continuously as if there were dragons swimming in it. It was very scary. Not only the temperature of the magma very high, it also released a scorching hot poisonous gas that Combat Emperors couldn't bear. Everyone on the scene was stopped by this magma river.

“Just fly over it.”

Big Yellow said and made a movement, preparing to try it.

“You can't. Someone tried that just now but he was attacked by the magma. He landed into the magma river and no remains of his body were seen.”

A Nebula Sect disciple stopped Big Yellow quickly.

...

# Chapter 670 - The Blood Red Monument

---

Big Yellow stopped immediately after he heard the warning and gave a praising glance to the disciple who did it. He would have jumped over the river if he wasn't reminded by him.

There were many cultivators standing beside the river bank, each of their faces were filled with concern. The magma river before them had sent chills down their spines. No one knew how powerful the magma was but they had just seen a Second Grade Combat Emperor who wanted to fly past the river being engulfed and incinerated into nothing.

Even a Second Grade Combat Emperor couldn't endure the attack of the magma. Who would dare to make another attempt now?

Jiang Chen and Han Yan moved a few steps forward, standing nearer to the magma. Their faces revealed slight shock while the heat wave coming from the magma touched their skin.

“Indeed, a very strong magma. There is some kind of violent Qi hidden in it. Not only does the heat the magma can attack, but it also carries some sort of hot poison. Even my devil aura can't bear it.”

Han Yan said.

“Let me test the strength of this magma.”

Jiang Chen said and drew a weapon from his Qi Sea. It was an Emperor Weapon. Jiang Chen circulated his Yuan Force to instill it into the weapon, which caused it to create an intense buzzing noise. After that, Jiang Chen hurled it forcefully towards the other side of the magma river.

Jiang Chen had exerted a lot of strength when throwing the weapon so it travelled very quickly. From one side to the other side of the river wasn't very far, thus the weapon was travelling in that direction like a flash.

\*Bang\*

At this time, a dragon-like magma rushed out of the river. Its speed was even faster than the weapon and its strength was great. When the weapon reached the center of the magma river, it was attacked directly by the dragon-like magma.

It then reeled around the weapon and pulled it into the magma river. A splash was heard. The weapon was drowned by the rapidly rolling magma and no trace of it was found.

Everyone's face changed, even Jiang Chen's. He used quite a large amount of strength to hurl the weapon. The speed of the weapon was undeniably fast, but it still couldn't get past the magma river.

“Truly terrifying. We have no ways of going through it.”

“Yeah, this magma river has blocked our path ahead. We can’t even use our dimensional skill to cross it.”

“The one that Jiang Chen used was an Emperor Weapon. It travelled at such a great speed but still couldn’t pass through it, which meant that the magma river initiates an attack on any trespassers by itself.”

“This is scary, are we going to be trapped here? This area is becoming more crowded with people. There is a much bigger area across the river...”

.....

Everyone’s face was full of fright. As long as they could pass the magma river, they would enter another spatial zone and would continue in search of treasure. Actually, there wasn’t any treasure in this spatial zone. Instead, there was unexpectedly many dangers. Now, they were blocked by a ghastly magma river. If they couldn’t pass through it, they would be trapped here.

“Little Chen, use your Heavenly Thunder Flame to protect yourself so you may be able to get across this magma river. Why not use your flame to shield us so that we can go there together?”

Tyrant suggested.

“I can’t. I can try that alone but not with you all. I don’t understand much about this magma and have no clue about how

strong its attack is. The magma river isn't as simple as a high temperature lava. If you try to get across it with force, it will be extremely risky.”

Jiang Chen shook his head in disapproval. He didn't like to do things that he wasn't certain of. He had no idea about how strong the power of the lava was. If something unexpected were to happen, the consequences would be serious.

“Everyone look! There is a monument over there. Is this magma river related to it?”

Someone pointed to a monument from afar. It was a blood red stone monument as tall as a human. In fact, many had noticed this thing from the beginning, but they were all distracted by the heat of the magma river and had forgotten about it.

Now, they all shifted their attention back to the monument when their hope of crossing the magma river had faded.

“Little Chen, look at the monument.”

Han Yan was looking at the monument while all of them walked towards it, standing in a circle, surrounding it. Jiang Chen and his friends also walked over to study about the monument.

It was a blood red monument, the surface were covered with variegated marks, full of bumps and hollows. Nobody had any idea how long this human-sized monument had been here but they



could feel its ancient Qi.

There wasn't anything crafted on the monument, so they didn't know what to call this thing.

“Big Yellow, what do you think?”

Jiang Chen looked at Big Yellow because he could see through what it was.

“This thing is a treasure.”

Big Yellow's eyes sparkled and fixed his gaze on the monument.

“This monument seems very ordinary, there's nothing special about it, except for the color, which makes it a little scary.”

Zuo Ling Er didn't seem to understand.

“Ling Er, this monument isn't normal. Try to imagine that the temperature in this place is scorching hot because it is very near to the magma. Even Combat Emperors need to use their Yuan Force to defend themselves against the heat wave. If it is an ordinary rock, it will be burnt by the heat and turn into ashes. This monument has been in this place for an unknown number of years and has always been under such high temperature but it's still perfectly fine. That's why it's extraordinary.”

Jiang Chen said.

“That’s right, this monument is a fine thing.”

Big Yellow nodded. Although he didn’t know what this monument was, his innate sense for treasure told him that this wasn’t an ordinary monument. Like what Jiang Chen had said, a normal monument would be incinerated into powder if it's exposed in this kind of environment for a long time. Thus, it was a miracle for this monument to be still existing in its full form.

“Everyone look, this monument must have some relation with this magma river. If we removed this monument from the ground, we may be able to cross the river.”

A person said.

“Let me try, this monument is a fine thing. If I can remove it from the ground, it will be mine.”

A man as strong as a bear came before the monument. Both of his arms grabbed the monument and pulled it hard.

However, it didn’t even move a tiny bit!

Everyone's faces changed. A Second Grade Combat Emperor, even without using his Yuan Force had the physical strength that could lift an entire mountain, but he couldn’t even make the monument move.

“My mother! How can this monument be this heavy? I can’t believe that I can’t even lift a monument with my Second Grade Combat Emperor’s strength.”

That strong man was enraged. He immediately circulated his Yuan Force in his body. His body was now full of glimmering energy from top to bottom. The energy flowed from his body to both of his arms, then he tried to pull the monument one more time.

However, the result was the same, the monument remained standing like an immovable divine iron.

\*Argh\*

The strong man bellowed and poured all of his might into lifting the thing, but nothing happened. Eventually, he fell to the ground with a ‘puff’ sound. The monument was able to drain all of the energy of a Second Grade Combat Emperor until he was so tired he lied on the ground. It was truly terrifying.

“A very heavy monument.”

Han Yan and Sot Old Man also changed their facial expression, many others did the same. Now, even an idiot would know that this monument was extraordinary.

“Garbage, get out of the way! Let master dog try it.”

Big Yellow wagged his sturdy tail and swaggered to the monument. He used his hind legs for support, his front feet gripped the monument and he started pulling.

“Dammit! Why is this thing so heavy?”

Big Yellow couldn't help but curse. This time, even Jiang Chen's face turned solemn. The Second Grade Combat Emperor couldn't lift the monument was probably because it was too heavy or divine, but Big Yellow was a peerless beast at the peak of Third Grade Demon Emperor, his physical strength was beyond anyone's imagination. Was this monument really so heavy?

“Master dog don't believe it.”

Big Yellow threw himself onto it. There was a surge of demon aura in his body and he exerted all of his energy to move it, but he still couldn't.

In the end, Big Yellow was infuriated. He used his solid head to knock the monument. Since he couldn't remove it, he might as well destroy it.

\*Bang\*

Unfortunately, when Big Yellow's head knocked on the monument, even though a spark was created it still didn't move and not even a scratch was left on it.

“Your mother!”

Big Yellow swore loudly, this was the most terrible blow he had ever faced.

“How could this happen? What is this monument? Why is it that is so hard and heavy?”

“This is the end, if not even this dog can lift the monument. There is probably no one else that can do it.”

Everyone was looking at one another with slight despair, while some looked at Jiang Chen, hoping that perhaps Jiang Chen could remove it.

“Little Chen, go and try.”

Han Yan said.

“En.”

Jiang Chen nodded, his eyes were still as solemn as before. Big Yellow's failure to lift the monument didn't give him any confidence to do any better.

Jiang Chen approached the monument. He extended his arms and wrapped it around the monument. He casted his Dragon

Transformation Art, blood red dragon marks started to appear from his body, fully enveloping the monument.

\*Argh\*

Jiang Chen shouted and circulated all of his strength and exerted it on the monument.

However, the monument still didn't move a tiny bit even when Jiang Chen had used his Dragon Transformation Art on it.

“Even big brother can't move it.”

Zuo Ling Er's was sighing.

Jiang Chen shook his head. “This monument is a rare thing. A thing like this can only be lifted by the destined person.”

“Let me try.”

This time, Tyrant initiated. He was a person who knew his own limits. Even Jiang Chen couldn't move the monument, so why would he want to try? He must have known or felt something about this monument.

...

## Chapter 671 - It's None Of My Business

---

Jiang Chen glanced at Tyrant and made way for him. Tyrant's action made Jiang Chen feel delighted. Not even Jiang Chen could move the monument, which means that it was a special item that could only be lifted by the destined person. He hoped that Tyrant was that destined person. If he could retrieve this monument, there would be boundless benefits.

Tyrant strode forward, his eyes focused on the monument without blinking. Somehow he felt a sense of familiarity from this monument.

“Can he do it? Not even Jiang Chen could move that thing, I don't think this monk can do any better.”

“Yeah, this monument is a divine item. It has been here for so long and no one had ever moved it. This monk is just going to waste his effort and time.”

“Seems like we are going to be trapped here. There isn't any treasure in this spatial zone. If we cannot get across this magma river and move to the other side, our trip here will go in vain. All the treasures will be taken away.”

.....

All the cultivators shook their heads disappointedly, already confirming the fact that Tyrant wasn't going to move that monument. Not even a powerful man like Jiang Chen could move

it, how could a monk do it? They all thought that he was just wasting his time.

Suddenly, their eyes widened after witnessing what had just happened.

They saw Tyrant standing before the monument, he waved his palm and a golden seal appeared. He forcefully gripped the monument and lifted it successfully.

\*Hong Long\*

It shocked them, the supposedly immovable monument was suddenly moved, producing a rumbling sound. Tyrant exerted all of his strength to lift it slowly from the ground.

The removal of the monument affected the behavior of the magma river, it started to flow and rolled intensely like a fierce sea tide, some magma even shot up to the sky.

“Quickly, look. The monument is moved, mother! This monk is divinely strong. He can lift the monument from the ground, truly wonderful!”

“I know now. An unusual item like this monument can only be moved by the destined man, and this monk is the destined man. My grandmother! This monument has to be a rare treasure and the fact that this monk can retrieve it made me admire him.”



“Don’t be like that. This is his ability and luck. Besides, the removal of the monument is beneficial to us. We can cross the magma river and go into another spatial zone. We will have lots of treasure if this goes on.”

.....

Everyone’s shocked gazes fell upon the blood red monument that was being lifted off from the ground. The actual size of the monument was way bigger than any human, it was over thirty meters tall. None of its surfaces was inscribed with any marks or symbols, but there was an ancient Qi that was being released from it, indicating that the monument had existed for a very long time.

Tyrant lifted the entire monument effortlessly, making it seem easy. He then shrunk it, and kept it.

“Cool, monk.”

Jiang Chen couldn’t help but praise his friend. Although he still didn’t know how they were going to get past this magma river, he was slightly stunned by his friend’s ability to lift the monument that was an invaluable treasure. No one knew what the use of the treasure was, but Tyrant would find it out soon.

“Dammit! This bald donkey has gotten something good!”

Big Yellow didn’t feel satisfied with what just happened. He knew that the monument was precious and he was the first one who

found out about it, but he didn't get it in the end. If it didn't fall upon the hands of his friend, the monk, he would have robbed it over.

\*Hong Long\*

A while later, something strange happened again. Strong rumbling sound were produced in the magma river, the entire stream was boiling, and the force it produced was similar to a tsunami.

\*Hua La\*

People exclaimed at the danger. A magma pillar rushed out of the river at a very fast speed, lunging at the previous position of the monument. There were still a lot of cultivators standing there.

“Not good, run!”

Someone shouted. No one dared to stay there any longer, they turned and ran frantically for their lives.

\*Roar\*

An infuriated roar was heard from within the magma pillar, similar to an ancient barbaric beast that was very terrifying. The huge magma pillar continued and surrounded the two cultivators with its body, instantly incinerating them.

\*Argh\*

Someone wailed in agony, an arm was attacked and incinerated. The hot poison flowed into his body through his arm, but that cultivator drew a long sword to cut his arm off.

This cultivator was a decisive person and didn't hesitate when making a decision. Otherwise, the hot poison of the magma would flow into his body. Moreover, his Yuan Force would be unable to stop it and he would eventually die if he did not cut his arm off.

Everyone who saw the attack was pale. They were now scared out of their wits. This scene was too scary. Despite the fact that all of them were strong Combat Emperors, the power of the magma was way too powerful that they couldn't even defend themselves with their current strength.

\*Hong Long\*

Giant waves dashed upwards, causing the entire magma river to boil. Pillars of magma rose up, spiraling in the air above. The temperature of the entire spatial zone turned extremely hot all of a sudden with the release of the scary poison. They could feel their Yuan Force diminishing gradually as well.

In the end, the pillars of magma stood upright in the air, it did not descend. Then, it formed a light curtain of magma. The light pillars of magma were like ferocious beasts, roaring continuously.

“We are finished. Why did it turned out to be like this? The magma river is moving relentlessly, it seems that it will cover the entire spatial zone. When that happens, we won’t be able to escape anymore and will be buried here.”

“The monument, that’s right! It is the blood red monument. It can’t be removed from this place. It was used to suppress the magma river. Now that it was removed by the monk, the magma river isn’t suppressed anymore and thus bursted wildly.”

“Monk, quickly put the monument back to its place. Only it can contain the magma river. We can’t even defend ourselves against the magma. What’s the big deal if we can’t search for the treasure?

It is still better than to die here, right?”

.....

Someone clamored at Tyrant, wanting him to put the monument back in place. He was a disciple of Skyhill School and was determined in his words, but Tyrant didn’t seem convinced.

“Amitabha, I’m fated to retrieve this monument, I can’t put it back.”

Tyrant said it faithfully.

## Your mother!!!

Most of them almost fainted. ‘What has your relationship with the monument got to do with us? You will kill us all because of your damn monument!’

“Tyrant, as a disciple of the Buddha Sect that teaches that saving one life can build a seven-story pagoda. You are not going to see these people die, are you?”

The disciple of the Skyhill School continued to speak loudly at Tyrant. He knew that this monk was with Jiang Chen, so he didn’t dare to act rashly.

“Amitabha, the monument is in my possession. So, the magma won’t attack me.”

It was as if Tyrant hadn’t heard what the disciple had just said. His response really irritated everyone. Where did this selfish monk come from? The magma wouldn’t attack him but it would attack the others.

“Monk, do you want to kill us all? Take a look at how many lives are here!”

Someone shouted.

“En, there are quite many people but is that my business?”

Tyrant spoke those words with accuracy and calmness which made everyone almost puke, even Big Yellow couldn't accept it and fell to the ground with a puff. Big Yellow had admitted to himself that he was the most shameless being in the world, but he didn't expect Tyrant to be worse than him.

Han Yan and the Sot Old Man had been rolling their eyes. They finally understood the 'fine' quality of this monk. Han Yan now knew why Jiang Chen and Big Yellow wanted to kick this monk's ass when he greeted him with solemnity.

Giving back an item that you just retrieved? What joke was this? Tyrant wouldn't do it. What he knew was that the monument was in his possession now and because of this, the magma wouldn't attack him. As for the others, he wasn't interested in them at all.

As for Jiang Chen and the rest, Tyrant wasn't concerned about it at all. He was sure that none of them would get hurt with Jiang Chen's presence.

"Mother! This monk wants us all dead. We should ally with one another and force him to give out the monument."

The disciple of Skyhill shouted.

"That's right, hand over the monument. The magma is going to attack soon, if you don't, we will all die here."

“Tyrant, give out the monument.”

.....

All of them surrounded Tyrant, but he was still calm as if he didn't realize their desperate situation.

“Fine.”

At this time, Jiang Chen shouted. “The monument was already removed from its original place, the infuriated magma river won't stop even if the monument is put back.”

“Jiang Chen, but the magma is going to attack and destroy this entire spatial zone. We do not want to die here, only the monument can suppress the magma river.”

That disciple of Skyhill said loudly.

“I have a way to let you all live.”

Jiang Chen said.

“What? You have a way? You may be strong but I'm sure you won't be able to stop this magma.”

Someone asked with doubts.

“All of you, back away.”

Jiang Chen shouted. He flew towards the magma. The harmful heat waves released from the magma wouldn't be able to affect Jiang Chen. He had the True Thunderfire and True Dragon Fire protecting his body, thus the magma couldn't harm him, and instead, it became his supplement.

“How is big brother going to deal with this magma?”

Zuo Ling Er asked with concern.

“No need to worry, Ling Er. That kid probably knows what to do since he has flown all the way over there.”

Big Yellow said while wagging his tail, he was very confident in Jiang Chen.

“Yeah, Little Chen won't do anything that he isn't confident in. This magma may be troublesome, but I'm afraid little Chen would not be defeated by it.”

Han Yan folded his arms and said plainly.

...

This is a type of Chinese way of cursing that means 'motherfucker,' 'asshole' and the likes.



# Chapter 672 - The Broken Pot Showed Its Strength Again

---

The attack from the magma was too scary. It was vibrating and moving violently which enhanced the attack even more. Ordinary people wouldn't be able to defend both the attack and also the terrifyingly high temperature.

Their gazes were on Jiang Chen the moment he rushed out. The only hope they had was the person in front of them, Jiang Chen. If he couldn't deal the magma, it would launch attacks at the spatial zone. When that happens, everything in the spatial zone would be destroyed, including them, and this place would then be a land of death.

\*Roar\*

The magma which formed light curtains became wild all of a sudden when it felt the counteracting party. Three light pillars of magma turned into magma dragons to punish the intruder as they charged at Jiang Chen from different directions.

“Nonet Flood Dragon Massacre.”

Jiang Chen's pupils showed no fear. He casted the Nonet Flood Dragon Massacre, and the nine dragons howled. These dragons weren't just formed by the Yuan Force, they were also formed by large amounts of True Thunderfire and True Dragon Flames. They weren't afraid of the three magma dragons at all.

Jiang Chen initiated to attack the magma to test its strength. His Nonet Flood Dragon Massacre that was casted fully could straight away kill a Fifth Grade Combat Emperor.

\*Hong Long\*

Two extremely hot energy collided, causing a wave of energy to burst out. It was so powerful that the core of the magma light curtain was moving frantically and was completely drowned in the magma river and flames, including Jiang Chen. None of his shadow could be found.

“Not good, Jiang Chen was engulfed by the magma.”

Someone shouted with a pale expression.

“Damn! That magma is too scary. Jiang Chen was really rash to confront the magma light pillar. Is this equal to seeking death?”

“He is finished. Jiang Chen is dead. No one here can defeat the magma now.”

A lot of people's faces were full of despair. Regardless if they were Jiang Chen's enemy or friend, he was their only hope. If Jiang Chen was dead, no one could save them. Han Yan and Sot Old Man were strong but they were people of the devil religion which meant that their cultivated devil techniques would be suppressed by the magma. They were no match for it.

\*Bang\*

However, during their moment of despair, a silhouette jumped out of the magma. If he wasn't Jiang Chen, who else would he be? They saw that Jiang Chen was like a fire dragon that continuously drifted through the magma. His body was constantly being attacked by the magma but nothing happened to him.

“Big brother is fine, fantastic!”

Zuo Ling Er made a happy jump. The others heaved a sigh of relief and felt shocked by it. This Jiang Chen was really terrifying. A Second Grade Combat Emperor could actually drift around in the magma without being harmed. This ability itself was crazy.

\*Howl\*

The magma light pillar became stronger and made another attack to Jiang Chen. His eyes were both red. The heat and the hot poison released by the magma couldn't make an impact to his body, but its attacks were too strong. Not even Jiang Chen could stand it.

“Heavenly Earth Pure Water.”

Jiang Chen kept his True Thunderfire and True Dragon fire. A cold fog appeared on the surface of his body. When the chilling fog appeared, the attack from the magma dampened. The temperature around Jiang Chen was also reduced, as if the magma was facing

its natural enemy. Its attacks started to slow down.

The Heavenly Earth Pure Water was the coldest thing in the world. Since his strong flames couldn't suppress the magma, he should use a skill of the opposite property to do it. Now, it seemed that the power of the Heavenly Earth Pure Water was effective towards the magma.

However, this wasn't what Jiang Chen wanted to do. He intended to eliminate all this magma by using the Heavenly Earth Pure Water. The problem was, this magma had been here for a very long time which meant that there were souls literally living within it that were impossible to eliminate.

Of course, that was just a quick thought. He chose to confront the magma to test its true power. As for how to deal with it and save the lives of these people, he already had other ways.

If he was alone, he could've pass through the magma river and straight away entered another spatial zone to search for possible treasures. But now, he had to consider the other people as well, those odd cultivators were innocent. If they died because Tyrant had removed the monument, he couldn't handle the guilt. Of course, Tyrant wouldn't give out the monument that he had retrieved.

Besides, this magma was extremely useful to him.

Jiang Chen's body was shielded by Heavenly Earth Pure Water. He turned into a ray of light, moving very fast, he flew upwards

away from the magma. His black hair danced through the wind, his white robe was rippling and his glare was like a torch while he was watching the rolling magma below.

“What’s he doing?”

“The magma doesn’t affect him anymore, is he going to get past it while ignoring our lives?”

“I don’t think so. His friends are still here and also the disciples of the Nebula Sect. Even if he doesn’t care about our lives, he would still care about his friends’ lives.”

.....

Someone recalled Tyrant’s phrase ‘none of my business’ and was afraid that Jiang Chen would really go off and left them here to die.

Truth be told, Jiang Chen wasn’t that kind of person.

When all of their attentions were put on him, Jiang Chen turned his palm to take out an item. When they could see clearly what it was, they nearly fainted. This dude actually took out a broken pot in a moment of emergency.

That was right, it was a broken pot! If one looked closer, you could even see the ancient symbols carved on its surface.

Big Yellow's eyes sparkled when he saw the broken pot. He had never forgotten about it. Back when the Icy Island was opened, the broken pot rushed out. Its fiery light was as brilliant as one of the magma light pillar now and its power was great.

“Master dog actually forgot about this treasure. This dude is really smart, he wants to keep all the magma into this broken pot. However, I'm not sure whether the broken pot can hold the magma, if it can, this magma would be a very destructive tool.”

Big Yellow's eyes widened. He was the most familiar about that treasure. He knew that it was a rare treasure the moment he saw it.

Jiang Chen was looking at the broken pot. Since he had obtained this broken pot after killing a Combat Soul expert, it had become a useless garbage. It was thrown to one corner. He only remembered it when he faced the terrifying magma. Perhaps, this broken pot could keep and contain the magma. If it was successful, he could use the stored magma to cause a destructive attack next time.

“Let me try.”

Jiang Chen pulled open the mouth of the pot. He was currently drifting above the magma. He put a large amount of Yuan Force into the broken pot. All of a sudden, the pot trembled frantically in his hand as if it could sense the terrifying Qi of the magma.

\*Buzz\*

As the trembling became more intense, Jiang Chen could feel that the weight of the broken pot kept on increasing, it was as if he was holding a mountain in his hand.

\*Howl\*

A wind suddenly rushed out of the broken pot. That was the force of attraction. It turned into a tornado and a magma light pillar was then sucked into the broken pot in a twinkle.

Jiang Chen's face was full of delight. It seemed that he wasn't wrong in his presumption. The broken pot was a rare treasure that could contain the magma. The stored magma light pillar would then be shrunk by more than a hundred times. That was because it was being purified by the broken pot and what would be left would be the essence of the magma.

“A very terrifying treasure. It can actually extract the essence of the magma instantly. Alas, the magma here is too much. I have no idea if this broken pot has such an enormous appetite that will allow it to fully absorb all of them.”

Jiang Chen was surprisingly happy. The broken pot began to tremble even harder as if it felt Jiang Chen's criticism. Its force of attraction became stronger and it sucked in three magma light pillars at one time.

The magma light pillars were rising up to the sky, all of them were sucked in by Jiang Chen's broken pot simultaneously.

“Quickly, look. The magical treasure that Jiang Chen is holding is a scary one. It can even suck in the magma.”

“Great, that treasure is awesome! If all of the magma is sucked into that broken pot, the danger will be gone. However, it sounds a little difficult as there are too much magma here and the broken pot is only a small one.”

“What do you know? You can’t judge a true treasure by its appearance. The internal space in his pot might be very big that it can suck all the magma, saving us.”

.....

Most of the cultivators’ faces looked surprised and delighted. Who would have thought that Jiang Chen would have such an amazing treasure? Not only did he not fear the magma, he even wanted to directly contain the magma. He’s truly terrifying.

“Brother Jiang’s tricks are endless, I never thought that he had such a treasure.”

Sot Old Man heaved a sigh and felt very impressed by Jiang Chen.

“Truly, a dude who creates miracles.”



Tyrant couldn't help but shake his head. He thought that he had known Jiang Chen's every trick for he had followed him for a long time. Nonetheless, what he saw now proved him wrong. Jiang Chen's tricks were unpredictable and Tyrant couldn't help but to give him a thumbs up.

“Brother Jiang is really a rare genius who appears only every ten thousand years. Nebula Sect will become very terrifying with his existence.”

The two disciples of Nebula Sect felt convinced by Jiang Chen's abilities. Everyone on the scene had already thought of passing through the magma and entering into another spatial zone, but none thought of using this heaven defying trick.

...

# Chapter 673 - Someone Is In the Herb Garden

---

This technique is undeniably heaven defying. No one had imagined that the power of the broken pot would be so great. It seemed like Jiang Chen was going to suck up all the magma into his broken pot.

In just a few minutes' time, half of the magma was already sucked away, the remaining magma would definitely face the same fate.

As the broken pot continued to show its strength, Jiang Chen's facial expression also changed. He realized that the space in the broken pot wasn't as big as he had expected. The reason it could contain so much magma was due to the power of purification. Every time the magma was sucked in, it would be purified instantly and be left with only its essence.

Until now, the broken pot was half-filled with magma essence which was a lot more powerful than the original magma.

“According to what is happening, this broken pot should be able to fully suck all the magma of this river. By that time, the broken pot will be full of its essence and if it is used to attack, the force will be unimaginably great.”

Jiang Chen muttered to himself. The magma itself was very scary, now that it had been purified into essence. Using the power of the broken pot, the released magma would create a very

powerful and destructive attack that even Jiang Chen didn't dare think about.

“His mother! With this toy, if someone were to offend me, I will use this to spray on him.”

Jiang Chen grinned with delight and couldn't help but give Big Yellow a praising look for choosing the correct spatial zone. Besides the Heaven Rank Restoration pills, he acquired an extremely useful tool that could be one of his trump cards. Also, Tyrant had retrieved the monument which was a rare and precious treasure.

“What a powerful pot. It has such a large space. Half of it is already contained, seems like it wouldn't be too difficult to suck them all up.”

“This is too good, as long as we get rid of this path-blocking magma, not only are our lives spared, we can also pass through this place and enter another spatial zone in search of the true treasure.”

“This time we are indebted to brother Jiang again. Although this man is arrogant, he can still be nice and at least he is better than those arrogant geniuses of the major powers.”

.....

Many people felt a sense of gratitude towards Jiang Chen. Although he was very powerful and impressive, full of arrogance

and very rude. People could sense that he was only cruel to his enemy. As long as you do not offend him deliberately, Jiang Chen is still a very nice person.

After a few minutes, the last magma pillar was sucked in. The river that was once full of magma was now dry. The high temperature of the area returned to its optimal level, it is not as hot as before.

“Excellent...”

Someone shouted delightfully. Everyone’s face showed a relaxed expression. Their moods were now more positive than the previous disappointed mood that they had felt. The obstacle in front of their path was gone, now they could continue their journey into a different spatial zone.

Many people looked at Jiang Chen with gratitude, especially those odd cultivators and the core disciples of Nebula Sect.

Jiang Chen was holding the broken pot, its weight was equivalent to thousands of kilograms. He didn’t understand the ancient symbols that were carved outside the broken pot. However, he casted his Great Soul Derivation Technique into the pot and through his senses, he knew that the magma essence inside the pot could be used three times. In other words, Jiang Chen could release the magma essence three times, after that, the broken pot would become useless.

“Three times...Not bad.”

Jiang Chen smiled. He could imagine the power of the magma essence and the strength of the broken pot. Once released, not even Combat Emperors could handle it. Of course, he would only know the overall power of it when it was released.

“Everyone, the obstacle is removed. We can leave now.”

Jiang Chen turned to the crowd and said.

“We will remember your help, brother Jiang.”

Someone held his fists at Jiang Chen. Many people started to change their impression on Jiang Chen. Anyhow, if it wasn't for Jiang Chen's help, even if they didn't die, they would be trapped here in the spatial zone. Then they had to wait for a month before the five legendary tycoons open the Death Mountain again and their trip would be totally wasted.

Many people flew through the dried up magma river. After flying for a few hundred miles, there was an image of a spatial barrier. The other spatial zone lied behind this barrier, they had to get past it.

As for the current spatial zone, there wasn't anything precious there. Only the palace in which the treasures had already been taken away by Jiang Chen. The monument was retrieved by the monk, and even the destructive magma was taken away by Jiang Chen's magical treasure. So, it could be said that there's nothing left in this spatial zone anymore, not even a tiny piece of a

treasure.

Big Yellow directed them to enter this spatial zone, the benefits would definitely be promising.

“Hey, monk, what’s the monument about? Why couldn’t Master Dog lift it off the ground but you could?”

Big Yellow was still unable to settle down because of the monument incident, he couldn’t help but asked Tyrant.

“I have yet to study it. Back then, I felt some sort of familiarity with this monument but I never thought that I could actually lift it up. I guess it’s because I have too much Qi, so much that even the monument couldn’t handle it. Ya, it should be like what I said.”

Tyrant said in solemn tone.

“Get lost!”

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow opened their mouths at the same time. Big Yellow immediately got far away from Tyrant, completely perishing his thoughts of wanting to know about the secret of the monument.

“Big brother, they have all entered the other spatial zone, we should too.”

Zuo Ling Er said.

“Okay.”

Jiang Chen nodded. They flew through the spatial barrier and vanished in a blink of an eye and entered into the other spatial zone.

In a flash, Jiang Chen and the rest reappeared. They saw green mountains, forest, birds and a thick Heavenly Earth Yuan Force lingering in the air. This place was really conducive for cultivation.

“A very dense Heavenly Earth Yuan Force. It is much greater than the one on the mountains of Nebula Sect.”

Zuo Ling Er felt refreshed.

Everybody was amazed by the environment. The differences of the environment in this place and the previous spatial zone was comparable to that of heaven and hell. It certainly feels like a holy land.

“It's very hard to imagine that there is such a place under the Death Mountain after so many years have passed. This environment is definitely suitable for cultivating, anyone will be able to gain a lot while cultivating here. One day of cultivation here will probably be equal to ten days of cultivation outside.”

Sot Old Man's eyes glittered with amazement. He was constantly

looking around the environment, confirming that this place was indeed a true 'Holy Land' for cultivating.

“Kakaka! There must be treasure in this place!”

Big Yellow laughed.

“Big Yellow, what did you find?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Isn’t this simple? The Death Mountain is supposed to be a dead land, it will be impossible for such a great land to exist. Look at those flowers and grasses, they are blossoming and well grown. This place is filled with Heavenly Earth Qi of soul. There must be a reason for this place to exist. I guess there must be some kind of treasure that causes this sort of thing to happen, it has to be it.”

Big Yellow said.

Jiang Chen’s eyes sparkled after hearing Big Yellow's reason. Since it was Big Yellow himself who told him that, Jiang Chen would believe it.

“Let’s go to the deeper region to find out more.”

Han Yan said. Their group didn’t delay any further and flew towards the deeper region quickly. They could feel that the space



in this spatial zone wasn't that big. but had a very vigorous Heavenly Earth Yuan Force. There were ancient green pines that were three hundred meters tall, shooting through the air above.

After flying for ten minutes, they saw many people heading towards the same direction, making the place crowded all of a sudden.

This spatial zone was a deeper zone than the previous. They could see that many cultivators had already entered into this spatial zone.

“Big brother, why are so many people going there”

Zuo Ling Er asked.

At this time, two people greeted Jiang Chen and Zuo Ling Er quickly after they saw them. One of them said, “Brother Jiang, it seems like there is some sort of treasure in front, why are you all not going there yet?”

These two were the disciples of Nebula Sect and were very impressed by Jiang Chen.

More than four hundred people were already present a hundred miles ahead, surrounding the land.

When Jiang Chen approached, he saw a huge herb garden. He remembered the time when he's in Icy Island, there was also an

herb garden there, but the difference in size between this one was large.

This huge herb garden had a radius of more than fifty miles. Its internal part was grown with rare and invaluable herbs. Many of the herbs were full of Qi of soul, and one could roughly tell how old these herbs were with just one look.

There was a Dragon Ginseng that turned into a small human, it kept on bouncing around in the herb gardens, which made those who were watching dribble.

However, this herb garden was blocked by a layer of seal. Outsiders couldn't enter, but the sealing power was starting to decrease. They were all waiting for it to completely vanish so that they could all rush into it.

“Mother! This is the great treasure! Look at that Dragon Ginseng! It has grown into its essence, if I can eat him, my body will evolved again!”

A cultivator licked his mouth. The cultivators were all aiming for the jumping Dragon Ginseng, they were prepared to be the first one to catch and eat it.

Nonetheless, at this moment, a large hand appeared in the herb garden and captured the Dragon Ginseng. They saw a person illuminating a green light emerging behind the magnificent large herb and grabbed the Dragon Ginseng, ignoring the struggles of the little thing and ate it.

“Dammit! Every time I eat these natural stuff, my mouth will go plain.”

That person said in the same manner as Big Yellow. His comment caused instant fury from the crowd.

# Chapter 674 - Absolutely Shameless!

---

God! Someone was inside the herb garden?

How could this be possible? There was a very strong seal set on the area, no one could ever enter it. Moreover, this garden had been here for a very long time, why would there be anyone in it? Could it be someone from the Colossus Sect who had luckily survived?

That is impossible. The Colossus Sect had been completely eliminated. Those who survived had all turned into dark souls, but this person in front of them didn't look like a dark soul at all.

However, they didn't have the mood to think about these things, they were busy staring at the person with a shining green glow. That person was as tall as a human and as strong as a horse, he had quite a good-looking face and seemed to be in his twenties.

Of course, everybody wasn't looking at his pleasant face, but the Dragon Ginseng which had been swallowed down into his throat.

Your sister! That was a fine Dragon Ginseng, it had grown a soul and became intelligent, it was a very invaluable precious herb. It was an unimaginably unusual thing. It could spark up the life force of a dead man, allowing his bones to function again. These people were stunned when they saw the Dragon Ginseng being eaten and felt that it was wasted on this bastard.

Wait, what did that bastard just say? Did he say he was eating

these kind of stuff every day, and his taste buds were turning insensitive and plain as a result of that?

Damn you bastard! There was actually someone who disliked the taste of the Dragon Ginseng. What also infuriated them was that this guy was having these fine herbs every single day of his life? God, please strike him to death by lightning.

“Why is there someone in the herb garden and how was he able to get in? Who is he?”

“Look, that bastard’s body was glowing with a green light from top to bottom. That is the effect of the herb. It seems that that man has been consuming these herbs here every single day, turning his body into a precious physique.”

“Heaven defying! Whatever that bastard belch out will be full of the medicinal force. How did he get in? He just ate a fine Dragon Ginseng, this is such a waste of God’s gift.”

.....

Everyone’s eyes turned red and had the urge to kill him. They could sense the herb aura from the guy’s body, so they knew that he wasn’t telling any lies. He was really eating Dragon Ginseng of a fine quality everyday. Besides the Dragon Ginseng, there were also many rare ancient herb, but they had no idea how many of them had been abused by this man.

All the cultivators were gritting their teeth at the person in the herb garden, they wanted to pull that dude out and eat him up separately. There were three dudes who also had their mouths wide open, they were Jiang Chen, Han Yan and Big Yellow. Their expression were akin of being startled. They didn't blink once while staring at the man in the herb garden. Besides a startling feeling, they also felt surprise.

The person in the herb garden looked very strong. After he swallowed the Dragon Ginseng, he heard some noise and looked up to see that so many people were giving him a glare that told him to puke the ginseng out for them.

These angry stares didn't make him feel uncomfortable. Instead it made him feel very excited and happy, and cried as a result of his happiness. "Finally, there are living humans!"

"Ah Nan."

His name was spoken and he heard it. He stopped crying and moved. He tried to locate the source of the sound and saw Jiang Chen, Han Yan and Big Yellow. He shouted excitedly and wildly at them, then he rolled and crawled to the edge of the herb garden, knelt down and started crying again.

"Damn! This bastard is such a disgrace. How could such a young lord cry like a baby bear?"

Big Yellow couldn't help but criticize him.

This man wasn't a stranger to them, it was Nangong Wentian. Since Jiang Chen had entered the Divine Continent, he had lost contact with his friend, Nangong Wentian. However, he had never expected to meet him here. He was still worrying about Nangong Wentian before this. Now, he felt relieved as he saw him in a good condition. This dude was considered to have a good luck to obtain such a great treasure.

They could feel the Qi of a peak Sixth Grade Combat Emperor in his body, which was only a step away from the Seventh Grade. The scary part wasn't his grade, it was the quality of his body. No one could guess how much herbs this dude had taken, it is as if he had become some kind of a human herb. In other words, this person's body was full of magical body cells. If you could cultivate beside him, your grade would improve drastically. If his blood was drawn, one bowl of it would cost as much as a city and his flesh would be sold out instantly.

“Friends! I finally have the chance to reunite with my friends... Little Chen, Big Yellow, and Han Yan quickly get me out of here. This place is about to drive me mad!”

Liquid was flowing out of Nangong Wentian's nose and eyes. It was like he had found his closest family members, and it made him so excited that he didn't know how to express it. He felt even sad when he recalled all the days he had to go through in this sealed place.

When everyone heard what Nangong Wentian said, they felt another urge to bash this guy up until he became paralyzed. Such a treasured place had been degraded by him so much to the point

that his mouth felt unpleasant because of eating these plain herbs everyday. Was his statement even acceptable?

Didn't he know that many people here dreamt to experience his circumstance? These people would die just to experience what he did.

Absurd, truly absurd, he actually knew Jiang Chen and his friends.

“Ah Nan, breathe slowly and calm your down.”

Jiang Chen consoled him quickly.

How could Nangong Wentian not feel overly excited when he saw so many people, especially the ones he knew?

Jiang Chen's comforting words didn't stop his sobs, it actually worsened it.

“This is humiliating.”

Han Yan put his palm on his forehead. This young lord was considered heaven defying for crying like this even though he was an adult male.

“Young master, who is this guy? Do you know him?”



Sot Old Man asked curiously.

“He is the friend I have told you about before, Nangong Wentian. We arrived in the Divine Continent together. I have no idea how this dude ended up here.”

Han Yan explained.

Sot Old Man was startled to hear this, this crying man was actually Nangong Wentian. His impression of him made him unable to greet him.

“Big brother, this guy has obtained so many benefits but he still wants our pity. His continuous crying still wouldn’t stop.”

Zuo Ling Er couldn’t take it anymore.

“Amitabha, this man is really shameful.”

Tyrant muttered.

“Tyrant, you finally said something nice.”

Big Yellow nodded in agreement.

“Nan, if you were to continue crying, we are leaving.”

Nangong Wentian stopped all his wailing when he heard the warning. It doesn't matter if it was true or not, he still changed his face into a happy one. This guy can change his facial expression faster than flipping the pages of a book.

“Little Chen, quickly find a way to get me out of here. I have fallen into the cracks of the spatial zone and when I came to this place. Then, I have fallen into this stupid herb garden. I attempted to get out but I realized that there was a layer of seal preventing me from leaving this garden. My grandmother! I have been eating so many herbs and medicines here and was bored to death. If you guys didn't appear, I will go crazy.”

Nangong Wentian said.

His statement stirred up another wave of curse from the crowd. Most were scolding him for his shameless behavior and others were envious of his luck. They could tell from his tone that he wasn't just stuck in here for a day or two. When they thought of how many herbs had been abused by this man, they felt furious and wasted, and had the urge to kill him.

“You know that there is a seal outside, so how am I gonna get you out?”

Jiang Chen spread his arms wide.

“Big Yellow, ya, Big Yellow is an expert in the seal art. Quickly, break this seal and let me out!”

Nangong Wentian looked at Big Yellow.

“The seal here is gradually weakening. It won’t take long for it to disappear entirely. If you try to break it, it will cause the seal to respond by creating an overwhelming force. Don’t you see that there are so many people here, yet they didn’t dare to touch the seal? You just have to wait for a little bit more. When the seal is gone, you can come out.”

Big Yellow said.

“Good, this is very good. I can finally go out. Ha! Ha!”

Nangong Wentian felt a sense of happiness after confirming that he could get out in no time, and laughed.

“Ah Nan, listen to me.”

Jiang Chen lowered his voice and used Divine Sense to directly talk to him.

“Before this seal fades away, keep those herbs that are older, especially the herbs that have turned into a fine herb.

Jiang Chen’s face revealed an insidious smile. There were too many herbs here, everyone would race into the garden once the seal disappeared. As there were a lot of people here, the scene would be uncontrollable when everyone entered the herb garden.

It was a gifted chance from the heavens for Nangong Wentian to be stuck in the herb garden. If this dude took all the herbs with him, no one outside could do anything about it. However, he wouldn't let his friend act like this, he only wanted his friend to keep those precious and ancient herbs and the rest would be left for others. If he really did rob all of these herbs away, it wouldn't be very good and it would definitely cause a wave of dissatisfaction.

“Alright, as I am already too fed up with the taste of these herbs, I will get you some.”

Nangong Wentian turned to the herb garden and ran towards the internal part. He had eaten more than enough herbs and it would be a waste if he ate more as the herbs wouldn't have any effect on him anymore. He was now getting the herbs for Jiang Chen and his friends.

It was obvious that Nangong Wentian was very familiar with this place. He made a sway on his body and reached an area fully grown with herbs in a twinkle. He extended his arm to pluck them. He plucked two fine Dragon Ginseng then kept into his Qi Sea.

“What's that bastard doing? He took another two fine Dragon Ginseng? My god!”

“Look, that is a giant golden lotus. Its roots are coming out of the ground, and he is pulling it out!”

.....

Many were shocked all of a sudden, they could only watch Nangong Wentian pulling the giant golden lotus out of the ground and keeping it in his Qi Sea. After finishing his job, he didn't forget to wink at those who were looking at him, this man truly deserved some beating.

## Chapter 675 - Entire Body Spurting Blood

---

When they realized what Nangong Wentian was trying to do, they cursed and swore at him and wanted to rush over to tear him apart. Nangong Wentian treated these angry glares and shouts as non-existent and strode towards some unknown herb and plucked it. No one could tell how long this herb existed here, but it was as large as a big tree. Each of its leaves had extraordinary effects. This herb could cost more than a city.

Very quickly, up to five or six of the ancient and rare herbs were swept away by him. People's eyes turned furiously red from seeing these herbs disappearing one by one.

“This dude needs to be killed. He wants to snatch all the herbs away? This is outrageous!”

“Damn him! He's gonna waste the herbs, any of these herbs can bring rejuvenating effects to my body, now they are all taken away by this dude, this isn't fun at all.”

“Bastard! Stop! I want you to stop!”

.....

The crowd was getting intensely desperate, they were all angry. Everyone was gritting their teeth. If they were allowed to enter, they would certainly lunge at him and bite him to death.

“Kaka...”

Nonetheless, Nangong Wentian laughed like Big Yellow. He felt extremely good seeing so many angry eyes. It was too good. Since he had been contained in his herb garden for a very long time he wanted others to share his unexpressed feelings. It was definitely intoxicating.

The happiness that was built on other people's suffering was a splendid experience.

Nangong Wentian randomly said 'hi' to them from time to time and tried to provoke them, he also did some offensive gestures while collecting the herbs. The unpleasant feeling of losing the great herbs added with the extremely annoying face of Nangong Wentian could even cause the person with the highest moral to curse.

“Wakaka! Ah Nan, nice one. There is a Jimsonweed aged thousands of years in front of you. Pluck it for brewing wine.”

Big Yellow was bouncing up and down, feeling very excited for the rare herbs he was going to get. Most of them couldn't take it anymore after hearing his words. Big Yellow then crouched in the air and made a 'puff' sound when his legs touched the ground. This dog was more shameless than the bastard inside the garden. That was a Jimsonweed of more than a thousand-year-old, it could heal different kinds of injuries and is considered to be a Saint medicine. This dog just wanted to use it to brew his wine, go to hell.

“Behind you. Yeah, that Dragon Fruit Tree, pull it up with its roots. Such a big tree can be chopped off to make a bed for me. It must be comfortable to sleep on this wood.”

Big Yellow continued to say.

Sounds of cursing

Some people were dumbfounded. Using the trunk of the Dragon Fruit Tree to make a bed? Was this dog igniting god's wrath? Even the most useless and reckless god wouldn't do this.

On the tree, there were a few blood red dragon fruits. They were already ripe, and was a true and precious food which were very rare outside. These few dragon fruits costs more than a city.

Nevertheless, Nangong Wentian followed what Big Yellow said. Without replying, he wrapped his hands around the Dragon Fruit Tree and pulled it up with the roots, keeping the entire plant while chuckling loudly.

“Your Mother!”

“This bastard will ignite god's wrath!”

“The precious food is ruined!”

Someone's tears trickled down washing their faces. Aren't they



satisfied with the dragon fruits? Must they really pull out the entire tree as well?

“This is truly a waste of resources.”

Sot Old Man couldn't bear it and let out a sigh. He had acknowledged the friends of his young master being unusual. As for Big Yellow, he was the weirdest of them all. Tyrant was also beyond expectation as well when he faced the monument of the magma river. Now, there is another outrageous man, Nangong Wentian.

“Absurd.”

Tyrant grinned. His words didn't match his grinning face. Although he had just met this Nangong Wentian for the first time, he had a good impression of him. This should be what they had always said, for people who had a lot in common, there was only regret if they didn't meet sooner.

“Jiang Chen, quickly ask your friend to stop. We all found this herb garden. All the herbs should be given fairly to us, it is not for him alone.”

This time, one man shouted to Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen turned to him. That man was a powerful Eighth Grade Combat Emperor. He had just arrived, he was wearing the uniform of the Freedom Palace but he wasn't Li Long. He should be

some genius of the Freedom Palace. It may be due to his high level of grade that his face carried an arrogant expression.

“Humph!”

Jiang Chen just made a humph because he was too lazy to even reply. He didn't feel any good out of the Freedom Palace. If this guy didn't offend him, Jiang Chen wouldn't do anything about it. If he did, Jiang Chen would definitely show him some skills.

“Jiang Chen, you think that I won't dare to kill you? Let me tell you this, you have offended the Freedom Palace and that means you are dead.”

That disciple of the Freedom Palace was infuriated. A wave of murderous aura came out from his body. Now that he had met Jiang Chen in this spatial zone, he would not hesitate to get rid of him instantly. Freedom King had already given the orders to take him down in the Death Mountain before they entered. However, he didn't dare to make a move here as the herb garden in front was too precious. The seal was going to disappear soon and his attempt to attack might cause a negative reaction from the seal and it would be locked down again. In the end, no one would be able to get into the herb garden, he definitely didn't want this to happen.

“Shut up! Who are you to dare to bark in front of me?”

Han Yan shouted coldly at the guy. Of course, he had given the disciple enough respect. He was the young master of the Dark Devil Religion which was comparable to the status of a core disciple in

the Freedom Palace. Even if his position wasn't as high, his high level of grade was at the peak of the Seventh Grade Combat Emperor, allowing him to belittle this guy.

“Humph! The young master of the Dark Devil Religion is trying to be imposing here, but your intimidation won't make any impact in front of the Freedom Palace.”

This time, a cold tone came from far away. All of the people could see them clearly. A few disciples of the Freedom Palace flew over from far away and it was lead by Li Long.

When Li Long arrived, he fixed his gaze on Jiang Chen, not trying to hide his murderous aura. His failure to kill Jiang Chen was his greatest regret.

“Brother Li.”

The one who challenged Jiang Chen looked at Li Long and greeted him.

“Leave him alone for now. Once we have the herbs in our hands, I will personally kill him. No one will stop me.”

Li Long said confidently. Of all the people who entered the Death Mountain, Li Long's grade was the highest. He didn't fear anyone. From his hypothesis, Jiang Chen could only depend on his two most powerful allies, the young master of the Dark Devil Religion and Guo Shao Fei of Nebula Sect. He didn't need to worry about

the young devil at all. Moreover, Guo Shao Fei, his possible obstacle hasn't appeared yet, perhaps he was still wandering around in another spatial zone. Thus, if he wanted to kill Jiang Chen, it would be easy since no one here could save him.

“It seems very crowded.”

Now, some people appeared again. There were more than ten from the Skyhill School's experts coming forward. The leader, Yan Hui, whose facial complexion was as clear as jade among them was currently at the peak of the Eighth Grade Combat Emperor, which was same as Li Long's.

After seeing Yan Hui's appearance, the group from the Skyhill School's disciples who came earlier moved quickly to their leader's back like a swarm of bees, as if they had found the backbone of their team.

“Brother Yan Hui, look. There is someone in the herb garden who is snatching away the ancient herbs. Look at his speed of snatching the herbs, I think all of the good stuff will be gone by the time the seal is gone.”

Someone said. While he was speaking, he saw Nangong Wentian putting in another herb into his Qi Sea, making him so angry to the extent that he wanted to spurt out blood.

Yan Hui's gaze was fixed on Nangong Wentian with a peculiar expression in his eyes. He didn't express any unhappiness about him snatching all the herbs. He turned to Li Long and asked in a

plain tone. “Brother Li, what do you think?”

“Isn’t it obvious? Since you have come, we will each get half of it. When the seal disappears, you and I will capture that person together. At the same time, we will also get the herbs. So it will be ours in the end. Also, I can see that this person is bursting with herb aura, we should also divide him in half.”

Li Long smiled. He was confident and determined that Nangong Wentian was a prey. It didn’t matter how many this prey snatched away from the herb garden since all of the herb would be returned to him again. He would strike when the seal disappears, capturing that person and getting the herbs back.

“Seems like you and I have the same thoughts.”

Yan Hui nodded. Whatever Li Long said was what he wanted to do as well. Now, the precious herbs weren’t only the herbs in Nangong Wentian’s Qi Sea, but also his body. To the two of them, this was a very lucky encounter. If they could get those herbs, they could create a earth-shaking transformation in their bodies given their abilities and it would push their grades to the peak of the Ninth Grade Combat Emperor, giving them the chance to reach the Minor Saint grade quicker.

The conversation was overheard by Jiang Chen and Han Yan. Both of them released rays of cold light from their eyes that carried a murderous aura. Jiang Chen didn’t have any conflicts and disputes with the Skyhill School. However, if that Yan Hui dared to attack Nangong Wentian, he wouldn’t hesitate to eliminate him.

“Those two bastards viewed me as their prey? Am I so easy to kill?”

Nangong Wentian gave a glance that showed violence and a sinister expression to Li Long and Yan Hui. Even if Jiang Chen and Han Yan couldn't stop these two, he wasn't a person they could afford to offend. To kill him? Even Li Long, a powerful cultivator wouldn't find it easy to do that.

Nangong Wentian grabbed another fine Dragon Ginseng in his hand and bit half of it, spitting the other half to the ground, and stepped on it a few times. This was seen by countless of them. All of them felt like spurting out blood, it was a fine Dragon Ginseng. OH GOD! A piece of the Dragon Ginseng was enough to cause people to fight to their deaths. This dude actually threw it on the ground?

“Ah Nan, time is of the essence. Don't play with the cats and dogs anymore, hasten your job.”

Jiang Chen said to Nangong Wentian. He didn't try to lower his tone this time, everyone could hear him clearly, especially 'the cats and dogs.' Many couldn't help but mutter, feeling offended. He used a cat and a dog to describe Li Long and Yan Hui? It seems that only Jiang Chen was bold enough to do that.

...

# Chapter 676 - A Lump of Golden Holy Medicine

---

“What did you say?”

Yan Hui was enraged. A wave of murderous aura rushed out of his body. Someone like him who was much superior to any other people there was called ‘A cat and a dog’ in front of so many people. How could he possibly stomach such an insult?

“There is no need to become furious brother Yan, let him be proud for a while. We’ll take his life sooner or later.”

Li Long said aggressively. He clenched his fists, producing some cracking sounds. His gaze was as sharp as a knife. From his point of view, if he wanted to kill Jiang Chen, it would be a piece of cake, so effortless as if crushing an ant with a finger.

Jiang Chen smiled coldly but didn’t speak. If these two really struck him, he would let them know what was pain and regret. In this world, there were some people that absolutely couldn’t be offended and Jiang Chen was one of them. Once someone offended him, the repercussion would be so severe that the offender couldn’t bear it.

Everyone could clearly feel the fading seal outside the herb garden. Seeing the person constantly moving up and down and the gradually diminishing ancient herbs, their eyes turned angrily red. Each of their palms turned into fists, producing cracking sounds consistently one after another. They were as if hungry predators

that were preparing to hunt down its prey: the herbs and the bastard.

Many people really wanted to dash in to knock the hell out of the bastard, but none dared to do anything stupid before the seal was completely gone.

Nangong Wentian was stifled for so long and so many days, but today was the happiest day of his life. To a living human who had been kept in isolation and had never seen anyone for a long time, it was pretty lonely. Suddenly, he had seen so many human beings and finally had the hope that he would be leaving this bitter sea soon. The feeling that he had wasn't understandable by ordinary people. He wasn't able to express it in words. Therefore, Nangong Wentian was trying to express these stifled and lonely feelings on the herbs -eat the herbs once it was plucked from the ground-which would make anyone feel envious about. His way of eating the herbs could even turn a pig into a genius.

However, many cultivators were disappointed in Nangong Wentian's actions. Mostly, they were the odd cultivators. They knew very well their own abilities and grade. Those ancient herbs, even if Nangong Wentian didn't keep it, they wouldn't have a chance to go to them after the seal was gone. They could only focus on the other herbs. If they could at least get some herbs, they would feel more than satisfied.

“Little Chen, I can sense the Qi of a treasure.”

Big Yellow's eyes sparkled and told Jiang Chen using his Divine Sense.



“Where is it?”

Jiang Chen’s facial expression was shaken. The treasure that Big Yellow could sense wasn’t going to be anything ordinary.

“It’s under this herb garden. I recalled an item called Heavenly Earth Pure Soil. This treasure is one of the ancestral five elements, which is parallel to the Heavenly Earth Pure Water. I can tell that there is a high chance of having such a holy soil below.”

Big Yellow continued, “You know that this Death Mountain is filled with death aura, as if there is no living being in it at all. However, this place is filled with a vigorous life force. You can sense the air of spring here, like a peaceful holy land. Particularly, this herb garden that was actually used to grow fine herbs and medicine. This is truly exceptional for a land. Even if it had been more than tens of thousands of years, the herbs can’t be turned into fine quality. Take a look at these herbs, they are all much sturdier and bigger than an old tree. This has to be due to the existence of the Heavenly Earth Pure Soil that caused this whole land to become like this.”

“Heavenly Earth Pure Soil.”

Jiang Chen’s pupil glittered with brilliance. Big Yellow couldn’t be wrong in his judgment about the formation of this environment. There had to be a reason for such a natural land to exist under the Death Mountain. However, he didn’t even dared to think about the relationship between this land and the Heavenly

Earth Pure Soil before Big Yellow shared his thoughts. Now, it seemed that the holy soil was possibly under the herb garden.

“If this is true, it would be perfect. After I have obtained the Heavenly Earth Pure Soil, my Earth Dragon’s cultivation will be completed which will further push my level of grade to the peak of the Third Grade Combat Emperor, probably even to the Fourth Grade Combat Emperor.”

Jiang Chen tried to suppress the excitement that he felt, he didn’t want anyone other than the two of them to know about this matter. Or else, there would be a chaotic fight for the treasure. Of Jiang Chen’s Five Elements Combat Dragon Seal, he had completed the Fire Dragon Seal and Water Dragon Seal. If he could obtain the Heavenly Earth Pure Soil, his Earth Dragon would become one of his strongest techniques. And most importantly, it was his level of grade that he needed to improve the most.

Hong

Finally, the seal was gone.

“Hey! Put that herb down!”

A Seventh Grade Combat Emperor of the Skyhill School saw Nangong Wentian was keeping another herb into his Qi Sea and flew over to him, wanting to rob it back.

“Beat it sucker!”

Nangong Wentian wasn't a nice opponent. He raised his fist and punched at him powerfully like how he punched a barbaric elephant. That disciple of the Skyhill School was sent away by the punch.

Everyone saw what happened, those who intended to strike Nangong Wentian instantly let out a cold frightened breath and changed their directions to different places of the herb garden to obtain herbs, completely discarding their thought of fighting that bastard. They were the kind of guys who gritted their teeth because they couldn't bear Nangong Wentian's provoking action, but they immediately got frightened and retreated after witnessing his terrifying strength.

After Nangong Wentian's Phenomenal Boundless Technique was activated with the help of Jiang Chen, his level of grade advanced swiftly. In addition, he had eaten up so many of the herbs, his transformation was earth-shaking.

"Everyone, try not to make any attacks in the herb garden to avoid spoiling the precious herbs."

Someone shouted. Honestly, what he said was true and effective as most of the people who wanted to fight stopped. Most of the cultivators on the scene were Combat Emperors. Once a fight was initiated, many of the herbs would be ruined. There's almost a ten miles radius that were filled with herbs, if they were destroyed, it would be extremely wasted.

Many of them had flown into the internal part of the herb garden. There was a portion there that Nangong Wentian hadn't searched yet but there were some ancient medicinal plant which had attracted a lot of experts from the five major powers over. The other odd cultivators and the cultivators of the minor powers were too slow and fell behind them.

Jiang Chen and his mates rushed to Nangong Wentian the moment the seal disappeared. Without saying a word, Nangong Wentian gave Jiang Chen and Han Yan a bear-like hug. He wanted to hug Big Yellow but was afraid that he would be bitten by him.

“My friends, I can finally see you all.”

Nangong Wentian's tears were washing his face again.

“You fool. It has been so long but you still haven't collected all the high grade herbs.”

Big Yellow wasn't satisfied with his actions and bit one of the herbs and swallowed it madly.

“It doesn't matter much, don't be overly greedy Big Yellow.”

Zuo Ling Er said while patting Big Yellow.

“Dang! What do kids know?”

Big Yellow replied while eating the herbs.

“Quickly, look! I have found some fine items but I don’t know what it is?”

Someone shouted. His hand was carrying something brilliantly gold, a lump of something golden. The medicinal aura was so strong and the Qi that was released from it was enough to tell that it was something very precious.

However, the shape of this thing was disgusting, similar to lumps of ugly-looking biscuits. If it wasn’t for its thick medicinal aura and the pleasant smell, people would treat it as an ordinary soil.

“That is a high grade medicinal plant. Quick, let me have a look.”

Someone said.

“Impossible, go and get it yourself if you are good enough. I will enjoy this plant first.”

That cultivator swallowed it straight away after replying to that person’s demand, and then he moved his tongue inside his mouth, licking his lips outside to taste the plant.

“The taste is a bit strange, maybe it has been here for too long, medicinal plants are usually like this.”

Nangong Wentian was also one of them who saw that cultivator swallow the entire lump of plant. He felt stunned and quickly, his face changed to a pleasant expression and laughed loudly. He was laughing so hard that he was bending forward and backward, almost tearing up.

“What are you laughing at?”

Han Yan didn't understand.

“Keke, ignore me. Allow me to feel happy for a moment.”

Nangong Wentian put his butt on the ground and started punching the ground using his fists.

“Haha, I have also found a medicinal plant.”

“There are also herbs here, a lot of them.”

.....

Many of them have found that lump of golden medicinal plants. Their faces were full of delight. To avoid being robbed by others, they consumed it on the spot.

“What herb is that? Nan, why didn't you keep it just now? Master Dog will go and get some for himself.”

Big Yellow grumbled and gave an angry glance at Nangong Wentian. He turned around and rushed into the herb garden but was caught by Nangong Wentian by his tail.

“Big Yellow, those medicinal plants are abundant. If you really want them, I will produce some for you from my stool.”

Nangong Wentian said it solemnly. As he said this, Big Yellow fell to the ground with a puff. It was his head which hit the ground first. He then looked at Nangong Wentian in admiration. He felt relieved in his heart since if it wasn't for Nangong Wentian's reminder, the consequences would be very serious.

“God!”

Jiang Chen, Han Yan, and Tyrant found out what the others had just eaten was unacceptable. Each one of them rolled their eyes wildly. The thought of them swallowing the golden plants gave them a shiver although it wasn't cold.

Later, because Nangong Wentian was talking loudly, many people could hear what he said. They instantly threw the golden lump aside, and ran far away from it as if it was some deadly poison.

“What the hell? That thing is pulled out deliberately by him? I... blargh...”

Puking

“Damn disgusting! My... blargh... grandmother... blargh...kill... blugh....me... blargh.”

“Bastard! Blargh...I have eaten two... blargh...of them... blargh... I will... blugh...kill him... blargh.”

.....

For a moment, people were puking everywhere. They retched so hard that tears came out. Some even lay on the ground to vomit, as if they wanted to expel their internal organs.

...



# Chapter 677 - The Broken Pot Came into Picture

---

A mental breakdown was caused, many of them collapsed. That was a mental breakdown that came from the deepest depths of their soul. Countless people felt as if they were going insane, their eyes were shooting out murderous flames. They glared at Nangong Wentian and wanted to kill him so badly.

“Go to hell bastard!”

Someone bellowed and declared his desire to kill Nangong Wentian. Nangong Wentian immediately slapped the ground and rose to his feet as he swept away the dust on his back and reached the person with a jump.

“You all willingly took it. What does it have to do with me? Also, if you all have consumed that plant, it may bring quite positive effects to your grade.”

However, no one wanted such benefits if they knew they had to go through such a torturous process. Now that they knew about it, they found it very unacceptable and disgusting. Why did he reveal the origin of that thing? Wouldn't it be better if they weren't informed about it?

“Wakaka, you really are impeccable. Master Dog is impressed, really impressed.”

Big Yellow was laughing and jumping up and down while seeing them puking continuously. It was a form of happiness in his heart. Not only was Big Yellow impressed by Nangong Wentian's prank, Tyrant also felt the same way. He had to admit that this dude was one of the few weirdos in the world.

“Ah Nan, aren't you going a little too far in your prank?”

Han Yan couldn't accept his prank. He could imagine how these cultivators felt after eating the golden plants and how badly they wanted to smash Nangong Wentian into pieces, or at least paralyze his body.

Nangong Wentian changed his facial expression into an innocent grief. “Ah Han, how can you even blame me for this? I have eaten too much herbs and couldn't digest it but could only expel it out through my smelly hole. Let me tell you guys, those are the essences of the herbs. It can even turn a pig into a genius. Those dudes actually gave them up, how foolish are they?”

Nangong Wentian sounded righteously angry. He looked at Big Yellow, patted his chest and said, “Big Yellow, your brother has a huge storage of those. Just tell me how much you want and I will excrete that much.”

“Beat it!”

Big Yellow opened his mouth big then bit Nangong Wentian's back. This man was really too shameless.

Nonetheless, Nangong Wentian wasn't wrong in his words. He had already eaten so much of the herbs that his stomach couldn't take it anymore. Despite the fact that there were still many other ways to get rid of the excess herbs, he didn't have to use such a lowly way to do it. This made everyone speechless.

Nangong Wentian undoubtedly caused the anger of the public. Everyone was gritting their teeth, especially the geniuses of the five major powers. Even some disciples of the Nebula Sect were affected. They puked like hell, but because they saw that Nangong Wentian was Jiang Chen's friend, they didn't sound a complaint.

As for the other four major powers, they were really infuriated to the point that they wanted to tear him apart, but it wasn't the time for them to act yet. There were still many herbs here and if they were a little slower, the herbs would be taken away. So, most of them endured this grievance and continued harvesting the herbs.

In the process of harvesting, some people saw the golden lump and puked again. Some immediately casted their skills on the golden lump until it became nothing.

The entire herb garden was in chaos. Silhouettes were everywhere. Anyone who looked at the garden could clearly see that the amount of herbs in the garden were being reduced drastically, like how a tornado would suck up the houses in an area.

Jiang Chen and his friends didn't move. They weren't interested in those herbs as Nangong Wentian had already gotten the herbs with the highest grade. He would just divide them fairly when they

return.

Two Qis' landed from above, totally locking Nangong Wentian and Jiang Chen. These two Qis' were from Li Long and Yan Hui and there were also two to three people of Eighth Grade Combat Emperor cultivators. They were the disciples of Freedom Palace and Skyhill School. They wanted to kill Jiang Chen and thirsted for Nangong Wentian's herbs and flesh. They knew that once the herbs in the garden were emptied, the two of them would strike without hesitation.

“These two bastards treats me like I'm their prey.”

Nangong Wentian gritted his teeth.

“If you walk out like this, anyone will look at you as their target. They will bring you back to skin you, draw your blood and concoct you into pills. Those pills will definitely be as valuable as a city.”

Jiang Chen smiled. Nangong Wentian was now a very valuable treasure. His body could attract anyone. From the top all the way to the bottom were all precious essences that had been absorbed into his flesh.

“Humph! They want to kill me with just their abilities? They're too unskilled, I'll show you what is skilful!”

Nangong Wentian said. Streams of lights appeared in between his hands. These lights were shaking continuously. That was the effect

of the herbs. Then, he shouted, “Level up!”

As soon as his voice faded, his Qi boosted up instantly and reached the Seventh Grade Combat Emperor.

“Your mother!”

Seeing what had just happened, Jiang Chen rolled his eyes. What happened to this world? When did an advancement become so easy? This bastard only had to shout ‘level up’ to advance his grade? Wasn’t this overly absurd?

Furthermore, the Seventh Grade Combat Emperor Nangong Wentian could already engage in battle with an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor. Although Li Long and Yan Hui were at the peak of Eighth Grade Combat Emperor, it wouldn’t make a lot of difference. It had become virtually impossible to kill him now.

Li Long and Yan Hui was startled by his sudden advancement, but from their expression they didn’t worry that much.

“Undoubtedly a precious body. The herbs have activated all his potential power, which made his advancement crazily fast. Nonetheless, he has only reached the Seventh Grade Combat Emperor, how can he possibly fight us?

Li Long’s face was carrying a cold smile, he was not concerned about Nangong Wentian’s advancement at all.

“That’s right, we’ll wait until the herb garden is swept empty and then strike, killing them all immediately before Guo Shao Fei and Mo Sang comes. None of them should be left alive. If that young master of the Dark Devil Religion opposed us along with them, he will be killed as well.”

Yan Hui’s eyes released a cold light. This was the eyes of a cold-blooded killer.

“Alright. We will definitely get the benefits. Then, we will divide them. As long as we get the medicinal container, we will advance miraculously. Within three years, we will get to the Minor Saint grade.”

Li Long had already started to imagine his future. Although the Combat Emperor was a highly ranked realm, it was no match for even higher grade masters. In the Divine Continent, only the Saints are considered the true conquerors. They were only considered successful when they reached the Minor Saint realm. A Minor Saint would be respected by everyone no matter where he went. No one would dare to look down on them. Even those inherited ancient colossal clans wouldn’t dare to ignore a Minor Saint’s existence.

“Little Chen, those two dudes have already planned how to eliminate us.”

Han Yan gave a relaxed smile. His current combat strength made him fearless of Li Long and Yan Hui.

“In that case, why don’t we just kill them straight away?”

Jiang Chen glanced at the herb garden and saw that most of the herbs had already been harvested. His Qi shook and flew upwards with a swoosh and landed before Li Long.

“Jiang Chen, you want to die so badly?”

Li Long was stunned because he thought that Jiang Chen should be running by now. Instead, Jiang Chen actually came forward to confront him? Was he hit in the head or something?

However, Li Long didn’t care about all of these, all he wanted to do was to get rid of Jiang Chen. Since the target had delivered himself to him, he would do what he had to do.

“I’m definitely not here to die, but to deliver you in your death.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

“What?”

Li Long’s eyes widened as if he had heard something unbelievable through his ears. If he wasn’t wrong, Jiang Chen said that he was here to kill him. A Second Grade Combat Emperor actually taunted him, saying that he would die. This was really funny.

“Brother Li, why are you talking so much to him? Since he has

come to seek death, just fulfil his death wish. This kid is the man your Freedom Palace has targeted to kill on sight and I won't argue with you about who should have the rights to kill him."

Yan Hui said plainly from a distance. To him, Jiang Chen was already a dead man.

Hong

Li Long's Qi shook, the Qi of the peak of Eighth Grade Combat Emperor bursted out and trembled the air, producing fluttering sounds. The wave of his Qi caused people feel coldly frightened.

"Quickly, look. They are going to fight. Jiang Chen actually challenged Li Long? Isn't this seeking death?"

"Jiang Chen and Freedom Palace's conflicts' settlement finally begins, but he is merely a Second Grade Combat Emperor, even if he has the strength to kill a Fifth Grade Combat Emperor, he won't be able to defeat an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor like Li Long. Moreover, he isn't some ordinary cultivator but a genius of Freedom Palace. Jiang Chen is certainly no match for him. He should've ran. His rash action is no different than seeking death."

"That isn't certain because Jiang Chen has trump cards."

.....

The herb garden was almost as empty as having nothing. Many



had already obtained great benefits from the garden. Except those who ate the golden lumps, the rest of the cultivators were very satisfied with their harvest. Now that Li Long wanted to kill Jiang Chen, they desperately looked up to the sky.

They saw that Li Long's Qi was rippling and rushing into the sky. Jiang Chen was the exact opposite, he had no Qi. Their differences were like a skiff in an ocean. However, Jiang Chen's face was full of smile, there wasn't panic at all.

“That dude seems very powerful, can Little Chen deal with him?”

Nangong Wentian was a little worried. Although he knew that Jiang Chen was a powerful dude, the fact that a Second Grade Combat Emperor fighting an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor was a little hard to swallow.

“Look attentively with your eyes! See how that dude turn into a roasted pork!”

Big Yellow was wagging his sturdy tail. He was very sure how powerful Jiang Chen was.

“Jiang Chen, die now!”

Li Long shouted and had already prepared to launch an attack.

Nonetheless, Jiang Chen didn't say a word. He calmly took out a broken pot and aim its mouth at Li Long. He slowly opened the cap

of the broken pot...

From the beginning until now, Jiang Chen was smiling brilliantly.

...

# Chapter 678 - The Killing Intent had been Ignited

---

In such a moment of life-and-death emergency, what Jiang Chen did was not to show his maximum Qi or any powerful combat techniques. Instead, he brought out a broken pot. Everyone was dumbfounded.

Li Long who was showing his domineering aura was stunned for a while as he also had no clue about what this guy was thinking.

‘Is he thinking of fighting me using this broken pot? Is he insulting me? It had to be it. A tiny Second Grade Combat Emperor, an insect, actually dared to look down on him? This was unacceptable.’

He swore silently that he wouldn’t let Jiang Chen die comfortably, he had to let him know the repercussions of insulting him in public. He would catch him and torture him immensely until he died.

Aside from the surprised people, there was another group of people who had witnessed the terrifying power of the broken pot. They were the people who were trapped by the magma river before this. Some might feel stunned, some might laugh at him thinking that this might be a joke, but for them, it was frightening. They wiped off a trickle of cold sweat for Li Long, no one could tell how powerful the magma was unless they had seen it personally.

Tyrant and Big Yellow’s eyes narrowed into a slit. They were

looking forward to the miserable condition that would happen to Li Long.

Hong

A sound rumbled. Li Long waved his hand and casted a giant palm seal, shattering the nearby spatial zone and lunged at Jiang Chen, trying to envelop him completely.

Hong Long

At this instant, a stronger rumbling sound was heard, it came from the broken pot. The supposedly silent broken pot had turned into a red boiling kettle after Jiang Chen's continuous instillation of Yuan Force. When Li Long's giant palm seal reached Jiang Chen, a red magma pillar shot out of the broken pot. It carried howls and roars and turned into a magma dragon.

The emergence of the magma dragon raised the temperature of the sky instantly, even the air was burnt. The wild magma dragon was moving very fast. The giant palm seal of Li Long was destroyed completely by the terrifying attack and the heat of the magma.

The magma dragon didn't stop moving after getting rid of the giant palm seal, it reached Li Long in a blink of an eye.

“What?!”

Li Long shouted out of surprise. His face was full of fear because

he could already feel the intense danger and the Qi of death coming from the magma dragon. This kind of Qi even trembled his soul. He had no doubt that if he received the attack from the magma dragon directly, he would definitely die and there wouldn't be any miracle or luck that could provide another outcome.

Hong Long

Without waiting for Li Long to flee, the magma dragon exploded all of a sudden. The explosive force was so great that it caused Li Long to spurt blood. The magma dragon turned into a sea of magma, totally engulfing Li Long. He was now immersed into the magma sea.

Argh

A wail of misery was heard from the sea of magma. That particular spatial zone was burnt into a black hole. Li Long's shriek raised goose bumps to everyone. After a few breaths, his Qi wasn't detected anymore.

At this moment, everyone held their breaths. They couldn't believe what they had just seen. Those disciples of Freedom Palace left their mouths wide-open, with eyes full of fear and fright. Under the eyes of everyone, the magma in the sky dissipated gradually along with Li Long.

Without a doubt, Li Long disappeared. He was attacked by the magma and was turned into tiny bits and completely vanished. The crowd was severely affected by the loss.

A wave of silence rushed through the crowd, a lot of them were still trapped in the image of Li Long's death. A powerful Eighth Grade Combat Emperor was killed just like that. Not even his remains were left, he vanished thoroughly and completely.

The people's eyes were now fixed on the broken pot in Jiang Chen's hands, their mockery and underestimation for this pot faded. What kind of treasure could that broken pot be? How could it be so powerful that it could instantly kill an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor?

They finally understood why Jiang Chen was so confident at the beginning, that he actually ran to Li Ling willingly. It was because he had such a powerful trump card in his hand and that made him unafraid of Li Long.

"This is shocking. Too frightening, that the broken pot is so powerful that it can kill an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor in split seconds. It is overly powerful."

"I have no idea where Jiang Chen got such a heaven defying treasure. It is too shameful for Li Long to die under Jiang Chen's hands."

"The Freedom Palace have suffered another great loss. Li Long was their leader in this expedition to the Death Mountain. Now that their leader is killed, it meant that Freedom Palace has lost its eligibility as one of the five major powers."

“Watch out, the battle isn’t over yet. Yan Hui is still alive. The Skyhill School and Freedom Palace still have a few Eighth Grade Combat Emperors in place. I have no idea how many times Jiang Chen’s broken pot can work.”

.....

Everyone was in a state of shock. Jiang Chen’s broken pot was so shocking that it caused the skin of their heads to feel numb.

The people who were worried for Jiang Chen such as Nangong Wentian, Zuo Ling Er and some of his friends felt very shocked at the battle. The disciples of Nebula Sect were cheering for Jiang Chen. They initially felt furious seeing how Li Long and Yan Hui bullied Jiang Chen as none of their Eighth Grade Combat Emperors were here. Now that Jiang Chen had shown his great strength and killed Li Long, it had really helped them relieve their suppressed feelings, making them feel so much better.

The person who felt the most shock was Yan Hui. He was the closest to the center of the battle and was the one who saw the whole battle clearly. He also felt the terrifying Qi that exploded from the magma, it was a dangerous Qi: a Qi of death.

Li Long’s death brought Yan Hui’s enthusiasm and confidence to rock bottom. He was looking frighteningly at Jiang Chen’s broken pot. If the broken pot was aimed at him, the consequences were unimaginable. He was afraid that he would suffer the same fate as Li Long.

“Unaware of one’s own limitations.”

Jiang Chen said in a plain tone and kept the broken pot instantly. In truth, that powerful attack was beyond his expectation. He expected it to defeat Li Long in one attack but he didn’t expect it to incinerate his entire body until nothing was left. It seemed that no one below the Minor Saint could withstand this attack. Jiang Chen guessed that even a Ninth Grade Combat Emperor would face the same result.

This was also the reason why Jiang Chen chose to keep the broken pot and not use it to deal with Yan Hui. It could only be used three times. Since it was used once already, it means that it could only be used two more times. Jiang Chen valued this very much and he would only use it during critical times. Li Long had already been eliminated. There was only Yan Hui, thus he wouldn't the broken pot anymore except if the other Eight Grade cultivators joined the fight.

“Do you still want to get rid of me?”

Jiang Chen turned and looked at Yan Hui.

“Humph! Jiang Chen, I’m sure your treasure over there can only be used once, right? You have killed Li Long with it and how are you supposed to fight me?”

Yan Hui revealed a cold smile. He was certain that Jiang Chen’s broken pot could only be used one time, otherwise, Jiang Chen would have aimed the broken pot at him given his character of not



leaving any troubles behind. Him keeping the broken pot was out of his expectation.

“Then you should try to do it.”

Jiang Chen said plainly. He was now thinking about the Heavenly Earth Pure Soil under the herb garden, he wasn't that eager to battle with Yan Hui. It would be better if Yan Hui feared his broken pot and backed away.

It wasn't because Jiang Chen didn't want to kill Yan Hui. As one of Jiang Chen's enemies, he would not get any mercy from him. Nonetheless, Yan Hui had a very strong combat strength and he still had three Eighth Grade Combat Emperors with him, so there were four Eighth Grade cultivators in total. Their combined strength was formidable. Without the help of his broken pot, with only Han Yan and Nangong Wentian's power, they would be no match for them. At that time, Yan Hui wouldn't be killed. In that case, he might as well use another way to avoid the battle and talk through it later after getting the Heavenly Earth Pure Soil.

Of course, if Yan Hui was very determined to fight a battle, it would be another case.

“Brother Yan, this guy is only blustering. Like you said, that treasure can only be used once. Therefore, killing him now is more than easy.”

An Eighth Grade Combat Emperor of the Skyhill School said.

“We can combine our strengths and avenge brother Li.”

The other two Eighth Grade Combat Emperors were disciples of Freedom Palace, they gritted their teeth and said. Jiang Chen’s performance was too frightening. Even Li Long was killed by him. If this guy wasn’t gotten rid of, it would become an uncontrollable malady in the future.

Yan Hui’s eyes were glaring like a torch. After making judgments about his opponents in his heart, a murderous aura started to spill out of his body. He wanted to kill Jiang Chen. It wasn’t because they had become enemies or Jiang Chen was growing too fast. It was mostly because they couldn’t miss Nangong Wentian, a great medicinal treasure body.

“Jiang Chen, today is the day of your death. You and these people will have to die, none of you will be allowed to live.”

Yan Hui’s murderous aura became visible. He was sure that Jiang Chen didn’t have any more backups. Thus, he had to take this opportunity to kill him. Furthermore, if he backed away without a proper reason, it would be shameful.

The other three Eighth Grade Combat Emperors were also bursting with murderous aura, locking onto Jiang Chen’s Qi. It seemed that Jiang Chen could not escape this time.

Jiang Chen shook his head after seeing this. Since these people wanted to die so badly, he didn’t need to show them any mercy.

At the moment Jiang Chen was readying to take out his broken pot, a silhouette suddenly shot out from far away. That person was covered with a dense devil aura and had a very strong Qi. He was the genius of the Dark Devil Religion, Mo Sang.

His arrival immediately stopped Jiang Chen from using the broken pot, and instead, it made him feel the need to kill Yan Hui personally.

Jiang Chen quickly conversed with Han Yan with Divine Sense. “Ah Yan, let this man block Yan Hui and we will then combine our strength to fight them all. We’ll not allow even one to leave.”

Jiang Chen’s killing intent was ignited. Since Yan Hui didn’t know how to treasure a good chance, they shouldn’t leave now, but instead stay here forever. Whoever opposed Jiang Chen wouldn’t have a favourable ending.

...

# Chapter 679 - Brothers of One Mind Could Cut Through Gold

---

“Alright.”

Han Yan responded right away. His face was filled with excitement. He was also the person who knew what Jiang Chen was planning to do. Now that Mo Sang had come, it created a chance for them to prevent anyone from leaving. Moreover, they hadn't fought side by side in a battle for a long time.

Han Yan made a sway of his body and flew up to the sky as he approached Mo Sang. He said to him, “Mo Song, these people want to kill me. You will handle Yan Hui and leave the rest to us.”

Although Mo Sang had no idea what had happened before he came since receiving his master's order, the tension on the scene was very obvious, especially the opposing aura between Jiang Chen and Yan Hui. He had never forgotten that Jiang Chen and Han Yan were good brothers.

“Yes, young master.”

Mo Sang held his fists towards Han Yan. He didn't care whether it was a conflict or unsettled dispute. What he knew was that he had to listen to Han Yan's words. If his young master was hurt in any way, he wouldn't be able to face his master when he returned.

The murderous-aura that was bursting from Yan Hui dissipated

as he had kept all of his Qi after seeing Mo Sang's arrival and said to Jiang Chen, "Jiang Chen, I will never forget today's incident and we shall meet again as long as time stands."

Yan Hui knew how to act according to the situation. They wanted to kill Jiang Chen and his friends with their combined strengths, but with Mo Sang's existence, killing them became impossible. Mo Sang was a genius like him and there wouldn't be a definite winner in a battle with him. In other words, if he could only handle Mo Sang, how could he find the effort to kill Jiang Chen?

"There won't be a next time, we'll settle this today!"

Jiang Chen shouted. It was too late for Yan Hui to leave now.

Mo Sang had received Han Yan's order. With a sway of his body, he appeared before Yan Hui, locking all of his escape routes. His face was carrying a bloodthirsty expression.

"Yan Hui, since you intend to kill our young master, you shouldn't leave."

"Mo Sang, do you think you can stop me if I want to leave?"

Yan Hui was angered.

"Then we'll fight!"

Mo Sang's devil aura was blazing as if he was a fighting maniac. He waved his hand and sent a devil wolf that raced to Yan Hui. There wasn't much talking while battling. This was the attitude of the devil religion. They had never written any letter of battle before battling.

“Ah Yan, and Ah Nan, the two of you handle the other three men.”

Jiang Chen yelled at Han Yan and Nangong Wentian.

“AL....RIGHT!”

“Hehe, I have been so bored in this herb garden that it felt as if I'm dead. Today, I'll express my stifled feelings through these three dudes.”

Han Yan and Nangong Wentian's Qi were booming. They flew together, lunging towards the other three Eighth Grade Combat Emperors. The two that were flying towards them were merely Seventh Grade Combat Emperors, especially Nangong Wentian who just recently reached the Seventh Grade. Without really being concerned, the three people met their charge.

Hong Long

A big battle started instantly. The spatial zone was filled with rumbling noises from the impacts. Mo Sang and Yan Hui were occupying one side and was busy launching attacks and deflecting

them at the same time. Han Yan and Nangong Wentian were engaging in a battle with three enemies. Although there were only two of them, they didn't feel scared or demotivated. The cultivators below were muttering that the battle had begun so quickly, without even a sign or warning. Li Long had already died, so it was hard to conclude who would end up dying.

“Big brother, what do we do now?”

Zuo Ling Er asked.

“You just stand here and watch the battle.”

Jiang Chen patted Zuo Ling Er's forehead. With his strength, he couldn't even join them in the fight. If he rushed up - not only he could not help - he would become a nuisance instead since he was merely a Second Grade Combat Emperor. Without the help of the broken pot, he would be able to defeat a Sixth Grade Combat Emperor at best. If he met a Seventh Grade Combat Emperor, he would be no match for him. His combat strength now didn't match his ambition.

Of course, Jiang Chen still had other ways to deal with this even if he didn't join them. He looked at Big Yellow.

“Big Yellow, you and me shall set up a huge formation together to lock this entire battle field. He won't allow any one of them to leave. If we want to kill our enemies, we cannot let even one of them escape.”

This had always been Jiang Chen's style of action. He wouldn't do if he chose not to, but if he did, he would go all out and would show no mercy to anyone. In the Death Mountain, the highest combat strength was the Eighth Grade Combat Emperors. If he allowed these people to escape, he would have great troubles in the future, plus what he hated the most were unsettled problems. Since he had decided to kill them, he would leave them no chances of survival.

“Okie!”

Big Yellow responded as he flew up to the sky from below. Both he and Jiang Chen were moving quickly. They turned into two rays of light and moved around the battlefield repeatedly. They couldn't join the battle, so they could only circle the battle field. If someone's eyes were sharp enough, he might be able to see that the two of them were travelling at the same rhythm while their palms were moving, as if they were casting out some kind of mysterious talisman symbols.

The status on the battlefield was becoming more intense, none of them had noticed Jiang Chen and Big Yellow because they were busy enough with their own affairs.

Being entangled by Mo Sang, Yan Hui's limbs were moving non-stop. The two of them were forced to fight at a high level of fervor and couldn't get a moment to gasp for air. No one knew who had the upper-hand at this moment.

On the other side, despite Han Yan and Nangong Wentian not meeting each other for a long time, their tacit cooperation were



near perfect. The other three Eighth Grade Combat Emperors were no match for them even though they had jointly faced the two. They kept retreating from their aggressive attacks.

“All of you should look at this, the young master of the Dark Devil Religion and the medicine container are really scary. They are merely Seventh Grade Combat Emperors, but their attacks forced their opponents to back away. Aren’t they overpowered? Each of Jiang Chen’s friends is more abnormal than the other.”

“The circumstance was not uncommon. The young master’s body possesses the Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline and he has already cultivated in the Devil Blood Pool, which means that he cannot be compared to an ordinary genius. In spite of his Seventh Grade Combat Emperor rank, he can handle even Eighth Grade Combat Emperors. As for the medicine container, he had eaten so much herbs that his body has already become a magical container, it can’t denied that he is an abnormal being.”

“It seems like the three disciples of the Skyhill School and Freedom Palace were losing their ground, but since they have the speed of an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor, they won’t have problems in fleeing.”

.....

Many were astonished by the development of the battle. As the garden were already snatched empty, everyone’s attention fell on the battles above them. This was undeniably a splendid action movie. The battles of the major five powers were always the most thrilling.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow stopped flying. They had used up a few minutes to completely seal the battlefield. It would be impossible for any one of them to leave or flee.

If it was an ordinary man who set up the formation, it is very difficult to prevent an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor from fleeing. However, it was Jiang Chen and Big Yellow who set them up. Jiang Chen alone was enough for such a formation, he was the reincarnation of the Greatest Saint, and thus he had boundless techniques and was proficient with a lot of formations and had profound ways of setting them up.

Big Yellow was another scary individual. This dude was proficient with the Holy Book of Formation, which allowed him to know any formation and seal in the world at the back of his head. The combination of these two beings were like stringing jade and pearls together as they complement one another. No one would be allowed to fly out of this formation silently.

Bang

The big ruler in Nangong Wentian's hand hit an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor along with a deep wail, throwing him away. That man's facial expression changed drastically when he was staring at the dynamic Nangong Wentian as if he had seen a ghost. He couldn't imagine that a newly advanced Seventh Grade Combat Emperor could have such a strong combat strength.

Nangong Wentian's potential power was too strong, and it was

enough to say that his current power wasn't any weaker than the one who possessed the Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline, Han Yan. Every one of his cells had absorbed the essence of the herbs, making him more abnormal than Han Yan.

“Haha...grandchild, it is your honor to die under grandfather's Million Stars Ruler.”

Nangong Wentian's dark hair fluttered in the wind and laughed, holding his Million Stars Ruler to strike his target.

On the other side, Han Yan became more violent. He was fighting two enemies alone. He struck using the Ninefold Devil Waves, the force from his bloodline was completely unleashed. His white hair danced in the breeze like a peerless, ferocious devil that had descended. Under the enormous impact of the devil wave, the two Eighth Grade Combat Emperors trembled and was thrown flying away. They had lost their direction in the devil wave, and the silhouette of Han Yan vanished.

Keng

The moment Han Yan casted the Ninefold Devil Wave, with a 'keng' sound, a scary devil blade appeared in his hand. His speed was at the maximum. He reached one of the target in the blink of an eye, then the sharp and ruthless blade moved to chop the man's head.

The man was extremely panicked, but Han Yan was just too fast. Han Yan's powerful Devil Emperor Qi suffocated the man. The

rapid slash went through the man's neck and a human head flew up as a red light pillar rippled in mid-air.

“Dammit!”

Nangong Wentian cursed after seeing that. He was supposed to be the first to cut off his enemy, but Han Yan had stolen his place.

“The young master of the Dark Devil Religion is very terrifying, he killed an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor with his Seventh Grade Combat Emperor's power. He's truly extraordinary.”

“So, this is why Wu Yi Mo had chosen him. With his means of killing, even if he faced Yan Hui, he would still gain the upper hand. Even if Mo Sang didn't come, Yan Hui would still have a hard time eliminating Jiang Chen.”

“One Eighth Grade Combat Emperor is down. This battle won't last long. If those two choose to escape now, they may still have the chance to live.”

.....

Everyone was shocked, completely stunned by these two unexpectedly violent man, Han Yan and Nangong Wentian. The battle status was crystal clear, the remaining two Eighth Grade Combat Emperors had to flee to protect their lives. Even if a powerful Eighth Grade Combat Emperor couldn't fight his enemies, he would have no problems in fleeing away.

In truth, those two and the onlookers were having the same thoughts, it was to flee now as they didn't have a chance in the battle anymore. Their enemies were too strong. Their enemy's power was beyond their expectations, only through escaping can they stay alive.

Before the disciple was hit by Nangong Wentian's big ruler, he twisted and fled then disappeared in a twinkle. However, when he entered the spatial zone, he found that the entire place was locked down. There was no route for escape.

...

# Chapter 680 - Joint Killing

---

“Not good!”

That person shouted in his heart. There was a big formation hidden in the spatial zone which forced him out of it, thus he reappeared in the battlefield. He turned and saw Nangong Wentian holding his big azure blue ruler and was charging at him like a peerless mad man.

Pu Chi

However, the thing that took his life wasn't Nangong Wentian, it was a long sword. He could feel the vibration in his body and was compelled to lower his head to look at it. He saw a long sword that was stained with his fresh blood that pierced through his body. He was terrified, he could feel his vital force disappearing gradually. It was an unprecedented terror that he had yet to experience, it was the feeling of someone nearing his death.

Anyhow, he was an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor but he didn't even notice someone behind him until the last moment of his death. He didn't even clearly see who was the killer that made a sneak attack on his back.

The Heavenly Saint Sword trembled, bursting all the internal organs inside his body. Blood and pieces of organs splashed in all directions, the disciple died instantly. The man behind him was Jiang Chen. He and Big Yellow controlled the entire formation and could emerge anywhere at anytime. Those who chose to escape,

chose to die as well.

Nangong Wentian was so angry he felt his nose was turning crooked after seeing his target killed by Jiang Chen.

“Little Chen, that man was mine! If you hadn’t attacked, I would have slapped him to death!”

Nangong Wentian felt a little depressed and cursed Jiang Chen for robbing his prey.

“I truly believe that you could slap this man to death, but isn’t it true that I’ve also helped you save your energy?”

Jiang Chen chuckled at Nangong Wentian.

Another Eighth Grade Combat Emperor was dead, he was killed by Jiang Chen’s sword. There was only one left, except for Yan Hui, on the battlefield and he had suffered serious injuries because of Han Yan’s wild and explosive attacks. Seeing his two comrades die, he was dispirited and didn’t dare to stay any longer, he did the same thing as one of his comrades did; he fled.

But!

Bang

There wasn’t anything different that happened on this man’s

fate. His entire body drilled into the spatial zone and was forced out by the big formation. Before he could react, he felt a heavy thing crash into his back, so hard that it felt like a mountain was crushing him. He was caught off guard and his heart was instantly crushed.

Wah

He spurted blood. Before he had the chance to see who was behind him, his body was thrown away back into the battlefield. He had totally lost his ability to fight, marking his end. He saw a big ruler in front of him, it slapped his head to the ground and he lost consciousness.

Nangong Wentian managed to kill one, improving his mood. The one who attacked that man from behind was a sturdy big yellow dog that was baring its teeth. That attack was undoubtedly from his head, invincibly hard.

“His mother! This is quite thrilling!”

Nangong Wentian was very excited. He had never fought alongside his brothers for a very long time. Now, they were reunited and had fought in battle, their tacit cooperation was still as sharp.

As the saying goes, ‘Brothers of one mind could easily break through gold.’ They could overrun the place when they were in the Eastern Continent. Now they could do the same here in the Divine Continent.



The sudden death of the three Eighth Grade Combat Emperors stirred up the crowd's emotions. The battle was too intense. The faces of those disciples from the Freedom Palace were gloomy, worrying that Jiang Chen would turn and get rid of them.

The Freedom Palace had suffered great losses today, they had lost three Eighth Grade Combat Emperors. Moreover, one of them was their leader for this expedition, Li Long. They were afraid that most of the Eighth Grade Combat Emperor core disciples who entered the Death Mountain had died, even if there were some left, they would only be the elders.

“Ruthless... Those three men were dreary. Those dignified Eighth Grade Combat Emperors didn't even have the chance to escape.”

“Have you all realized? Jiang Chen and them were a good team back then, their strategies to defeat their opponents were perfect. Jiang Chen and that dog are well-versed in formations and have set up a big formation, sealing the entire spatial zone which prevented their opponents from escaping. Eventually, ending their opponents' lives one by one.”

“This is a fearsome team. They are all the cream of the crop. I believe that it won't take long for them to conquer a part of the Mysterious Domain.”

.....

Everyone's shocked feeling was stirred up. From today onwards, many of them had to remember this team. This was a crazy and ruthless team, the Mysterious Domain wouldn't be peaceful with their presence.

On the other side, Mo Sang and Yan Hui were still battling. When Yan Hui noticed the situation on the other side, his facial expression changed. The dramatic change had obviously affected Yan Hui that it caused him to confusedly deflect Mo Sang's attack.

“Let's go together and get rid of him.”

Jiang Chen pointed at Yan Hui and said coldly.

As soon as his voice faded, Han Yan and Nangong Wentian rushed into the battlefield. They joined Mo Sang and surrounded Yan Hui. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow stood on two sides of the battlefield. The battlefield was completely locked down by them, not even giving Yan Hui a chance to escape.

“Million Stars Ruler!”

“Blood Devil Blade!”

Nangong Wentian and Han Yan attacked at the same time since dealing with Yan Hui wasn't the same as it was with the others, they had to give all of their strengths and focus on it. The powerful Mo Sang summoned a sharp combat spear in his hand, its surface was lingering with a thick devil aura.

Three combat weapons were coming from three different directions, intending to shred Yan Hui into pieces.

Argh

Yan Hui wailed. He now regretted his intention to kill Jiang Chen. Back when Li Long was killed, he didn't take the chance to leave until Mo Sang appeared, which signified his death.

It was truly beyond his expectation that Han Yan and Nangong Wentian were so powerful, especially Han Yan. Three Eighth Grade Combat Emperors died under their hands. Han Yan was at the peak of the Seventh Grade Combat Emperor, adding his Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline, his combat strength was strong enough to suppress Yan Hui. Today's incident had totally confused Yan Hui's thoughts. Adding to the fact that his opponents suddenly increased to three, how would he be able to defend himself?

However, he still had to defend it regardless of any situation. The long sword rippled as it was summoned in his hand, the entire battlefield was filled with the aura of a sharp sword.

Hong Long

All the attacks collided together. They had to admit that Yan Hui was very strong, but his opponents were stronger and the impact exploded in the battlefield, destroying a lot of spatial zones. Yan Hui was hit, spurting blood. His Qi was in a mess.

“Kill him!”

Jiang Chen shouted ruthlessly. His vital spirit made him look like an undefeatable general. He could control the entire situation even if he didn't participate in the battle.

Han Yan and his other two friends launched another joint attack. The cold light was dazzling. The attacks were all highly destructive, it was even enough to destroy a part of the place. The terrifying destructive attack drowned Yan Hui. Mo Sang found it intoxicating to kill a Skyhill School genius, and a figure on the Sky Ranking at that.

When the wave of attacks ended, Yan Hui had become a bloody man. Although he could still stand there, he had completely lost his combat strength. His long sword was already dropped, even his body was shaking. At this moment, he was incapable of escaping even if the spatial zone wasn't sealed by the big formation.

“Finish, Yan Hui is finished. This group of people are too brutal.”

“Ruthless! This Jiang Chen has offended the Freedom Palace and the Skyhill School, but because he still has the support of the Nebula Sect and the Dark Devil Religion, he don't need to worry about it.”

“It's too bad that Yan Hui, one of the great geniuses, died in the Death Mountain. However, he can't blame anyone for this because he was the one who initiated the fight.”

.....

Many were muttering about the incident. There were many disciples of the Skyhill School that were present. Their faces were full of fiery anger when they saw that Yan Hui was going to be killed. However, their anger couldn't do much to help. None of them dared to stand out because they knew very clearly that it wouldn't make any difference even if they stood out. How could they fight Jiang Chen's group if even Yan Hui was defeated?

Until now, many people started to understand the fact, and they had to constantly remind themselves about this: this Jiang Chen was a being which they couldn't afford to offend. Whoever offended him wouldn't have a pleasant ending. Although he was only a Second Grade Combat Emperor, he was constantly creating miracles. Even an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor was killed by him.

Yan Hui was dying, Jiang Chen walked slowly to him and said emotionlessly. "Yan Hui, I haven't had any conflicts with the Skyhill School and have saved some of your disciples. I really don't know why you choose to oppose me along with Li Long, but since you have made your decision, you have to pay for your actions."

"Jiang Chen you will die unpleasantly. The Skyhill School and Freedom Palace won't forgive you."

Yan Hui knew that he would die and didn't try to beg for his life, and did the opposite: threatening Jiang Chen. However, his heart

felt some regrets despite saying those threats, it was the same as what Jiang Chen had said. He wasn't in any conflict with him. If he didn't pair up with Li Long, the result wouldn't be like this. Even if he couldn't befriend Jiang Chen, he didn't have to be his enemy.

However, it was too late. Sometimes when one chooses to do something, one has to bear the consequences created from that action even if the gravity of the situation was beyond his expectations.

“You think that this kind of threat will work against me? I dared to offend Freedom Palace, did that imply that I will be afraid of you? Die now and be a sensible man in your next life.”

Jiang Chen waved his arm and the Heavenly Saint Sword slashed off Yan Hui's head. He didn't like being kind to his enemies and definitely didn't want to leave any chances of survival for them.

The battlefield was in ruins. The initially holy spatial zone was filled with the stench of blood. The Freedom Palace and Skyhill School had suffered great losses, even the leaders of the two major powers were dead. For the following days in the expedition, the disciples of the Freedom Palace and Skyhill School had to be very cautious with their actions if they see Jiang Chen around. Should they offend this cold-blooded tyrant, Jiang Chen would simply draw his sword and slash them and that would be a death in vain. Even if they wanted to seek revenge on him, they had to wait until they were out of the Death Mountain.

...

# Chapter 681 - Deep down Under the Ground

---

Li Long was dead, so was Yan Hui. Five Eighth Grade Combat Emperors had fallen. The disciples of the Freedom Palace and Skyhill School were on the verge of mental breakdown, but none dared to voice a complaint against their enemies and just left silently. The other cultivators did the same, all of them were shaking their heads while sighing. They were now leaving the place as all the herbs had been taken away. It would be meaningless for them to stay any longer, they should continue to search the other areas for potential treasure.

However, today's battle had confirmed Jiang Chen's standing amongst the young generation in the Mysterious Domain. A single battle of this calibre could create a reputation among thousands of people, now there is no one that didn't know about this incident. He was a peerless wild man which no one could afford to offend. Opposing him wouldn't bring any favourable consequences. It was imaginable that if Jiang Chen wasn't gotten rid of by the two major powers, the Skyhill School and Freedom Palace, he would become one of their greatest foe in the future.

The people of Nebula Sect and the Dark Devil Religion hadn't left the place yet unlike the other two major powers. Their faces were full of delight. It was so exciting! The battle just now made their hearts pump faster. All the disciples of Nebula Sect who were present were of a higher grade than Jiang Chen. Comparing themselves with Jiang Chen while they were still at the Second Grade of Combat Emperor, they were nothing but a piece of garbage.

Jiang Chen kept his Qi and landed from the sky, and said to his

fellow disciples, “You all continue to search for treasures. If anyone tries to offend you, don’t be merciful to them. No matter who it is, just kill them.”

“Yes, brother Jiang.”

The core disciples jointly replied. Despite Jiang Chen being an inner disciple, they still called him ‘brother Jiang’ even though they were above Jiang Chen in rank. This world required true power to decide one’s rank. By having such a powerful brother, they naturally feel more secure and proud.

“Grandmother! If we see anyone who tries to create trouble next time, brother Jiang said we just have to kill them!”

The disciples of Nebula Sect continued to travel to the other unvisited places. Han Yan had given a two-sentence speech to his fellow disciples and they all left. Only the friends of Jiang Chen were left with him. Jiang Chen came towards Mo Sang and held his fists.

“Thank you for lending me a helping hand today.”

“Brother Jiang is too polite. Brother Jiang is young master’s friend and is naturally considered my friend. It is my utmost pleasure to be able to make friends with a genius like brother Jiang.”

Mo Sang said with a smile. People of the devil religion didn’t like



to beat around the bush. Most of them were forthright and decisive in their actions. Jiang Chen particularly liked this kind of people except those who were very deeply enchanted by the devilish aura. These ferocious and ruthless people gave Jiang Chen a favourable feeling to make friends with them.

“Ah Nan, bring out the herbs so we can divide it amongst ourselves.”

“Alright, these are all yours. I don’t want them.”

Nangong Wentian unrestrainedly retrieved them from his Qi Sea. Their eyes glittered when they saw these ancient herbs. The only one who didn’t have any interest was himself as his entire body, from top to bottom, was fully instilled with medicinal effects. It seems that this dude wouldn’t be interested with herbs, pills or medicine anymore for the rest of his life. Also, even if he continued to consume these herbs, it wouldn’t have any more effects on his body.

“Mother! These were some rare treasures. This is luxurious!”

Mo Sang couldn’t help but say.

“Brother Mo, simply take anything that catches your eye.”

Jiang Chen smiled. His impression of Mo Sang was quite good. If it wasn’t for his help today, Jiang Chen would need to use his broken pot to kill Yan Hui, which would be a waste and that would

mean revealing all his trump cards to the public. Now they had assumed that his broken pot could only be used once, if anyone tried to look for him for trouble, that person would definitely underestimate him.

“Erm...Is it ok?”

Mo Sang was stunned because he never thought Jiang Chen to be so forthright. If such rare treasures were placed outside, it would cost more than a city, or even be priceless. Now, Jiang Chen wanted him to simply choose. Wasn't this overly exciting for him?

“Mo Sang, if you don't want to, then we can divide them now.”

Han Yan smiled while his hand grabbed onto a blood red lotus.

“I want it! I don't want to waste this opportunity.”

Mo Sang didn't attempt to be polite anymore. This was a great opportunity. If he continued feigning courtesy, it was a big slap to his face as he would be getting nothing in the end.

Very quickly, herbs which were piled up like a small hill were divided and taken by a few of them. Big Yellow had taken most of the herbs. Currently, he didn't dare consume those herbs as he was afraid that he couldn't digest them all. He should wait until the herbs that he had consumed before were fully absorbed before eating the new herbs. When that time comes, he would be able to improve his grade.

“Little Chen and Ah Yan you all haven’t told me what the hell is this place called. Furthermore, you guys look very domineering, especially Ah Yan. You actually became the young master of a religion. Quickly, tell me what had happened.”

Nangong Wentian couldn’t stand it any longer. Even at the start, he wanted to ask them a tremendous amount of questions that he wanted answers for. Until now, he knew nothing about the Divine Continent. After he came out from the cracks of the spatial zone, he was in this herb garden until today, where they finally reunited. He even had no idea what the herb garden was.

Hahaha...

Jiang Chen, Han Yan, and Big Yellow couldn’t stop laughing at his friend’s unlucky encounters. They felt absolutely speechless. Nonetheless, they had to say that Nangong Wentian had obtained the luckiest thing in his life or else he wouldn’t have been able to reach such a terrifying level.

Jiang Chen was cultivating in the Dragon Transformation Art, Han Yan possessed the Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline and Big Yellow possessed the Dragon-Horse Bloodline, Yan Chen Yu possessed the Nine Yin Meridians and Wu Ningzhu inherited her mother’s bloodline. All of these individuals were extraordinary, leaving Nangong Wentian as the most ordinary individual out of them all, but he had reached the Seventh Grade Combat Emperor. It was all because of this herb garden. Currently, his body was like a container of medicines like what they had called him earlier. He was full of medicinal aura, which was on par with the gifted

bloodlines the others possessed.

Later on, Jiang Chen and Han Yan told their poor friend all their encounters in the Divine Continent, including the matter of the Nebula Sect and the Dark Devil Religion. He felt extremely envious of them and wanted to knock his head onto the ground when he thought about how he wasn't in any of the big and earth-shaking incidents. He somehow felt that his life all this while had been in vain.

“Ah Nan, you are actually quite fortunate. The place that you are in right now is called the Death Mountain. A forbidden area in the Mysterious Domain, and one of the eight forbidden areas in the Divine Continent. It only opens once every thirty years. Today is the time for the opening of the Death Mountain and that's why we are allowed to enter. Luckily for you, the time that you came here was somewhat close to the date of the opening or else no one would know how long you still have to stay here.”

Han Yan said.

Nangong Wentian's face exuded a cold sweat instantly. If he were to stay in this herb garden for thirty years, the chances of him becoming mad wasn't impossible anymore.

“You two are very awesome together. One is the young master and the other one has risen in Nebula Sect. When I get out, I too want to achieve something big.”

Nangong Wentian said solemnly.

“Okay, the herbs here have been completely cleared out, but the Death Mountain is a huge place that consists of numerous spatial zone. This is a very good chance that we don’t usually have, so we should value this chance. If we really find something good under this mountain, we may have unimaginable changes in our bodies once we get out of the mountain. I hope that each one of us will undergo extraordinary changes, so we’ll disperse from here and look for potential treasures on our own.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Chance is always the representation of one’s luck. If we continue to stick together, the team can only follow one person’s luck, limiting our chances. If we disperse and look for the treasures separately, we can depend on our own luck to meet different kinds of unexpected things. You all have your own luck and if you follow beside me, your luck may be affected by mine. We can’t really go far even if we separate anyway.”

Everyone nodded in agreement on Jiang Chen’s suggestion. Everyone on the scene was a genius that was capable of protecting themselves. Geniuses like Tyrant and Zuo Ling Er originally had good luck with them. So, if they went and searched by themselves they might be able to find some really good treasures. It would be different if they were to follow Jiang Chen, his luck was too overwhelming and would completely override the other person’s luck.

“Little Chen is right. This place only opened once every thirty years. There are lots of chances to get treasures. We should

individually search for those.”

Han Yan agreed.

After that, they quickly flew away from the garden to different places. Only Jiang Chen and Big Yellow remained in the herb garden.

There was neither day nor night here, so they didn't know what time it was now. However, judging from the time they entered the Death Mountain till now, it should have been a day. There were still people coming into this spatial zone but left after seeing no treasure.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow approached the center of the herb garden. The two of them exchanged glances and smiled.

“Can you sense where the holy soil is?”

Jiang Chen asked. Big Yellow's innate talent to sense treasure was even greater than the Greatest Saint.

“Don't worry, follow me.”

Big Yellow said. With a swoosh, he disappeared and entered underground. Jiang Chen followed closely. They were well-versed with Underground Shift, so they could just travel underground with ease.

A man and a dog continued to move downwards and reached thirty meters deep. In this area, the soil around them became very hard and was as solid as gold, full of Soul Qi.

“Below must be the holy soil. The soil here is very fine, almost turning into its essence and is full of fine Yuan Force.”

Both of Jiang Chen’s eyes released rays of light. The lower they went, the finer the soil became. He knew that without a doubt the holy soil had to be down here. As long as he absorbed all of these essences, it would immediately create a great impact to his Earth Dragon Art.

“We have to continue to drill deeper, the holy soil is at the lowest point.

Hehehe”

Big Yellow chuckled. He had always been excited and interested about finding treasures.

....

# Chapter 682 - Refining the Pure Soil

---

The lower they go, the harder the soil become. Their movement became limited. The soil was this hard because they were exposed to the effects of the pure soil for many years, they had all become extraordinary soil. They were almost as hard as steel and released a thick Soul Qi, and if not for that the herbs in the garden wouldn't grow so vigorously. Even the Dragon Ginseng had developed into a fine Ginseng that had sentience because of the soil. There shouldn't be a spatial zone under the Death Mountain that was overflowing with Soul Qi.

Despite the soil being very hard, it wasn't a problem for Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. Both of them were fast. They drilled three hundred meters below the ground in a very short amount of time. They had entered a very deep layer underground, the soil there was almost unbreakable and further below was shining with golden light as if a world of wonder awaited them.

“Seems like this pure soil is a great treasure. Despite residing so deep underground, it can still affect the soil above. But this depth is a little too much if we are to keep digging, we're going to dig through the nether world soon.”

Big Yellow couldn't help but mutter.

“The nether world is an independent world and we can't get through it just by digging underground. The pure soil is just further down below.”



Jiang Chen said. He and Big Yellow were like two golden drills that kept on making a ‘kaka’ sound while drilling downwards, they went deeper by another fifty feet very quickly.

Ahead of them, on their left side was an independent spatial zone that was only three meters wide. There wasn’t anything in this area, it was totally hollow. In the space, a golden light had materialized and had been weaved into nets similar to spider webs, they are very close to one another. The terrifying Soul Qi rendered their breathing difficult.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow’s gaze fell on the spatial zone at the same time. They saw a golden coloured thing drifting in the middle of the spatial zone. The thing was as large as a fist, its body was emitting a golden light and it was circling slowly on its own, it looked truly divine.

“Pure Soil!”

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow shouted at the same time. Big Yellow said happily, “This is the legendary pure soil, and it is really rare. This is an invaluable treasure. A Heavenly Earth Saint item, it is really rare and very hard to obtain.”

“For such a small piece of pure soil to release such a great Soul Qi that can render the entire spatial zone to develop such great changes and to allow the growth of so many herbs, it is truly extraordinary.”

Jiang Chen couldn’t help but sigh with an impressed emotion.

Big Yellow licked his lips and wanted to ingest this pure soil so badly. Seeing his foolish face, Jiang Chen quickly pulled his tail.

“Why are you pulling my tail? Master Dog knows this toy has much more benefits to you than me, so I choose to not eat it. You take it and absorb it.”

Big Yellow stared at Jiang Chen with his mouth still dribbling. Jiang Chen felt touched about this. All this while, most of the treasure found by Big Yellow were in the possession of Jiang Chen.

“The earth is one of the five elements, it is also one of the basics for a cultivator. This pure soil is a divine item of heavens and earth. Anyone who gets this pure soil will obtain boundless benefits. If I were to absorb this pure soil, my Earth Dragon Seal will be completed. Amongst the five elements, I have completed fire, water, and earth. I am only left with wood and gold, but I only need half of the pure soil to cultivate my Earth Dragon Seal. We’ll divide it into half, and I’ll start refining it here in this small spatial zone.”

Jiang Chen said. The power of the pure soil was very great so he didn’t need all of it. Half of the soil had enough Soul Qi to cultivate his Earth Dragon Seal, the other half should be given to Big Yellow as today’s discovery of the soil was all due to Big Yellow’s contribution. If it wasn’t for his super sharp sense for treasures, they wouldn’t be able to find the pure soil.

Swoosh

Both of Big Yellow's ears contracted after hearing it. With a swoosh, this dude turned into a golden light and dashed into the spatial zone. He opened his mouth and bit off half of the pure soil with a 'ka cha' sound, and swallowed it with a grunting sound.

Jiang Chen rolled his eyes after seeing this. This dog would not show any warnings when it comes to eating, but he was a bit impressed with Big Yellow's teeth as the pure soil was at least ten times harder than any ordinary beast's teeth but it was bitten off by him just like that.

After Big Yellow finished the pure soil, he quickly moved to one side to silently refine it. The power of the pure soil was so great that if it wasn't refined quickly, the power inside would burst and the body would explode.

Jiang Chen smiled. The stronger Big Yellow was, the more beneficial he was to him. Now that they have so many enemies waiting for them, the most important thing to do was to advance their level of grade. Big Yellow possessed the Dragon-Horse Bloodline and had a very strong pool of energy. If his level of grade improved, he would become very terrifying. It was possible that half of the pure soil was enough to push Big Yellow's grade to the Fifth Grade Demon Emperor.

Jiang Chen took a step and came before the small spatial zone. He grabbed the remaining half of the pure soil; he felt as if the item weighed thousands of pounds.

Jiang Chen sat with his legs crossed, tuning to his optimum condition. The pure soil was in both of his palms, he started refining it bit by bit. Currently, he was at the peak of the Second Grade Combat Emperor, and after he finished refining, he could push his level of grade to the peak of the Third Grade Combat Emperor. In addition to the metamorphosis of the Earth Dragon Seal, he had confidence that he would be able advance further to the Fourth Grade.

.....

## The Freedom Palace of the Mysterious Domain

The huge door of the Freedom Palace Mountain was on par with the one in Nebula Sect in almost every aspect, be it the size or the scale. At the centre of the Freedom Palace, there was a golden tower that was erected higher than the clouds. This was a restricted area and people usually were not allowed to enter.

The apex of the golden tower was the most restricted of the restricted places. There was a hall which could only be entered by one man, Freedom King. Not even the highly prestigious elders and Minor Saint experts had the eligibility to enter.

At this moment in the hall, there was young man sitting there. He was wearing a golden robe, his face showed resolution. There was an aura of might coming from his forehead, his hair was gold and his body was carrying an air of an emperor from top to bottom. It was as if he was a real emperor that would draw people's respects and fear.

Atop the young man's head, there was a cloud of white fog similar to the air of immortals that followed him. That was the aura of one of the heaven's favourite son, and it always shined upon the man.

If Jiang Chen was here, he would have no troubles recognizing him. He was Nan Bei Chao.

There was another very sturdy White Tiger along his side. The sturdiness of its body could match Big Yellow's. There wasn't a single crooked hair on the White Tiger. His fur was entirely white and was glimmering with plain golden light.

On the White Tiger's forehead, there was the powerful word 'MIGHT' that would catch anyone's attention. His pupils were filled with emotions. It raised his head, being extremely arrogant. It was the arrogance coming from his bones.

This was the Divine Beast White Tiger, also known as the legendary divine beast. It actually appeared and was crouching beside Nan Bei Chao, and it seemed very tamed and was not fierce at all.

This was the White Tiger, in spite of being only at the Third Grade Minor Saint it defeated Nebula Kidd. However, Nan Bei Chao was absolutely not what Nebula Kidd said that he was just a First Grade Combat Emperor. He had already reached the Sixth Grade Combat Emperor, in fact, it was the peak of the grade.

Nan Bei Chao sat cross-legged at the center of the hall on a golden hassock, his eyes were closed and his Qi was increasing at random times.

Above the hall, there was a golden throne drifting in mid-air. The throne was very large and carried a respectable and mighty Qi.

In a flash, a person appeared on the throne. He was wearing a purple combat robe and seemed to be around his forties. His entire body from top to bottom was carrying a Saint aura that made him superior to anyone. This purple robe didn't belong to anyone but Freedom King.

“Humph! Absurd! Such a yellow-skinned kid dares to disrespect me?”

Freedom King seemed very angry with something, he slapped his palm on the table and it made a crushing sound.

“Who could actually cause my king to be so furious?”

Nan Bei Chao slowly opened his eyes. He asked faintly while his back was facing against Freedom King. He didn't show any sign of respect while talking to Freedom King. In the entire Freedom Palace, he was the only one who dared talk to Freedom King in such a way.

Nonetheless, Freedom King didn't seem to be offended by that.

“There is a genius that appeared in Nebula Sect, such a genius only appears once every ten thousands years. He can initiate heavenly tribulation and has killed two of my elders. He also disrespected me, he is really seeking death!”

“What? He can initiate heavenly tribulation? There is such a person in the Mysterious Domain, I really want to meet this person.”

Nan Bei Chao twitched his face slightly and rose from the hassock slowly, and turned to face Freedom King.

“Of course, despite the fact that he’s a man that can initiate heavenly tribulation, he is still no match for Prince Nan Bei, he can’t be compared to you. Prince Nan possesses the true immortal physique and inherited the will of the immortals, how can a mortal like Jiang Chen be compared to you.”

Freedom King smiled. He knew the identity of Nan Bei Chao. This man possessed the Immortal Body and tamed the Divine Beast White Tiger beside him. Freedom King naturally didn’t dare to patronize such a man as he would definitely become a real emperor, he was never to be underestimated.

“What? You said that man is called Jiang Chen?”

Nan Bei Chao exclaimed. It wasn’t just his mouth moving, when he recalled of this name, both his eyes instantly revealed a strong hatred and murderous aura. This name was his biggest wound. That white silhouette was someone he had to eliminate even in his

dreams. Jiang Chen had given him an insult that couldn't be undone and it will follow him for the rest of his life.

“What? Prince Nan Bei knows that Jiang Chen?”

Freedom King was stunned while looking at Nan Bei Chao, he actually knew Jiang Chen.

“We had have some confrontations between ourselves last time. I never thought that he would appear in Mysterious Domain, very well...perfect...it seems that I won't be lonely anymore in the Mysterious Domain. This time I will let him know that I am the true heaven's descendant who had the physique of an emperor that no one could oppose.”

A strong murderous aura rushed out of Nan Bei Chao's body. He didn't need to guess that this 'Jiang Chen' was the Jiang Chen in the Eastern Continent. In this world, there wouldn't be two men who could initiate the heavenly tribulation.

...



# Chapter 683 - Fourth Grade Combat Emperor

---

Nan Bei Chao's golden robe rippled, his pupils glittered like a scorching sun, full of blazing flames.

“I want to head to the Death Mountain to meet with my old friend again.”

“Prince Nan Bei, don't be rash. There can be numerous people who are named Jiang Chen, it may not be him.”

Freedom King didn't expect Jiang Chen's name to stir up Nan Bei Chao. He had known him a little longer than a day and found out that Nan Bei Chao was a very calm person who always maintained his composure even when a mountain crumbled in front of him. Nan Bei Chao had never been emotional in front of him. Today, he had unveiled a part of his emotions after hearing Jiang Chen's name. It seemed as if he had suffered some kind of loss because of Jiang Chen for him to react so emotionally.

“It has to be him.”

Nan Bei Chao was sure of his words. Sometimes, what one was concerned the most about wasn't one's friend, but one's enemy. For instance, Jiang Chen could easily figure out what Nan Bei Chao's intention in the Mysterious Domain was. The moment Jiang Chen knew about his appearance here, he knew that the domain was going to fall into chaos. Nan Bei Chao had the same intuition, he knew that if Jiang Chen existed in the domain, his

domineering path would be obstructed. If there was anyone who could obstruct him from going forward in his path towards becoming an emperor, it would be Jiang Chen. Nonetheless, it was because of their existence which caused so much intensity that it made their cultivation path not as dull as it was.

As the saying went, ‘Even heroes valued their greatest foe.’

“However, the spatial passageway into the Death Mountain is closed for now. I’m afraid Prince Nan Bei can’t go in for now.”

Freedom King frowned. If Nan Bei Chao wanted to enter the Death Mountain, he had to go in alone, leaving his White Tiger behind as it was a powerful Minor Demon Saint. If it entered with him to the Death Mountain, it would cause some unimaginable disasters inside.

“It doesn’t matter. I have the physique of an Immortal and inherited the will of heaven. I can go anywhere. I have my ways of entering the place.”

Nan Bei Chao said. With a sway of his body, he disappeared completely. He headed for the Death Mountain while leaving the White Tiger behind in the Freedom Palace.

The White Tiger could only watch the fading silhouette of Nan Bei Chao in the air as it continued to lie down and snooze. He had never even glanced at the Freedom King, not even once since the beginning until now. White tigers were an arrogant race who would never put anyone in their eyes, except Nan Bei Chao who

was acknowledged by it.

.....

Inside the Death Mountain. In a small and narrow spatial zone, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were still in their meditative state. Their body were shining with a golden light which made them seem very divine. Their Qis' were continuously increasing. The power of the pure soil was too strong. Earth was one of five elements. After Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were done refining - not only would their grade advance - their physiques and Yuan Force would also be enhanced, providing enormous benefits.

There were people coming in the spatial zone, they had sensed the unusual Soul Qi but they weren't able to find anything related to it. There was only an empty herb garden that was left with nothing but the stench of blood and combat Qi lingering in the air.

“There had to be a big battle that occurred here. Look at that herb garden, there must have been a lot of herbs grown inside, but unfortunately we are too late for that. They were all be taken by the others.”

“It's really bad...Those herbs must be very valuable.”

“Our luck is too poor.”

.....

The people who entered circled the entire area once then left. They didn't feel anything extraordinary here. As for the bloody battle that happened before they came, it didn't surprise them very much since the dead bodies were already carried away by the disciples of the two major powers.

Ka! Ka!

Two clear sounds were suddenly produced from Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's body. That was the sound of advancement. At this moment, Jiang Chen had successfully condensed a thousand dragon marks and had reached the Third Grade Combat Emperor. Big Yellow on the other hand, had pushed his grade to the Fourth Grade Demon Emperor.

Each of them advanced one level of grade, but their Qi didn't stop increasing there and they hadn't awoken yet. The benefits that were brought by the pure soil weren't only these.

Big Yellow's Dragon-Horse bloodline became more vigorous. The speed of his refining increased. It seemed that it would only take one or two hours to completely refine the entire half of the pure soil. At that time, he would surely reach the Fifth Grade Demon Emperor.

At the same time that Jiang Chen was refining the pure soil, the Earth Dragon Seal of the five elements circulated automatically. A heavy and large Soul Qi coursed through Jiang Chen's veins and finally to his Qi Sea. Dragon marks were continuing to form without slowing down.

One hundred, two hundred, three hundred.....one thousand.....

An hour later, Jiang Chen finally completed refining the pure soil. His Earth Dragon Seal was completed. The surge of energy from the Earth Dragon Seal's bursting power accelerated the formation of dragon marks upto forty six thousand before it stopped abruptly. Jiang Chen successfully advance to the Fourth Grade Combat Emperor. He had advanced two levels this time, from the Second Grade to the Fourth Grade. The amplification of the refining had brought unexpected results to him.

Buzzing

A wave of Qi rushed out of Jiang Chen's body, crumbling the soil below him. The crumbling force trembled the entire land, as if there was an earthquake happening.

Hong Long

Suddenly, another deep noise was heard. The land immediately cracked into lines. Big Yellow had also awoken. He had successfully reached the Fifth Grade Demon Emperor. His supposedly large and sturdy physique had grown half of its original size. He was fully covered with a golden fur, not having a single mixed-coloured hair. The dragon horn at the centre of his head grew by an inch, the tip of the horn illuminated with sparks. His Qi of divine beast had become even more intense.

Behind Big Yellow, a divine shadow of a Dragon-Horse was

shining continuously. The shadow was fully golden. There were two dragon horns on its head. If one looked closely, there was something bulging up at the centre, it was actually the third horn.

If this situation was seen by the entire Dragon-Horse race, they would excitedly jump. This kind of Dragon-Horse only appeared once every tens of thousands of years, and they would call him the king of their king.

However, the shadow of the Dragon-Horse disappeared when Big Yellow opened his eyes. His features remained and nothing changed besides the little increment of his horns' length, body size and level.

Big Yellow looked at Jiang Chen and saw an extraordinary Earth Dragon circling him. The size of the Earth Dragon continued to grow larger as a terrifying Qi was released from it. The appearance of the Earth Dragon had turned Jiang Chen into some kind of an underground king that made all the Soul Qi rush to him.

Nonetheless, the true scariness was the destructive force of the Earth Dragon. This was a combat technique which could deal a considerable amount of damage.

“Dammit! This kid is getting all over of himself!”

Big Yellow made a sway of his body then left the spatial zone and shot upwards. He had already known what would happen upon seeing Jiang Chen's current condition. He just started to circulate the Earth Dragon Seal. When the Earth Dragon was fully

condensed, the entire herb garden on top would be completely destroyed.

Big Yellow didn't want to lose his life because of that, so the most sensible thing to do was to leave that area.

Swoosh

Big Yellow drilled his way out of the ground. By the time he came out, a world-shaking rumbling sound occurred underground. Then, the land where the herb garden was at shook. An Earth Dragon that was about forty meters large drilled out of the land and spiralled up to the sky, and an explosion happened. That was an indescribable explosive force that totally blew the entire herb garden away. Smoke filled the atmosphere and flares of fire were seen.

After that, a white silhouette flew from below. His pupils were glowing and his black hair was dancing in the breeze like a peerless lord that looked down on all the living creatures.

He just stood there, the superior Qi that his body was releasing made him look like he was a natural born lord. A large whirlpool was formed above his head that was roughly three hundred meters wide. Outside his body, a shadowy blood-red dragon was dancing and circling around him. Both of his hands were full of dragon scales, it's truly a magnificent sight.

“This dude is becoming scarier, his cultivation technique is so abnormal!”

Big Yellow couldn't help commenting on Jiang Chen's cultivation. Jiang Chen's combat strength had been multiplied after advancing to the Fourth Grade Emperor. With his current combat strength, he would be able to get rid of a Seventh Grade Combat Emperor easily. He even had the strength to deal with an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's advancement had created a big mess on the place. Fortunately, there weren't any cultivators here or else it would draw some kind of unwanted attention from the people. This spatial zone was like a spatial springboard, any cultivators who came here would just pass through without thoroughly checking the place. Now, this place had become very peaceful and quiet. In the entire spatial zone, there were only Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

“Little Chen, how do you feel?”

Big Yellow came to Jiang Chen and asked.

“It is more than I expected. I feel like a punch of mine can kill a Seventh Grade Combat Emperor. I can even fight an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor.”

Jiang Chen's face revealed a smile. He felt so much better with his current condition.

“Unfortunately, after I was interrupted from the enlightenment, I couldn't find it back. However, I have a feeling that if I completed



the cultivation of the five elements, the Dragon Transformation Art will undergo another metamorphosis, bringing boundless benefits and surprises.”

Jiang Chen felt that his previous enlightenment was a waste, but he had an intuition when his Earth Dragon Seal underwent a transformation. After the metamorphosis of the Dragon Transformation Art, he would acquire the power of transforming into a real dragon himself.

However, it would be extremely difficult to complete the cultivation of these Five Elements of Combat Dragon Seal. He was lucky enough to find the Pure Soil and Pure Water. Now, he only lacked items for the element of Wood and Gold, but these things couldn't be deliberately acquired, it depended on one's luck.

“Let's go. This place is already in ruins. After we have retrieved the Pure Soil, this place will very quickly become like the other spatial zone, desolate and filled with stale air. We will go to the other spatial zone in search for other treasures.”

Big Yellow said.

...

# Chapter 684 - Battling Nan Bei Chao Again

---

Hu Hu

As soon as Big Yellow's voice faded, a scary wave of wind started to blow behind his back. The wind had been imbued with a very strong Qi. It rolled upwards, soaring for the sky in a twinkle. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's facial expression changed. They quickly turned around and saw a golden light being condensed into a golden cloud, a truly divine sight.

Then, a silhouette appeared atop the golden cloud. It's a young man in golden robes, and his golden hair fluttering in the breeze. His entire body was full of golden light akin to one who had been soaked in an ocean of gold for a very long time. He was like a god who had descended from the heavens. The Qi that he was emanating could intimidate everyone.

“Nan Bei Chao!”

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow exclaimed simultaneously. They knew this young man all too well. Back in Black Sect in the Qi Province, they were incapable of completely exterminating this person, one of Jiang Chen's biggest regret. This was because he knew that someone like Nan Bei Chao would find him in the future to cause trouble again if he didn't die.

Big Yellow was part of the Dragon-Horse race, a highly proud being. Nevertheless, even he had to admit that Nan Bei Chao was a god's favored son. The great geniuses of the major powers' vastly

differed from Nan Bei Chao. If there was someone who could be compared to Jiang Chen, it would be Nan Bei Chao.

“Jiang Chen, we meet again at last.”

Nan Bei Chao’s expression was emotionless as he blankly looked at Jiang Chen. The only hint of what he was feeling was the trace of killing intent in his eyes.

Jiang Chen feared that Nan Bei Chao would be the only one who was able to leisurely enter the Death Mountain after it was closed, making it possible for him to find the spatial zone that Jiang Chen was located in.

“Nan Bei Chao, on that day, you were akin to a pitiful dog who ran off with its tail between its legs. I never thought that you would be able to hold your breath until now. It had surely made you suffer.”

Jiang Chen crossed his arms around his chest and said in a faint tone. Actually, he was very surprised. He could see that Nan Bei Chao was at the Sixth Grade of Combat Emperor. It varied greatly from what Nebula Kidd had said when he predicted that Nan Bei Chao was a First Grade Combat Emperor.

“Little Chen, this dude is a Sixth Grade Combat Emperor. It seems like we have a problem here.”

Big Yellow said using his Divine Sense. He was now a powerful

Fifth Grade Demon Emperor. If the enemy was an ordinary Sixth Grade Combat Emperor, he would be able to easily get rid of him without the help of Jiang Chen, biting the enemy to death. Unfortunately, the man before him wasn't an ordinary Sixth Grade Combat Emperor. He was Nan Bei Chao. Although he was only at the Sixth Grade, he should be seen as an Eighth Grade.

While Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were checking their enemy's level of strength and other changes, Nan Bei Chao was doing the same thing and he was slightly startled by Jiang Chen's level of strength.

“Freedom King said that you were only a Second Grade Combat Emperor at the time you entered, seems like you have just reached Fourth Grade Combat Emperor. Such an incredible speed of advancement would really shock the masses. It seems that it would be a little difficult for me to crush you like an ant now.”

Nan Bei Chao was very arrogant in his speech and was a very impatient man. He feared Jiang Chen despite him only having a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor cultivation base. Only Jiang Chen could make Nan Bei Chao speak so much before fighting. He knew Jiang Chen very well and his prowess. Whoever confronted Nan Bei Chao with a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor's level of strength other than Jiang Chen would be equal to one committing suicide.

“A defeated person dares to boast shamelessly here. If I were you, I would immediately find a corner to hide to avoid being shamed.”

Big Yellow was never polite in his speech, especially to his enemy.

“Humph! It’s a miracle that this dog hasn’t been caught and stewed by someone.”

Nan Bei Chao made a cold humph. He had a deep impression of Jiang Chen as well as this dog. He didn’t rush to attack as he continued to stare at Jiang Chen, like two old friends trying to reminisce their old days.

“Jiang Chen, I have long known that you will come to the Divine Continent given your talents. It was just that you had come earlier than I had expected. I initially thought that it would be after I have conquered the entire Divine Continent and was worshipped by all living things, I would then want you to kneel before me and repent for your sins. I never imagined that you came here so early.”

Nan Bei Chao was wildly arrogant, claiming that he would conquer the entire Divine Continent and be worshipped by all living creatures. It seemed that only Nan Bei Chao could say these kind of words. Not even the reincarnation of the Greatest Saint, Jiang Chen, had the courage to claim that he would be worshipped by everyone.

Nan Bei Chao cultivated the Monarch Heaven Art and the path that he was going for was the path of a monarch or an emperor. He was a being who was innately arrogant.

“You sought refuge at the Freedom Palace?”

Jiang Chen ignored all of the boastful words Nan Bei Chao had

said. Even then, he still knitted his eyebrows. He had heard about the Freedom King and could imagine that Nan Bei Chao was now on the same side as him. Nan Bei Chao must be wanting to use the Freedom Palace's power to conquer the whole Mysterious Domain and slowly devour the entire continent as a way to cultivate his Monarch Heaven Art. This situation was similar to the one where Nan Bei Chao depended on Zhao Chong Yang's strength to dominate the Qi Province. Of course, the Mysterious Domain was way larger and wasn't comparable to a small Qi Province.

However, Jiang Chen did know that Nan Bei Chao had wild ambitions. He wasn't going to be satisfied after merely conquering a domain. Now that he had built his own power, he would do as he said: conquering the entire Divine Continent.

Nan Bei Chao possessed the Immortal Physique and with the aid of his follower, the White Tiger, it would help him achieve his target quickly. Jiang Chen felt that Nan Bei Chao had improved so much because he had encountered some sort of fortunate event.

“Seek refuge? It's called conquering. Freedom King has to depend on me to expand his palace. The Mysterious Domain will belong to me sooner or later. When that time comes, you have already lost the capability to stop me.”

Nan Bei Chao said. Back in Qi Province, he would've become the conqueror if it wasn't for Jiang Chen's interference. If he had successfully conquered the Qi Province, his Monarch Heaven Art would be much scarier by now. It was because of that failure that his cultivation of the art as a powerful monarch was significantly harder as he was not allowed to have failures in his path.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow exchanged glances. It seemed that they had acquired a big secret regarding the Mysterious Domain. Freedom King was like the previous Fen Tiange. Under the control of Nan Bei Chao, he was already planning how to devour the whole domain. However, Jiang Chen wasn't surprised to hear this kind of secret as he had already anticipated that the domain would descend into chaos the moment he heard about the presence of Nan Bei Chao from Nebula Kidd.

“Nan Bei Chao, you are truly a genius who owned an Immortal Physique, and going on a glorious path of a monarch. Unfortunately, you have met me, so your path won't be smooth sailing anymore. The result of your attempt in this domain would be the same as the one in Qi Province.”

Jiang Chen's Qi trembled. His whole body was filled with gushing combat intent. He had never underestimated Nan Bei Chao, but he was more determined and confident to show Nan Bei Chao who the true son of divine destiny was.

“Haha...Jiang Chen, you are really too naïve. You have no idea how strong I am now. It would be so easy for me to kill you now that it would be like squashing an ant. I am the true son of divine destiny. I'm unstoppable. Today, I will let you know how powerful I am. The only purpose that I came here is to kill you, to reclaim back the pride that I lost!”

Nan Bei Chao laughed loudly. The humiliating defeat in Qi Province had inflicted a wound that wouldn't be forgotten for the rest of his life. The most effective way to heal the wound would be

to kill Jiang Chen. Once Jiang Chen was killed, his thoughts would be trouble-free, and the blemish hindering him on his Monarch Heaven Art's path would also disappear completely.

“Is that so? Then, you should try doing that, and we'll see who dies.”

Jiang Chen's black hair was fluttering in the air without the slightest fear. He had advanced his grade to the Fourth Grade Combat Emperor and was able to duel with someone as powerful as Nan Bei Chao right now.

Truthfully, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow felt very lucky to find the Pure Soil here. Jiang Chen would've been no match for Nan Bei Chao today if he hadn't acquired the power of the Pure Soil.

“Little Chen, he has a Third Grade Minor Saint Divine Beast White Tiger with him. Won't it be seeking death if we fight him?”

Big Yellow conversed with Jiang Chen secretly using Divine Sense worriedly.

“You fool! Don't you know that that beast is a Third Grade Minor Saint? How can such a powerful being enter the Death Mountain?”

Jiang Chen gave Big Yellow an annoyed glance. Big Yellow's eyes sparkled suddenly when he realized that anyone above the Eighth Grade Combat Emperor wasn't allowed to enter the Death Mountain. In that case, they could confront Nan Bei Chao.



“Big Yellow, don’t hold back your power when we fight. We’ll jointly attack with all that we got and exterminate him here.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes revealed a murderous glint. Nan Bei Chao was his greatest enemy. He wouldn’t miss any chance to defeat or eliminate him.

“Jiang Chen, welcome your death!”

Nan Bei Chao’s Monarch Qi rushed towards the sky. Instantly, he struck with unparalleled prestige. His hand dug into the air, tearing down the spatial zone nearby. A brilliant large golden palm seal which looked like a giant hill charged towards Jiang Chen, enveloping him. That attack carried a tremendous amount of force that has the ability to crush a Seventh Grade Combat Emperor into a patty.

Humph!

Jiang Chen made a cold humph. He jumped into the sky and rushed towards the giant palm. He shook both his hands, and were now completely covered with dragon scales and it turned into a giant dragon claw. A powerful True Dragon Palm was casted, some of the spatial zones were also torn down by it. He lunged forward to meet the golden palm, its Qi was on par with Nan Bei Chao’s palm seal.

The Dragon Transformation Art was just too scary. Such an ancient and old art with forty-six thousand dragon marks. It made

Jiang Chen so powerful that a casual attack of his could create a force that was as big as an ocean, stifling the breath of the audiences.

Hong Long

The True Dragon Palm and Golden Giant Palm Seal collided, demolishing the spatial zones around them, causing it to be in ruins. The air was burnt, and a deafening sound trembled the entire spatial zone as if it had received a destructive attack.

...

# Chapter 685 - Exhibition of Supernatural Powers

---

Jiang Chen and Nan Bei Chao hardly received any serious effects from the attack, their destructive force was on par so no one seemed to have gained the upper hand.

Nan Bei Chao's facial expression changed. He never thought that Jiang Chen, a mere Fourth Grade Combat Emperor, had such a great combat strength that was able to match his. He felt uncomfortable to think that Jiang Chen could defend his attack with a two-level deficit, it was a great blow to his mental state.

However, Nan Bei Chao wasn't extremely shocked about it because this wasn't the first time that he had met Jiang Chen. The two of them had fought before back in Qi Province. He knew very well how scary Jiang Chen was. His opponent was able to initiate the heavenly tribulation. Someone like him couldn't be evaluated using logical means.

"Jiang Chen, you may be powerful but you are only a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor. Do you really think that you can fight me? Truly retarded. I will show you my true strength and kill you today."

Nan Bei Chao's Qi powered up. His body emitted a boundless golden light as if his entire body had become a wheel of scorching sun, shining brightly on everything.

Both of Nan Bei Chao's hands were hitting the air and a billow of

black flames was created. It was rippling continuously, black skulls drifting above it. This made it seem powerful. It was merely a cloud of flames but it emitted such a chilling Qi.

“Jiang Chen, this is the Nether Cold Fire. Besides its scorching heat, it also carries a bone-stingingly cold Qi. Once you have been incinerated by this flame, you will be turned into fine powder. This is the Yin Yang Fire. You have no way to resist it.”

Nan Bei Chao said while looking at the jumping flames in his hands.

“Playing with fire in front of me? I’m the ancestor of fire. But since you want to start a game of fire, I naturally have ways to deal with you. The Nether Cold Fire is a rare flame where coldness and darkness exist simultaneously, making it extremely difficult to defend against. Unfortunately, regardless of how divine the flame is, it's still a flame!”

Jiang Chen revealed a smirk. Nan Bei Chao wanted to use his Nether Cold Fire to incinerate him, but it would only happen in his dreams. Even if it was a cold fire, it couldn’t deviate from its fire property which could be suppressed by its greatest foe, water. Of course, for a flame like Nether Cold Fire, ordinary water wouldn’t be of any use. However, it would be a different story if the Heavenly Earth Pure Water was used.

“You’re truly unaware of your own ability! I will let you know the power of Nether Cold Fire. The Nether descends and takes the lives of the living.”

Nan Bei Chao bellowed. He waved his hands and the Nether Cold Fire turned into a sea of black fire, charging towards Jiang Chen. The black flames were very vigorous and had turned into a giant skull, as if the king of the dead had emerged in this world, releasing a Qi that made them shudder.

“Dammit! This dude is strong.”

Big Yellow couldn't help but say. The dragon horn on his head was glittering with sparks. He was preparing to use his scary special abilities to fight Nan Bei Chao. He had to cast his most powerful skill against Nan Bei Chao with his Fifth Grade Demon Emperor cultivation base.

“Big Yellow, don't strike first. Let me handle this. You should go and seal this entire spatial zone using a big formation. We can't let him escape today.”

Jiang Chen sent the message to Big Yellow using his Divine Sense. He had decided to kill Nan Bei Chao in this battle. His opponent was very strong and was improving at a scary rate. If he wasn't eliminated today, it would bring about a great disaster in the future. Back in the Qi Province, Jiang Chen had crippled half of Nan Bei Chao body. That kind of injury was enough to kill an ordinary person or at least paralyze and disable him for the rest of his life, but not only had Nan Bei Chao recovered, he had also reached a scary level of grade within a short period of time.

“Alright.”

Big Yellow said. He understood Jiang Chen's plan. The battle today was a life-and-death one. He had already witnessed the ability that Nan Bei Chao had used to escape in Qi Province. If they wanted to kill him today, they had to be fully prepared.

Roar

The Nether Skull let out a soul trembling roar. It opened its mouth wide and lunged towards Jiang Chen.

“Water Dragon Seal!”

Jiang Chen wasn't afraid. He shouted and a giant water dragon shot out of his body. A water dragon spanning a hundred meters long appeared, its Qi wasn't any weaker than the Nether Cold Fire. It made a earth-shaking roar. Its arrival released a chilling Qi that lowered the temperature of the entire battlefield.

The boastful Nether Cold Fire felt the scary chilling Qi from the Water Dragon's body. The giant skull halted and revealed a fearful face as if it had encountered its archenemy.

Roar

The Water Dragon didn't care that much about that and collided with the Nether Cold Fire.

Bang

Two extremely powerful attacks collided, causing some of the spatial zone to be annihilated. Due to the impact of the Heavenly Earth Pure Water, the scary Nether Cold Fire was extinguished. Not only did the Water Dragon not stop, it continued forward to Nan Bei Chao.

“What?”

Nan Bei Chao was stunned and his facial expression changed drastically. No one other than him knew how scary the Nether Cold Fire was. The flame was sufficient to incinerate an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor, but it was easily put out by Jiang Chen. He could feel the strong chilling aura from the water dragon. That kind of coldness made one feel like it was the coldest thing in the world, it could even freeze one's soul.

Nonetheless, it was merely a feeling that he felt in a split second. Even if it was the case, this wouldn't make Nan Bei Chao retreat. The moment the water dragon reached him, he struck it with a wheel of the sun which collided with the water dragon, destroying it.

“What water is this?”

Nan Bei Chao asked.

“Heavenly Earth Pure Water.”

Jiang Chen didn't attempt to hide anything as there was nothing to worry about. He believed that even without him saying anything, Nan Bei Chao would still be able to guess what it was. There wasn't any water in this world besides the Heavenly Earth Pure Water that could extinguish his Nether Cold Fire.

“ I never thought that you could obtain a Saint item, it seems that I have underestimated you. Jiang Chen. I have to admit that you are strong, but you are still going to die by my hands. White Tiger Divine Roar!”

Nan Bei Chao launched another attack. His Qi had increased much more. Suddenly, there was an illusion of a huge White Tiger above his head. The White Tiger opened its mouth and roared at Jiang Chen with its heaven and earth-shaking roar.

Roar

Edgeless waves of sound charged over. This was the special ability of the Divine Beast White Tiger, a legendary divine roar that could directly tremble one to death by crushing all their internal organs.

Jiang Chen's face smiled slightly. He could imagine how Nan Bei Chao got this skill. Nan Bei Chao should be using it with the aid of his Monarch Heaven Art. Adding to the fact that he had high affinity with his White Tiger, the power of the White Tiger Divine Roar would be tremendous.



“Big Yellow, cast your Soul Crunching Tune.”

Jiang Chen shouted at Big Yellow. Big Yellow then turned into a ray of light and appeared before Jiang Chen. A man and a dog's Qi combined together, Jiang Chen instantly pumped in all of his force into Big Yellow's physique.

This is an inexplicable companionship working together that required both individuals to fully trust each other. They must open their state of mind and allow the other person to enter his body. Although Big Yellow and Jiang Chen's relationship weren't as close as Nan Bei Chao and White Tiger's relationship, they could still perform a fusion skill together. Their connection was almost as strong as the connection between the other two beings.

Roar

Big Yellow made a dragon roar, it was a scary wave of sound that made the spatial zone ripple and become wavy. This was the attack that they had unleashed, and it collided with the White Tiger Divine Roar.

The White Tiger and Dragon-Horse were both pure bloodlines of divine beasts. Both the White Tiger Divine Roar and Big Yellow's Soul Crunching Tune were special abilities of the most powerful beings, they can't be compared to any ordinary beast's special abilities.

Hong Long

The scary sound waves turned into sharp sickles, ramming into one another and cutting the vicinity of the spatial zone into pieces. Such a scary battle would definitely put one into a state of extreme fright.

Two waves of sound weaved together for a few minutes before stopping. The power of both sound waves was on par with each other, resulting in a draw.

Nan Bei Chao didn't look pleased. He had never thought that the White Tiger Divine Roar could be defended by his opponent so easily. For a sound attack like this, it could only be defended by another sound attack.

“I am the Monarch.”

Nan Bei Chao motioned. His body became larger. The illusion above his head changed. The illusion of the White Tiger disappeared and an illusion of a heavenly sky with a sun, moon and meteors circling around took its place. Nan Bei Chao was standing at the internal part of the heavenly sky, illuminating with a golden light. He who possessed the physique of the Monarch governed this entire heavenly sky and was seen as a true monarch.

At the same time, he bellowed and the terrifying heavenly sky crushed Jiang Chen from above. The amount of force that was used to crush Jiang Chen was stronger than that of dozens of mountains added up.

“Five Elements of Combat Dragon Seal.”

Jiang Chen's pupil irradiated. Nan Bei Chao's powerful attack had completely ignited his combat aura. Instantly, three dragons of different properties namely the Fire Dragon Seal, Water Dragon Seal and Earth Dragon Seal appeared at the same time and lunged towards the heavenly sky from different directions.

This was the first time Jiang Chen casted the three dragon seals at the same time, it seemed that Nan Bei Chao was the only one who could force him to the edge of his limits.

Roar Roar Roar

Dragon roars trembled the sky, a sea of fire was created by the combination of True Dragon Fire and True Thunderfire was lingering above their heads, electric sparks could be seen from below. The power of the Pure Water and Pure Soil was perfectly unleashed. The three dragons rushed into the internal part of the heavenly sky and exploded. The destructive force collided with the sun, moon, and meteors in the heavenly sky.

...

# Chapter 686 - The Power of the Saint Bone, Another Suppression

---

Hong Long

The sky and land both shook. The entire spatial zone had been shaken quite seriously. It was imaginable that after Jiang Chen and Nan Bei Chao's battle, this whole spatial zone would be destroyed and would cease to exist.

Three terrifying Combat Dragons rushed into the Heavenly Sky, hitting against the Sun, Moon and meteors and created an intense collision and destructive Qi that lingered in the air everywhere. It was like the falling of the Heaven and Earth, it was absolutely horrifying. This abrupt combat really startled one's heart and trembled one's gut.

“Die!”

Jiang Chen and Nan Bei Chao bellowed at the same time. The three Combat Dragons and the Heavenly Sky collided against one another and exploded. The explosion created a powerful and very fierce impact to the surrounding. Under such a destructive impact, the spatial zone started to tear apart inch by inch, countless number of cracks occurring on it.

Hong Long

The domineering waves continued to affect every part of the

spatial zone. Finally, it couldn't stand it anymore. This spatial zone had become unstable after losing the support of the Pure Soil, so it literally couldn't withstand the crazy fight of these two mad men.

The spatial zone finally broke into pieces and dissipated into nothing.

Argh

Wails were heard. There were some cultivators at the border of the spatial zone that were sacrificed. Under the impact of that force, everything was evaporated into nothingness after just one hit. It was calm before the explosion in another spatial zone. However, the ground and mountains shook all of a sudden, large cracks appeared in the sky as if the whole world was going to be engulfed. It looked like a scene of the end of the world.

In this spatial zone, there were quite a number of people. There were a few powerful Seventh Grade Combat Emperors among them. At this moment, everyone's head was looking up at the black smoke that was billowing from somewhere else. It was like a terrifying black hole that emerged from the void. The destructive energy was so clear that they felt like it was going to devour them all. Their faces turned frightful when they saw the people nearest to the spatial zone being eliminated.

“What happened? Very strong movements of energy like the entire world is going to collapse.”

“That is a very powerful combat wave. It seemed like it was

caused by an intense battle, truly terrifying. The spatial zone was completely wrecked. Who actually is it?”

“Quickly, look! There are two silhouettes, it seemed like they are fighting.”

.....

Someone saw two silhouettes coming out from the cracks of the spatial zone. Their movements were so fast that it felt as if one was looking at a series of after-images battling and moving. They had destroyed another spatial zone and shifted their battlefield to this spatial zone.

“Dammit! So fierce!”

Big Yellow was able to rush out of the cracks but his face was filled with pride. That was right, he was very proud. It was because the destruction of the spatial zone forced Jiang Chen and Nan Bei Chao to bring the battle here. However, the big formation that he set up was not damaged, it wasn’t destroyed along with the spatial zone. Thus, his formation was still able to prevent Nan Bei Chao from escaping.

It seemed that only Big Yellow could cast such a great formation technique.

“Look! That white silhouette is Jiang Chen. He is battling someone. God! He was just a Second Grade Combat Emperor not

long ago, but now he is already a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor. His combat strength would be devastatingly powerful.”

“My god! It has been only two hours since I entered this spatial zone. In just two hours.... he actually advanced two grades continuously...from the Second Grade to the Fourth Grade. Is he really human? Can someone who could initiate the heavenly tribulation be so powerful?”

“This dude’s abnormality is indescribable. He is merely a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor but the combat strength he possesses is enough to kill someone three grades higher than him. He need not worry about facing an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor either as he could destroy the spatial zone. Who is that blonde young man? He seems to be even scarier.”

“Yeah, we have never seen that man before. When did such a freak emerge in the Mysterious Domain? He seems to be only at the Sixth Grade Combat Emperor but he can actually match that abnormal monster, how is he unknown to the public before this?”

.....

Everyone was shocked. The huge battle above the sky was shocking. There were quite a number of people here that came from the herb garden, they had witnessed the fight between Yan Hui, Li Long and Jiang Chen where Li Long and Yan Hui died. What shocked them the most was that Jiang Chen merely used two hours to advance two grades, an insane level of achievement.

Another person that shocked them was his opponent. It was a blonde haired young man that came out of nowhere and wasn't even seen or heard before in the Mysterious Domain. His gestures carried a bursting and domineering aura which portrayed the Qi of a high monarch that made people automatically respect him. Some low-grade cultivators were subdued as they felt the urge to worship him in their hearts.

This was a scary figure, but why was he unrecognized by the public? This was where they were taken aback.

However, the battle between these two shocked them even more. A lot of them seemingly felt very fortunate to be able to witness the battle between these two monsters. Also, a battle like this would bring them great benefits.

Hong Long

The five elements of the Combat Dragon Seal and the Heavenly Sky casted by Nan Bei Chao had finally vanished. These two skills had completely crumbled the spatial zone but there was no clear winner. Until now, it was unclear who would win, they secretly raised their thumbs up to each other even if they were the greatest of foes. They had to admit that their opponents were very good fighters.

“Jiang Chen, I have the Monarch Punch that can blow the heaven and earth. I want to see whether you can withstand it or not.”

Nan Bei Chao moved. His Yuan Force was like an ocean, like



Jiang Chen's boundless force that couldn't be exhausted. He punched with a 'bang.' The simple punch carried some kind of special power, causing the winds to run wild. A giant golden punch with an intense monarch aura was charging at Jiang Chen.

“Seems like I can't hold back, I have to kill him.”

Jiang Chen's eyes glinted with a brilliant light. His combat aura was overwhelming and his left forefinger started to shake intensely. In a twinkle, it grew a fold larger as a saint aura and golden lights were emanated from it.

“Profound Nine Solar Finger.”

Jiang Chen yelled and casted the Profound Nine Solar Finger. It wasn't a mere finger, it carried the power of the Saint Bone that ignited the true power of the Profound Nine Solar Finger, unleashing the endless power from within.

Hong Long

The spatial zone in the sky was ravaged once more. Nine giant golden fingers akin to mountains rushed out. Each and every giant finger was life-like, with intricate patterns inscribed on it. Afterwards, all nine of them fused into one in the blink of an eye. The size remained but the Qi had increased by multiple folds.

This is the power of a Saint Bone. It was unstoppable and had an aura that could conquer the world. It crashed against the Monarch

Punch under everyone's gaze.

Hong

It was as if the entire world was drowned in an unpleasant noise. The onlookers were all deaf for a moment with paled faces. Fortunately, these two people were fighting in the sky. If they were fighting on the ground, all of the spectators would've been involved in the battle and die, turning into grey dust.

This was the reason why these two Combat Emperors were battling in the sky and had to find a new place to do it. Their powers were too strong, a casual attack could cause large amount of damage which no ordinary man could possibly hope to bear.

“Faster! Move back, get as far away as you can as soon as possible.”

Someone shouted. These two people were preparing to cast their ultimate skills. Even an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor wouldn't be able to withstand it.

Both the Profound Nine Solar finger and Nan Bei Chao's Monarch Punch were impeccable skill. The collision of these two attacks was akin to a catastrophe.

DengDengDeng

Nan Bei Chao received a great recoiling force and moved three

steps backwards before stabilizing himself. In front of him, Jiang Chen's body only shook slightly. The power of the Saint Bone was the greatest. It had even gained the upper hand as it collided with the Monarch Punch.

Nan Bei Chao couldn't believe what he just witnessed. He felt aggrieved as he couldn't accept what was happening. This situation was similar to his previous battle with Jiang Chen.

‘Am I going to lose to Jiang Chen again? My strength is even two grades higher.

No. this is impossible! I can't lose again! It's unfair, how can he be so powerful?!’

Nan Bei Chao couldn't accept the fact presented to him. Jiang Chen also felt slightly intimidated by Nan Bei Chao as his technique was ever-improving. With Jiang Chen's current strength, killing Nan Bei Chao would be an impossible feat.

“Nan Bei Chao, why don't you stay today?”

Jiang Chen said coldly. He knew, deep down inside that although the Saint Bone could suppress Nan Bei Chao, it couldn't kill him. He had to rely on his broken pot again. The magma inside the broken pot could eliminate anyone below the Minor Saint Grade. Currently, he still had two more chances to use it. If it could kill Nan Bei Chao, it would be worth it even if it was used twice.

“That broken pot again?”

“My god! Is the broken pot still usable?”

“He is finished, the blonde young man is finished. The broken pot will launch a world-shaking attack and the blonde youth will certainly die.”

.....

The moment Jiang Chen took out the broken pot, the facial expression of many people changed. They had witnessed the power of the broken pot, no one knew better than them how devastating the broken pot was. Li Long, who was at the peak of the Eighth Grade Combat Emperor, was so vulnerable under the broken pot's attack that he was exterminated without leaving any remains behind.

After seeing Jiang Chen's broken pot in his hands, Nan Bei Chao's facial expression turned wary. His instinct told him that the broken pot in Jiang Chen's hand wasn't just a normal pot and the threat of it wasn't minuscule.

...

# Chapter 687 - The Armour of Immortals

---

“I will see how you defend against it.”

Jiang Chen revealed a cold smile. The broken pot had already locked onto Nan Bei Chao's Qi the moment it was taken out. As long as the magma dragon charged at him, Nan Bei Chao had no choice but to confront it directly. There was nowhere to escape or hide. Nan Bei Chao was very strong but Jiang Chen didn't believe that he could withstand an attack from the broken pot.

Hong Long

Jiang Chen instilled all of his Yuan Force into the broken pot, causing a giant magma dragon to rush out. It moved incredibly fast and reached Nan Bei Chao in the blink of an eye, as a scorching heat wave was released. It was enough to destroy everything. This was the destructive Qi that came from the depths of hell. Its force alone was unbearable for the onlookers.

“What?”

Nan Bei Chao's facial expression changed instantly. He could feel an unprecedented aura of danger coming out of his body. He was shocked that Jiang Chen was in possession of such a great treasure, but he didn't panic. He still had a trump card that could be used to defend against the magma dragon.

“Jiang Chen, you intend to kill me with just that? It is far from enough. Armour of Immortals, protect me!”

A glittering light rushed out of Nan Bei Chao's body, its brilliance was akin to a scorching sun. There were even traces of mighty immortal aura rippling within. It was the immortal aura that was from the Qi of the Immortal World. It carried an infinite suppression, rendering everyone to worship him.

Only Nan Bei Chao, the one who possessed the Immortal Soul Physique, had such a pure immortal aura from the Immortal World. Before the magma dragon had even crashed against Nan Bei Chao, a layer of unpredictably divine armour appeared, surrounding his skin. The surface of the armour was covered with a divine talisman and images of immortal mountains as if it came from another world that was totally beyond the capabilities of the materials in this world.

This was the Armour of Immortals that has the ability that allowed one to defend against an unlimited number of attacks. Nan Bei Chao actually had such a great ability, summoning such an armour. However, his current ability didn't allow him to fully unleash the power of the Armour of Immortals. It was merely an illusion, for now.

Hong Long

The magma dragon hit Nan Bei Chao's body directly. It immediately turned into a sea of magma that spread up to a radius of three hundred meters, covering each and every corner of the battlefield. Nan Bei Chao was completely drowned by the sea of magma.

“Kaka, nice kill!”

Big Yellow laughed. It wasn't just him who thought that Nan Bei Chao was surely dead. Many others also thought the same. They had witnessed the power of the broken pot and knew how terrifying it was. Even Li Long, who was at the peak of Eighth Grade Combat Emperor, was killed instantly. Thus, this blonde young man was not going to be an exception.

However, Jiang Chen didn't have the same feeling as them. His eyebrows furrowed instead. The armour that emerged from Nan Bei Chao's body didn't seem like an ordinary treasure. Perhaps, it could even withstand the attack of the broken pot.

Bang!

When everyone had already concluded that Nan Bei Chao had died, a silhouette jumped out of the sea of magma. Who else would it be other than Nan Bei Chao?

The current Nan Bei Chao was in a sorry state. There were a lot of cracks that appeared on his armour. His face was blackened, but he was still alive. Only his Qi was slightly weaker than before, but he was still very far away from his death.

“Jiang Chen, you have destroyed my Armour of Immortals!”

Nan Bei Chao was infuriated. Both of his eyes shot out fire. He had spent so much effort to condense it until it reached its current

state. He never thought that Jiang Chen's broken pot would be so powerful that it had actually destroyed his armour. This was a great loss to him.

“What? Is this dude not dead yet? What kind of armour is that? Did it have such a powerful defence?”

Big Yellow's initially excited facial expression changed, he had never imagined that Nan Bei Chao was so hard to get rid of. Not even the broken pot could kill him.

“Jiang Chen, I will kill you personally sooner or later. Just wait until the entire Mysterious Domain is shuddering under my very feet and I shall see how you can stop me at that time.”

Nan Bei Chao bellowed a vicious threat and turned in an attempt to leave. He had come to kill Jiang Chen today, but he didn't expect that Jiang Chen's fearsomeness was beyond his imagination. With the current situation, he was already incapable of killing Jiang Chen. In that case, he should leave first and have a final battle with Jiang Chen on another day.

“Nan Bei Chao, I'm afraid you can't escape today.”

Jiang Chen's eyes glinted mercilessly. He raised the broken pot again and aimed it at Nan Bei Chao again. However, Nan Bei Chao was already out of his sight. When Nan Bei Chao's body touched Big Yellow's big formation, the Armour of Immortals suddenly glittered with a ray of brilliance and forcefully tore apart an opening from within the formation. The next moment, Nan Bei



Chao was already gone.

Nan Bei Chao's departure was resolute, he didn't even give Jiang Chen the chance to use his broken pot again.

“What?!”

Big Yellow widened his eyes with an incredulous face. The formation that he set up was casually broken by Nan Bei Chao. This was an unimaginable scenario which had rendered Big Yellow angry. This was the first time that it had ever happened.

“Dammit! He could break my formation so easily, what kind of technique did that dude use?”

Big Yellow raged.

“Big Yellow, there's no need to be angry. It isn't your formation that failed you. Your formation wasn't damaged at all. After Nan Bei Chao left, your formation was still as good as before. The reason is because of his Armour of Immortals. That man possesses the Immortal Soul Physique that has an ability far beyond this world's capabilities. With the help of the armour, he could go through your formation easily. Too bad, we have allowed him to escape again today.”

Jiang Chen sounded disappointed, the chance of killing Nan Bei Chao had slipped away from his grasps once again. He had seen Nan Bei Chao's murderous and domineering Qi. Someone like him

would cause chaos in the Mysterious Domain sooner or later.

“This bastard, he has quite a way of escaping.”

Big Yellow gritted his teeth.

“He may have escaped this time, but that doesn’t mean he can escape from us again next time. The coming days will be more exciting because of this. Big Yellow, it seems that we really have to hasten our advancement.”

Jiang Chen smiled and kept his broken pot. Nan Bei Chao’s rate of growth was very fast and it had given him some sort of pressure. Although he was already a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor, he was definitely not powerful enough to battle against the entire Mysterious Domain.

This battle had pushed Jiang Chen’s reputation to the pinnacle. There were many people who had witnessed the entire battle and grew even more fearful of him.

For the following week, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were wandering around in different spatial zones, trying to locate different kinds of treasures. They were mostly disappointed as most of the things that were stored in those spatial zones were destroyed. Nothing was left behind, except for some occasional dark souls blocking their path.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow had obtained great benefits at the

beginning which had drastically improved their strength, especially for Big Yellow who had successfully advanced a few grades. Even with his Dragon-Horse Bloodline, his body would still need some time to digest the herbs he consumed. These seven days were perfect for Jiang Chen and Big Yellow to fully digest and absorb all the herbs that they took.

“We have already been here for eight days. The expedition will last for a month and we still have twenty plus days to go, I’m not too sure if we will get any more benefits.”

Big Yellow licked his mouth. He felt excited to be able to go on an expedition in one of the forbidden areas.

“Big Yellow, the road ahead looks like a forked road. These two roads will lead us to a different spatial zone. Choose one.”

Jiang Chen saw the forked road and said with a smile.

Big Yellow moved a step forward and examined the forked road. One seemed very ordinary and didn’t vary much from those previous roads they had been to. The other one released the Qi’s of the dark souls, as if there were dangers awaiting them inside. It was the Qi of danger that would cause one’s soul to shudder.

“That road is very normal and contains nothing unusual. It would be the same as all of the spatial zones we have passed through before and we will get nothing in the end. As for the other one, it seems to be very dangerous. Of course, danger might really exist inside but I can also feel something good within it.”

Big Yellow's eyes sparkled and locked his gaze at the gloomy passageway.

“Fine. I will follow your direction.”

Jiang Chen nodded. He and Big Yellow didn't fear danger. They had always believed that danger was accompanied by treasures.

Hence, both of them went into the dark passageway and vanished in a flash.

When they reappeared, they were already in a new spatial zone. This spatial zone was larger than any of the spatial zones that they had been to. There were huge ancient palaces that were at least a hundred meters tall. The palace could cause anyone to palpitate. The palace here were all in ruins. Some had even collapsed and fell, turning to dust.

Jia Jia

The atmosphere resounded the howls of the dark souls. It was imaginable that the dark souls here were not weak.

“This place is like a land of death. My mother! It is making me feel uncomfortable.”

Big Yellow couldn't help shivering coldly.

“Let’s go to those palaces and find out.”

Jiang Chen strode forward and entered one of the palaces to find out what had happened here. He and Big Yellow’s speed weren’t very fast and they were very careful with their steps. As they moved closer to a building, two scary dark souls rushed out of nowhere, sticking out their green fury sharp claws. Each of them charged at Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, respectively.

“Humph!”

Jiang Chen made a cold humph and ignited some flames by waving his hands. It incinerated the dark souls instantly. Big Yellow was even more ferocious. His head shone with a golden light, causing his huge body to turn into something similar to an arrow that was shot out from a divine bow. He crashed against the sharp claw and a cracking sound was heard. The unbreakable sharp claw didn’t leave any marks on Big Yellow’s head, but was crushed by Big Yellow’s head instead.

The impact rendered the dark soul to emerge from the darkness, Big Yellow lunged forward crushing its whole body.

...

# Chapter 688 - A Monstrous Dark Soul

---

The dark souls in the Death Mountain were very horrifying. They were soundless and untraceable, they can attack from the darkness at any time. Like the assassins of the Dark Shadow, they could make anyone's defence vulnerable, but this was only applicable for ordinary cultivators. To abnormal beings such as Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, it didn't pose any threats to them because they were more frightening than these souls.

\*Jia Jia\*

Two dark souls were killed, but more emerged. These dark souls were strong. Every one of them had the strength to kill Combat Emperors. However, they possessed limited intelligence, their minds only knew how to kill. In short, they were just killing machines. Any living being that intruded their territory would be treated as their enemy and would be killed at all cost.

“Dammit! Why are there so many dark souls here?”

Big Yellow was slightly annoyed by the numbers of these dark souls, since it was a lot more than the amount they met earlier.

“No matter how many there are, we have to exterminate all of them or they will be always keeping us busy.”

Jiang Chen sounded cold. A long dragon of fire lifted off his hand. He then waved it at the incoming dark souls.

\*Hua La\*

Jiang Chen's flames was the ultimate bane of these dark souls. Furthermore, he was now a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor that could even kill a Seventh Grade Combat Emperor, how could these dark souls oppose him? As the fire passed through the dark souls, they were turned into dust. Ultimately, all of the dark souls were completely destroyed.

The fire dragon waved again, and another batch of dark souls were incinerated into nothing. Big Yellow stood at a far distance and ceased his attack after seeing this and mumbled, "This guy is truly abnormal. When these dark souls met him, it was likely that they had retrieved a misfortune that will last for generations."

In the presence of Jiang Chen's flames, Big Yellow felt useless since before he could attack, all of the dark souls had already been incinerated. It was better for him to crouch here and save some of his energy so that it could be used in times of need.

\*Jia Jia\*

There were many dark souls, and they were coming in all four directions. It seemed like there's more than a hundred of them. Jiang Chen was like a Fire God, he rushed into the group of dark souls and incinerated them bulk by bulk. In a few breaths time, almost half of the dark souls were gone. The remaining dark souls fled aimlessly, not a single one of them dared to move forward.

Despite being a killing machine and lifeless, these dark souls still had some responses in their minds that urged them to escape. If Jiang Chen was a normal cultivator, it wouldn't make them retreat even if he was very strong. The thing that they feared the most wasn't Jiang Chen, it was his flames. It was because of their sensitivity to Jiang Chen's flames that gave them the feeling of meeting their greatest enemy again. Any being in the world would choose to flee if they were to meet their greatest rival. For example, in the case of a cat and a mouse, no matter how large the mouse was, it would still fear the cat. Its natural instinct upon seeing the cat would be to run for its life.

“You sure are cruel.”

Big Yellow shook his tail while approaching Jiang Chen.

“If I am not cruel, then they are going to dig our hearts and livers out and consume them.”

Jiang Chen shrugged, he had no other alternatives besides killing these dark souls.

“This place is strangely populated by many dark souls, there were also a lot of buildings. It seems like this was the place where the Colossal Sect's disciples gathered before they died. Let's go there and find out.”

Jiang Chen said. A man and a dog strode forward to a nearby palace. It seemed to be in ruins, the walls were variegated with marks that are dozens of centuries old. After the place had become



dead silent, the Qi of Death could be felt everywhere. Anyone who walked through this place would feel taut emotionally and spiritually.

\*Ka\*

As Jiang Chen walked into the inner part of the palace, a crack was heard. A skull of a skeleton was crushed by Jiang Chen's feet. The skeleton had been left here for an unknown amount of time, even the bones had decayed to the extent that even the slightest effort could turn them into powder.

“This is the remains of a Combat Emperor who is at least an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor. He should be an outsider who had entered the Death Mountain on an expedition but died on the way.”

Jiang Chen hypothesized, “The Death Mountain is very gruesome. It can only be opened once every thirty years and you can stay for a month before it closes again. So every time the mountain is opened, this place will truly become a land of death.”

This cold palace had existed here for countless years, the stench of decayed bodies was concentrated in the air. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow moved two steps forward and saw that the inside of the palace was absolutely empty, where was the treasure? However, there was a statue in front. It was a statue of a person but the surface was full of dirt, scratches and marks, making the face unrecognizable. Above its head were spider webs, but it was clear that the statue was bald.

“A monk?”

Big Yellow sounded slightly confused. “How could this ancient Colossal Sect be worshipping a monk statue?”

“This is surely not a land of Buddha Sect. It is located in the Western Continent and very few ventured outside. The dark souls we have met before didn’t have the slightest Qi of the Buddha Sect, but it is really strange to have a statue of a Buddha here.”

Jiang Chen felt a little doubtful about this, he suddenly thought of something. “Yes, remember the ancient blood red monument? No one except Tyrant could lift it up. Here exists a Buddha statue, it seems that the Colossal Sect has some kind of connections with the Buddha Sect even if it is not one of them.”

“That’s right, the monument recognized Tyrant.”

Big Yellow also recalled the incident in the magma river. The monument that suppressed the river flow was immovable to anyone besides Tyrant.

“We can’t care that much anymore. This sect existed a long time ago. There must be many items here which are not yet retrieved, and are eventually forgotten.

“There are no treasures here, we should go somewhere else.”

Big Yellow said. If there were treasures here, he would have sensed it.

\*Roar\*

\*Hong Long\*

As soon as Big Yellow's voice faded, a world-shaking roar resounded from afar with an intense 'hong long' sound. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's face instantly changed. That is a combat aura, someone is battling here.

The roar just now was hoarse, they could sense the aura of the ancients that carried the taste of death. However, other than that they had no idea what it was.

"Let's go."

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow swooshed and left the palace. They were headed for the source of the combat aura.

At this moment, in the middle of the spatial zone and the ruined buildings, a giant figure was flaring up. It was a giant skeleton that was a hundred meters tall. It was a huge monster that was similar to those humans who had turned into dark souls. It was hard to determine what kind of monster it was just by looking at its bones. However, its ferocity could frighten anyone. In between its eyes, there's a golden object about the size of a fist that was glittering with light which carried a desolate and ancient aura.

\*Wah\*

In front of the monster, a man in blue spurted out a mouthful of blood. He raised his head and stared at the monster that kept attacking him relentlessly. His eyes were filled with fear, his chest was already dented. It seemed that his injuries weren't light.

“Mother! Why are there so many dark souls here. This big guy is really terrifying. It seemed that not even a Ninth Grade Combat Emperor could hold it back. Alas! I, Guo Shao Fei, has to die here.”

The man in blue revealed a bitter smile. He was none other than Guo Shao Fei, the expedition leader of Nebula Sect. When he mistakenly entered this spatial zone while searching for treasures, he was besieged by numerous dark souls, but because of his strong combat power he had eliminated quite a few of them. However, he had never thought of meeting such a monstrous dark soul here. Its combat strength was terrifyingly strong, especially the golden thing in between its eyebrows. He didn't know what that was, but that thing was constantly providing huge amounts of energy to the monster, making it undefeatable.

\*Dong\* \*Dong\* \*Dong\*

The monster made bony steps forward to Guo Shao Fei. Every step it made shook the land, making Guo Shao Fei to constantly fly backwards. He knew he was no match to this monster. However, his Qi had been locked on by the monster, thus he had no way of escaping. If there wasn't a miracle, he would definitely die here

today.

There was no one who didn't fear death and Guo Shao Fei was no exception, but he currently felt a kind of relief in his heart. Those who stepped into the Death Mountain was prepared to face their deaths if it really came to them. This was the Death Mountain, which had a lot of dangerous places.

“Come on!”

Guo Shao Fei raised his longsword and a murderous aura rippled from the sword. If he was going to die, he would choose to die fighting.

\*Roar\*

The monster made another roar. It stuck out its sharp claw and attacked Guo Shao Fei. The attack was quick and brutal. It reached him in a blink of an eye. This monster was different from other dark souls. Due to the thing that existed between its eyebrows, each attack it made carried waves of energy that was similar to a halo that illuminated layers of light, causing its attack to be more horrifying.

Guo Shao Fei was already in despair. His injuries were so severe that he couldn't even exert thirty percent of his original strength. He was defenceless against the monster's lethal attack. He would certainly die under this attack.

\*Hong\*

At this critical life-and-death moment, a long dragon made of flames descended from the sky. Its body carried electricity which blocked the monster's attack. A fiery long dragon that had a terrifying attack and destructive force appeared suddenly, and its emergence caused the temperature of this spatial zone to increase. When the monster saw the light of fire, it retreated.

\*Hong\*

The attack from the monster collided with the fire dragon. The scary tongues of flames coiled around the monster's sharp claw. It seemed like the monster was greatly frightened as it wailed in pain bitterly.

...

# Chapter 689 - The Descendant of Desolate Ancients

---

That monster's howl contained traces of pain and anger. An ordinary dark soul would have immediately been incinerated if the flames had touched it, but not this monster. Its bones were extremely strong, so Jiang Chen's flames couldn't instantly incinerate it. A golden light rushed out of the golden thing between its eyebrows and deflected Jiang Chen's flames.

Guo Shao Fei was currently badly shaken. He was already prepared to face death after receiving the monster's deadly strike. However, he didn't expect a fire dragon to suddenly emerge at a critical moment. It drove the monster away, saving him.

Guo Shao Fei turned his head and saw that two silhouettes appeared beside him like a flow of light. Those silhouettes were very familiar, a man and a dog, causing his face to reveal a surprised look.

“Junior Jiang, it's you.”

The way Guo Shao Fei looked at Jiang Chen was like how one would gaze upon their own family member. It made him very happy that Jiang Chen appeared at this very moment.

“Guo Shao Fei, you seem to have suffered some serious injuries, take this pill now.”

Jiang Chen's palm flipped and he threw out a pill. It was the Saint Pill of Healing that Jiang Chen had gotten earlier and it was extremely useful to Guo Shao Fei now.

Guo Shao Fei skipped the formalities. He caught the pill and immediately swallowed it without even looking at it. He dared to put the pill given by Jiang Chen into his mouth without hesitation because he believed that Jiang Chen wouldn't harm him or else he wouldn't even have saved him in the first place.

After swallowing the pill, Guo Shao Fei tried to examine Jiang Chen subtly from top to bottom. Then, his facial expression changed. "Junior Jiang, you have already reached the Fourth Grade Combat Emperor after just a few days? Truly amazing! Ya, I have heard that you killed Li Long and Yan Hui, is that true?"

Guo Shao Fei eyed Jiang Chen with mixed emotions and expressions, but it was mostly disbelief. Both of them were part of the younger generation with outstanding talents. Despite the fact that Guo Shao Fei was already an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor, he didn't feel that he was as powerful as Jiang Chen.

"That's right. They wanted to kill me first, so I killed them. They could only blame themselves for their own actions."

Jiang Chen said. The incident of him killing Li Long and Yan Hui had spread all over the Death Mountain. Very few cultivators didn't know of this, so it wasn't a surprise for Guo Shao Fei to know about it.



## Roar

During their conversation, the monster had recovered and its hollowed eyes were fixed on Jiang Chen. Its monstrous aura of death and murderousness were intermixed, surging out of his body as it drifted in the air.

“Junior Jiang, this monster is really hard to deal with. It isn’t the same as those normal dark souls. There is an unknown thing between its eyebrows that supplies unlimited energy to the dark soul to allow it to keep on attacking. I think even a Ninth Grade Combat Emperor can’t to take this monster down.”

Guo Shao Fei said. His eyes were filled with fear. He felt terrified, especially when he recalled the scene just now. If it wasn’t for Jiang Chen’s help, he would certainly be dead by now and not even his corpse would be left. He would be reduced to mere food for the monster.

The eyes of Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were fixed on the monster. They could feel a very powerful ancient Qi from it. They focused their gaze on the golden thing between its eyebrows.

“A very powerful Qi. This is a descendant of the desolate ancients. This beast is unrecognizable anymore. However, the demon soul of this beast was preserved perfectly. No wonder it is stronger than the others.”

Jiang Chen was taken aback.

“It is absolutely a descendant of an ancient beast. Too bad that it is currently a dark soul. Its veins had already disappeared. However, its soul is definitely a rare item. I can sense a slight saint aura from it. This ancient descendant was definitely a Minor Saint when it was still alive.”

Big Yellow was also taken aback, but much more than Jiang Chen was. His senses towards beasts' bloodlines were sharper than any ordinary human. The giant skeleton in front them was an old desolate ancient descendant. Although its bloodline had already disappeared, its demon soul was still a very precious item. Another shocking thing was that the demon soul contained a saint aura. This beast had to be a Minor Saint beast when it was still alive.

“It is able to perfectly preserve its demon soul. This beast is truly horrifying.”

Jiang Chen nodded. At first, he thought that his trip to this spatial zone had gone in vain. But now, the situation had become more advantageous than he thought. Putting other things aside, this Minor Saint demon soul alone would cost an entire city. Furthermore, he saw the burning desire in Big Yellow's eyes.

“Big Yellow, if this demon soul is given to you, how much will it benefit you?”

Jiang Chen looked at Big Yellow. He didn't need this demon soul. A demon soul of an ancient descendant was more beneficial for Big Yellow than for himself. Although Jiang Chen's Dragon Transformation Art could absorb the special abilities from it, the bloodline of this beast might have already disappeared since it had

died a long time ago. In addition, Jiang Chen's current special abilities were already good enough for him. The special abilities of ordinary but gifted beasts might not be useful to him.

It is an entirely different case for Big Yellow. He possessed the Dragon-Horse Bloodline. This ancient demon soul would be beneficial in enhancing his bloodline further.

Big Yellow licked his mouth, with eyes full of light. "I'll directly advance to the Seventh Grade Demon Emperor without a problem!"

Big Yellow was very confident. This demon soul might have been here a long time ago, but it was still the soul of a Minor Saint beast. Big Yellow was a Fifth Grade Demon Emperor now and had a strong pool of energy. Absorbing this demon soul might be very difficult to an ordinary human, but Big Yellow was hundred-percent confident that he could absorb all of it. When that time comes, besides his level of strength, his bloodline would also be enhanced.

Guo Shao Fei rolled his eyes in disbelief after hearing their conversation. It sounded as if this monster was a prey for them. Are they kidding?! Their opponent was a very powerful monster dark soul. Even him, an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor, couldn't match its power. So, what had made these two individuals so confident? Wasn't this just boasting and giving others a headache?

"How can we not get the prey that was brought to our hands? Don't worry brother Guo, although this monster is very strong, I have ways to suppress its techniques."

Jiang Chen revealed a confident smile. If this monster was a descendant of the desolate ancients, he would've run after meeting it and wouldn't dare to stay any longer because a powerful being like this was way too strong for him. Even if he had used all his means, he wouldn't have made a mark on this thing. But now, it was merely a dark soul. Even the most powerful dark souls had weaknesses and those weaknesses would make them be completely suppressed by Jiang Chen's flames.

Roar

The monster gave out another roar. Layers of golden radiance rippled out from its forehead. A powerful anciently desolate aura was released from all over its body. The next moment, it moved very fast as it lunged at Jiang Chen with its terrifying claws, shredding the nearby air.

“Fire Dragon Seal!”

Jiang Chen shouted. Even if he has an advantage due to his flames, he didn't dare to patronize this battle against such a powerful monster. Thus, he instantly struck with the Fire Dragon Seal. The huge fire dragon was like a real dragon that charged at the monster while it roared.

The monster showed a somewhat fearful expression when it saw Jiang Chen's Fire Dragon again. Nevertheless, the infuriated monster didn't back away. Its entire body was covered with a golden light as it crashed against the Fire Dragon head on.

Hong

The land and buildings shook, and a half-collapsed building had totally collapsed. The monster's strength and terrifying power had broken the Fire Dragon. However, the power of the Fire Dragon didn't fade but instead, it turned into a sea of fire surrounding the monster.

Roar

The monster was too powerful. However, it was completely trapped by the True Dragon Fire and the True Lightning-Dragon Fire, causing its rage and Qi to surge. Apparently, the monster was supported by a Minor Saint demon soul, which couldn't be compared to any ordinary dark souls.

Hong

A huge energy spurted out from the sea of fire, blowing off all the fire and causing a big pit to be created on the ground. The buildings in this area were completely destroyed. The monster was carrying flames on its body as it charged again to Jiang Chen and the rest.

The monster was very tough. With the help of the demon soul, its power was unpredictable, but Jiang Chen and Guo Shao Fei had already seen through its weakness. Regardless of how strong it was, it's still vulnerable when it met with fire, which would suppress all of its combat power.

“Big Yellow, brother Guo, kill it now!”

Jiang Chen shouted as a divine sword appeared in his hand. He held the Heavenly Saint Sword, then he turned into a flow of light and slashed at the monster.

Hii!

Guo Shao Fei didn't delay his response. He had been gritting his teeth in front of this monster. Now that it was suppressed by Jiang Chen's flames, it would be the right time to eliminate it once and for all.

Big Yellow didn't move, but the dragon horns on his head released electric sparks, causing the air to look slightly colourful.

Big Yellow was very serious this time. He wanted to unleash the special abilities that he had never used. The demon soul of the desolate ancients' descendant really attracted him. It had made him want to kill it at all cost.

Hong Hong

The monster was staring at Jiang Chen's flames while fighting both Jiang Chen and Guo Shao Fei. They were going to destroy this place if their intense battle continues. However, it was not clear who would get the upper-hand.

The monster was unable to unleash even half of its combat strength, but it was still able to fight evenly against Jiang Chen and Guo Shao Fei. It was obvious how scary this monster was when it was still alive. Of course, it was mostly because it was supported by its demon soul, making the demon soul more valuable.

...

# Chapter 690 - Big Yellow's Special Abilities

---

The piece of land was fully wrecked. Jiang Chen was holding his Heavenly Saint Sword and was continuously attacking the monster. Besides the sharp sword Qi in his attack, it also consisted of a strong light of fire. Flames was the nemesis of the monster, so Jiang Chen naturally had to use that to fight against it.

\*Keng\*

The sharp Heavenly Saint Sword which carried an intense fiery light on its surface, slashed on the monster's claw and produced a metal clashing sound. The monster's claw was covered by a golden light and it easily blocked the sword's slash. The sharp sword didn't make any marks on the claw.

“Ha!”

On the other side, Guo Shao Fei unleashed all of his power. However, his attack power wasn't very strong as his injuries hadn't fully recovered. He pierced his long sword through the back of the monster, but the sword was reflected by a wave of force that was shot out of the monster's bone, it also pushed him forty meters back before he found his balance.

“This monster is truly powerful.”

Traces of blood flowed out of Guo Shao Fei's mouth. He had battled this monster and knew how terrifying it was. Even if it was suppressed by Jiang Chen now, it was still hard to deal with.



\*Roar\*

The monster was mad, it kept letting out roars. Its entire body was surging with power. Its bones were unbreakable. Every part of its body could be used as a weapon, and it would be stronger than any Emperor Weapons. This monster was so powerful that it made Jiang Chen feel baffled on what to do next.

“Shit! This isn’t going to work.”

Jiang Chen couldn’t help but curse. This monster was after all a Minor Saint beast before. Its demon soul was preserved for many years and had turned into the dark soul that it is today. Although it couldn’t unleash the power of a Minor Saint, it wasn’t a monster that an ordinary Combat Emperor could handle. In short, if it wasn’t due to Jiang Chen’s flames suppressing it, they wouldn’t be able to get near it and their only choice was to run.

Even with the help from the flames, it would still be very difficult to eliminate it. If Jiang Chen sacrificed his broken pot, this monster would be incinerated into powder but that was his trump card. He failed to kill Nan Bei Chao with it last time and now he was left with only one more chance to use it, so how could he simply use it?

On the side, Big Yellow was strangely quiet but his Dragon Horns were continuously rippling with electric sparks, preparing for an ultimate strike. Big Yellow had awakened three special abilities up until now. One was the Soul Crunching Tune, another was the

Invincible Whirlwind Spirit Fart and lastly, the power of the Dragon Horns. He had never used this special ability, not even Jiang Chen knew how strong it was.

The Soul Crunching Tune and Invincible Whirlwind Spirit Fart were useless for this kind of situation. The monster was a mere frame of bones, it had no soul nor nose. Thus, he was forced to use his most powerful ability.

“Little Chen, I have sensed that its demon soul had ways of releasing the scorching Qi, indicating that this ancient descendant property was partially leaned to heat. Use your Fire Dragon Seal and Water Dragon Seal simultaneously to suppress its dark soul Qi and the power of its demon soul. Once it is suppressed, I can kill it instantly.”

Big Yellow conversed with Jiang Chen using Divine Sense.

“Alright.”

Jiang Chen didn't say another word and casted his Water Dragon Seal. A huge amount of Heavenly Earth Pure Water rushed out, decreasing the temperature of the battlefield. Both Qis' that were the exact opposite were present at the same time. This scene would undoubtedly give fearful chills to people.

It was like what Big Yellow had just said, the golden demon soul of the monster shook wildly the moment it touched the Qi of the Pure Water. Its brilliant golden light turned dim. At this time, all the properties of the dark soul and demon soul had been

suppressed, it became more infuriated.

“This is the time!”

Big Yellow’s pupil turned brilliant. The Dragon Horns on his head suddenly grew an inch longer, and was marked with divine talisman symbols. Layers of golden light which looked like spider webs rippled out, emitting sounds that were similar to electrical sparks.

\*Hong Long\*

All of a sudden, a heaven and earth shaking sound was created when a seven-coloured pillar of light was shot out of Big Yellow’s Dragon Horn. The pillar of light travelled at a very fast speed, its Qi was divine and it reached the monster in a flash.

\*Hong Long\*

This terrifying attack broke through Jiang Chen’s fire and crashed against the monster’s body. The fact that the monster was completely suppressed allowed this attack to hit, its piercing shriek shivered everyone’s soul. The light pillar that was shot out of Big Yellow’s Dragon Horns was too powerful, it shredded off the divine body of the monster and the huge skeleton fell apart after letting out a deep cry.

\*Owragh\*

Even so, the monster wasn't dead yet. It continued to let out a piercing howls, as the golden demon soul between its eyebrows trembled intensely and the bones that fell apart started to integrate again.

“Quickly! Remove the demon soul from the skeleton, don't let it reform again.”

Big Yellow shouted hastily. After he casted the final move, his energy was almost used up and he became so weak that it is as if he had wilted.

\*Swoosh\*

Jiang Chen had already moved before Big Yellow's reminder. He had discerned the problem by using his eyes. This monster fully depends on the demon soul to live. Even if its bones were scattered, the demon soul could reintegrate them again.

However, this monster was fated to have a sad ending by the time he met Jiang Chen. Its reintegration wasn't going to be possible.

Jiang Chen's speed was fast, and he reached the monster in a blink of an eye. The Heavenly Saint Sword touched the demon soul and easily plucked it out from the monster, and caught it with his hands. He circulated his Dragon Transformation Art and a terrifying Divine Sense penetrated into the demon soul, disintegrating the remaining Qi of the monster into powder.

This was the demon soul left by a Minor Saint. Even with his current level of grade, Jiang Chen wasn't confident that he could drive out the Qi of the monster even if he circulated his Great Soul Derivation Technique. However, this was a descendant from the ancient times, the long years had already turned its soul into a dark soul and even its bloodline had vanished along with the existence of Qi of the beast in the demon soul.

\*Hua La\*

After the Qi of the demon soul was cleansed by Jiang Chen, the bones trembled and fell to the ground and they ceased moving. Jiang Chen and Guo Shao Fei could finally heave a sigh of relief after this, the monster was considered to be thoroughly eliminated.

Guo Shao Fei hadn't recovered from his state of shock yet, he was looking at the terribly fatigued dog that was lying on the ground with a surprised expression. He couldn't imagine how this dog became so powerful. Its special abilities were very scary, it had the aura of a Divine Saint. Even with his level of grade, Guo Shao Fei might not be able to withstand that attack head on.

Guo Shao Fei was an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor, he had seen a lot of stuff. Even an idiot could discern Big Yellow's extraordinary power. To be able to have such a scary special ability, this dog had to be a rare beast.

Jiang Chen turned to look at Big Yellow and asked, "You ok?"

Before, Jiang Chen didn't have any idea of the uses of his Dragon Horns. However, he had finally witnessed the power of it today. That was Big Yellow's most terrifying special ability. Although he was only a Fifth Grade Demon Emperor, the power of this special ability was sufficient to handle an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor, but he could also see Big Yellow's fatigued condition. It only meant that this special ability of his consumed a considerable amount of power, it seemed that all of his energy had been fully utilized.

“Give the demon soul to me so that I can fully recover.”

Big Yellow eyes fell upon the demon soul on Jiang Chen's hand: it was releasing a scorching heat.

“Take it.”

Jiang Chen smiled and waved his hand, throwing the demon soul to Big Yellow. This thing would undoubtedly bring great benefits to Big Yellow. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were like brothers, they had no distinctions between each other's possessions. Big Yellow's enhancement and improvement would be very beneficial for him, since it meant that he would have a capable ally beside him. Big Yellow also possessed the bloodline of a Divine Beast, it would be excellent if he could grow as powerful as the White Tiger.

Big Yellow opened his mouth and swallowed the demon soul. Then, he laid on the ground and started to absorb it. He didn't need to worry about his own safety as Jiang Chen was by his side.

“Big Yellow is really awesome.”

Guo Shao Fei praised him. He kept his long sword and came before Jiang Chen then held up his fists. “Junior Jiang, I am truly indebted to you for saving my life.”

It was clear that it was Jiang Chen who had saved his life. If it wasn't for Jiang Chen, he would have died by now. He would never forget this debt.

“Brother Guo is being too polite. We are disciples from the same sect, we will naturally help each other out when we are faced with difficulties. You backed me up when we were still outside the Death Mountain, remember? I owed you one there.”

Jiang Chen smiled. He had a good impression of Guo Shao Fei, at least this man knew the meaning of unity.

“I think Big Yellow will require a lot of time to absorb the demon soul. It is also a good time for brother Guo to heal your injuries. I have a Dragon Ginseng here. Take it and absorb it, it will be advantageous to you.”

Jiang Chen's gave the Dragon Ginseng to Guo Shao Fei. This Dragon Ginseng was mature. Before they came here, this ginseng attempted to escape but was captured by him. It was collected by Nangong Wentian in the herb garden and Jiang Chen had gotten some of them. The medicinal effect of this Dragon Ginseng was graded highly, it would definitely help Guo Shao Fei. Moreover, Guo Shao Fei received something good out of today's misfortune, he could advance to the Ninth Grade after consuming the Dragon

Ginseng.

“This is a rare Dragon Ginseng that had matured. Brother Jiang, this is too precious.”

Guo Shao Fei’s face changed instantly to one of bewilderment. With his discerning eyes, it would be impossible not to see the value of this Dragon Ginseng. It had already matured and became a fine Dragon Ginseng. It would easily cost a city if it was auctioned outside.

“The most important thing to do now is to heal your wounds. We still have a long way to go in the Death Mountain.”

Jiang Chen threw the Dragon Ginseng towards Guo Shao Fei.

...



# Chapter 691 - Ancient Martial Tower

---

“Alright, thanks then.”

Guo Shao Fei nodded. Since Jiang Chen was so forthright, he didn't want to continue acting polite. He took the Dragon Ginseng and eyed Jiang Chen with grateful eyes before sitting down cross-legged. He began to absorb the Dragon Ginseng and his wounds started to heal. Although there were still a lot of dark souls in the spatial zone, the scariest dark soul had already been eliminated. The remaining dark souls didn't induce fear anymore with Jiang Chen's presence here, so Guo Shao Fei and Big Yellow didn't need to worry about being disturbed while they are in the midst of meditating.

Big Yellow was still feeling tired, but as long as he could absorb the demon soul completely, not only would his drained energy be fully recovered, he would also undergo another huge transformation. His level of grade would advance tremendously, akin to travelling a thousand miles in just one day. Guo Shao Fei was currently at the peak of Eighth Grade Combat Emperor. He only needed one more step to transcend his current grade. He had miraculously escaped death this time. With the Dragon Ginseng's medicinal effect, he would obtain much more benefits other than just merely healing his injuries. He could even push his level of grade to the Ninth Grade Combat Emperor realm. This incident was a blessing in disguise for him.

Jiang Chen looked left and right and saw that there were no other treasures to be found in this spatial zone besides those unpleasantly ruined buildings. There were a lot of dark souls in this spatial zone, but there were no treasures in this area. Thus,

Jiang Chen had given up the thought of seeking any treasures here. The dark souls in the vicinity were hiding in the darkness but they didn't dare to appear as they feared Jiang Chen's flames.

Of course, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow hadn't received any rewards after entering this spatial zone, but after they had obtained the demon soul of a Minor Saint grade beast, it was a bountiful harvest for Big Yellow. After completely absorbing it, he could push his grade to the Seventh Grade Demon Emperor. When that time comes, Big Yellow would be powerful enough that no one in the Death Mountain would dare to provoke him. Li Long and Yan Hui had died, Guo Shao Fei and Mo Sang were on their side, the only person who could count as a worthy enemy would be Tan Zhi Bai of the Tan Family. As long as Tan Zhi Bai was still sane, he wouldn't find any trouble for Jiang Chen under this mountain, unless he didn't want to live anymore.

To say it in another manner, the Death Mountain would become their dominion for the following days and they could sweep through anything they wanted.

While Big Yellow and Guo Shao Fei were still in their meditative state, Jiang Chen also sat crossed-leg. To protect the man and the dog duo, he didn't forget to circulate the Dragon Transformation Art to fortify his pool of energy and digest everything that he had refined over this period of time.

A day later, Guo Shao Fei was the first one to awaken. His eyes flashed with a brilliant radiance. His Qi was stronger than before. Under the nourishment of the Dragon Ginseng, he had completely healed in one night's time and was stronger than before. There

were layers of golden light halo on his outer body. His Qi indicated that he had reached the very peak of the Eighth Grade Combat Emperor. If he was willing to, he could just simply get to the Ninth Grade.

However, Guo Shao Fei deliberately suppressed his advancement while it was about to make a breakthrough to the Ninth Grade.

“Brother Guo heals very quickly. It seems like you’re about to reach the Ninth Grade.”

Jiang Chen smiled.

“Yeah, I have obtained huge benefits with junior Jiang’s Dragon Ginseng’s help, and will immediately reach the Ninth Grade, but I forcefully suppressed the advancement. This is the Death Mountain, if I let my level of grade advance to the Ninth Grade, it would probably cause the sealing formation to reset itself, bringing a calamity upon us. Thus, I have to suppress my level of grade until I am out of the mountain.”

Guo Shao Fei’s face was full of excitement. This trip to the Death Mountain was quite rewarding. It was his biggest desire to advance to the Ninth Grade. When he reached the Ninth Grade Combat Emperor, he would be ranked in the top three on the Sky ranking of Nebula Sect.

Nonetheless, Guo Shao Fei was not tempted to advance his grade because he knew that it would bring a great disaster to the Death Mountain.

Buzz

At this moment, something happened to Big Yellow. This dog's size was big, the way he crouched made him look like a robust barbaric elephant. His eyes were closed. After a day, his Qi was nearly full. The demon soul started to show its effect on Big Yellow. On his outer body, a layer of golden light curtain appeared, enveloping him within and turning into a big golden cocoon.

The Dragon Horn that grew out between his eyebrows released electric sparks. Dense talisman symbols had become more intricate, similar to spider webs.

“Big Yellow is undergoing metamorphosis.”

Guo Shao Fei was slightly shaken. “To what extent would his power reach after metamorphosis? The special ability that he used to attack the dark soul monster was already very powerful.”

He somehow felt fear lingering in his heart when he recalled how powerful Big Yellow's special ability was. Currently, Big Yellow was undergoing a transformation, how powerful would this dog be after it had completed?

As time went by, the big golden cocoon became larger and larger until it turned into a solid gold case with talisman symbols rippling on the surface. The process continued for half an hour until a ‘kaka’ sound was heard and cracks started to appear on its surface.

Hong

Suddenly, a strong wave of energy rushed out of Big Yellow's body, shredding the golden case and crumbling it into pieces. Big Yellow emerged. He looked divine and extraordinary, his veins were continuously circulating the blood of a divine beast, causing traces of talisman symbols to appear on his skin. He raised up his head and roared. It was a mix of a dragon and a horse's roar, the sound wave went through the spatial zone and up to the heavens, it was truly deafening.

His Qi now was many times stronger than before. The absorption of a Minor Saint demon soul had allowed him to reach the Seventh Grade Demon Emperor. It wasn't the only benefit that he got, the Qi of the demon soul had flooded every part of his body, enhancing and nourishing him. It seemed like it wouldn't take long for him to reach the Eighth Grade Demon Emperor.

“Kaka! Nice! Very nice!”

Big Yellow thrillingly laughed while his level of grade was constantly increasing. That tyrannical feeling was so intoxicating. With his current level of grade, he could face people as strong as Li Long and Yan Hui without the help of Han Yan and Nangong Wentian.

“Very good, your body is a bloodline of a divine beast and is gifted in luck. To obtain this demon soul is your luck. Let's go, we will continue into the deeper regions of the Death Mountain.”

Jiang Chen said. Big Yellow's fortune was blooming. It was his great luck to advance to the Seventh Grade Demon Emperor. They were delayed for quite some time here so they had to quicken their pace to reach the inner regions of the Death Mountain. As there were too many spatial zones in the Death Mountain and most of them were empty, people had unnecessarily wasted their time here.

It was certain that many people had already gone to the inner regions of the Death Mountain. Naturally, they couldn't allow any more delays as they didn't want to be left behind. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's level of grade had advanced by leaps and bounds compared to the time before they entered the Death Mountain. Such combat strength was enough for them to swagger in the Death Mountain. As long as they didn't encounter something unusually dangerous in the inner regions of the Death Mountain, nothing could be a threat to them.

Two men and a dog were on their way to the deeper regions. It had already been nine days since the Death Mountain was opened, so there were only twenty one days left.

For the following days, the three of them had flown through three different spatial zones, but didn't obtain anything precious. In fact, they had already gotten used to this situation thus they were not really disappointed.

....

A crowd of people were gathered in front of an old and run-down tower. It seemed to have been here for an awfully long period of time, the surface of the building was full of variegated marks and traces.

Two silhouettes moved forward to greet them after seeing that Jiang Chen and Guo Shao Fei have arrived. These two were Nangong Wentian and Mo Sang. Han Yan and Zuo Ling Er wasn't here. They were probably in the other spatial zones.

“Little Chen, you have all come. This is?”

Nangong Wentian looked at Guo Shao Fei for a few times and asked.

“This is brother Guo Shao Fei of Nebula Sect, the leader of Nebula Sect for this expedition. This is Nangong Wentian, a lost friend of mine. I never thought that I'd meet him again here in the Death Mountain.”

Jiang Chen introduced the two of them to each other.

Guo Shao Fei's respect for Nangong Wentian increased after hearing that this man was Jiang Chen's friend. He greeted him warmly. As for Mo Sang, he didn't need to be introduced. They had been recognized as the genius of geniuses of Nebula Sect and Dark Devil Religion respectively, so they naturally knew each other. He probably had some minor conflicts with Mo Sang in the past as people of the devil religion didn't get along well with other major powers. Nevertheless, Mo Sang was also one of Jiang Chen's

friend, therefore, he would be one of Guo Shao Fei's friend as well.

“Brother Mo, Ah Nan, what's in this ancient tower?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“This is like a Martial Tower that was left behind. It has a total of nine floors, it seems like there are good things inside. But there is a layer of seals outside the ancient tower just like the one in the herb garden. Everyone is waiting outside for it to disappear and be the first to rush into it.”

Nangong Wentian said.

“That's right. This should be the Martial Tower left behind by the Colossus Sect, there has to be a lot of inheritance of their combat techniques. These things are more expensive than a city. If one can get it, one would definitely help their sect to gain fame and strength.”

Mo Sang said.

“So this is what it is, seems like we cannot wait any longer.”

Jiang Chen smiled. He raised his head and looked at the ancient tower ahead. The ancient tower seemed to be in a bad condition. However, since there were nine floors in the tower there had to be some good items left in the Martial Tower like what Nangong Wentian had said.



...

## Chapter 692 - Kill Him!

---

The nine storey tower was like an olden pagoda. It was a Martial Tower that belonged to an ancient sect. There were no dark souls in the vicinity, it was imaginable that this was a highly restricted area of Colossus Sect, ordinary people were not allowed to step into this place.

Jiang Chen's arrival caused another wave of commotion from the crowd. Right now, Jiang Chen has become a popular figure in the Death Mountain, like a great star. The incident of him killing Li Long, Yan Hui and the intense battle he had with a blonde young man had spread to everyone's ears. No one here wasn't informed of Jiang Chen's fearsomeness. In people's eyes, Jiang Chen was an evil star that stirred up many of their nerves. To be precise, the ones who were the most frightened would be the people of Freedom Palace and Skyhill School.

Disciples of Nebula Sect promptly moved forward to greet Guo Shao Fei as a form of courtesy. Now, they didn't have to walk timidly in public anymore. Jiang Chen's achievements in the Death Mountain was not just a triumphant matter for Jiang Chen alone, it also brought glory to Nebula Sect, making the disciples of the sect to feel extremely honoured and proud.

A man in white clothes with a fan in his hand was standing at the nearest checkpoint of the ancient tower. He was Tan Zhi Bai, the leader of the Tan Family's group this time. He stared coldly at Jiang Chen but didn't have any intention of provoking him. Everyone in the Tan Family was informed that Jiang Chen had murdered some of their comrades. It was infuriating to them, especially to the leader of the family, Tan Zhi Bai. The moment he

heard the news, he swore to seek revenge on Jiang Chen for his dead comrades.

Nonetheless, the best response to the matter now was to keep quiet. Disregarding Jiang Chen's power, there were two people who were on par with Tan Zhi Bai. He would be most thankful if they didn't cause him any troubles.

“The seal is getting weaker, seems like it won't take long for the ancient tower to open up.”

Big Yellow shook his big tail and said in a relaxed tone. In fact, he didn't have the slightest interest in these leftover combat techniques and arts since he solely depended on his bloodline to cultivate and awaken his special abilities. However, he didn't want to be left out of the fun.

“Little Chen, and Big Yellow the two of you are freaks! How can your level of grade advance so rapidly?”

Nangong Wentian couldn't help but roll his eyes after sensing the Qi of Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. He can still clearly remember their level of grades in the herb garden. Jiang Chen was merely a Second Grade Combat Emperor and Big Yellow was a Third Grade Demon Emperor. In just a few days, they consequently became a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor and a Seventh Grade Demon Emperor. Their improvement really defied the heavens.

“Amitabha, I have come.”

Right at this moment, a beam of light raced forward from afar. A monk in golden robes suddenly emerged beside Jiang Chen. He was Tyrant, the monk. There were some minor changes with him as well, he had actually reached the peak of the Third Grade Combat Emperor and was only a step away from the Fourth Grade.

Back then when Tyrant obtained the monument, Jiang Chen had hypothesized that there might be a connection between this mountain and the Buddha Sect. Today, Tyrant's rapid advancement had provided him some certainty about his hypothesis.

“Tyrant, not bad! How did you find this place?”

Big Yellow smiled.

Tyrant looked at Big Yellow and became speechless, then he heaved a sigh of disappointment. He thought that his advancement to the peak of Third Grade within these few days was a very good thing, but after seeing Big Yellow, he had nothing to say about it.

“I felt it, it felt as if there is something that I need here.”

Tyrant said while looking at the ancient tower ahead.

After some time, the cultivators that were present in front of the ancient tower increased, especially the people from the five major powers. This made those rogue\* and minor powers' cultivators feel helpless. They already knew that even if there were good treasures

in the tower, they wouldn't be able to compete with the five major powers. However, they couldn't just back off. As the saying goes, if the five major powers were eating meat, it would be better than nothing if they can obtain some soup.

After half an hour, the seal outside the ancient tower disappeared completely. A large door revealed itself. Above the door hung a big name-plate, it was made with rarely seen rocks, and that's why it lasted until now. There were two big words on it. Although it was unclear, anyone could make out that these two words were 'Martial Tower'.

"So this is the Martial Tower of Colossus Sect, there has to be a lot of combat techniques and arts inside!"

A genius of the Tan Family shouted excitedly. He strode forward and kicked the door open using his foot. The large door broke and splintered, a stench of decayed Qi flew out.

"Too rough!"

Tyrant shook his head. "Why are the people from the Tan Family no different from a bandit?"

He didn't try to suppress his voice and he was clearly heard by the disciples of the Tan Family. Some turned and glared at Tyrant, and others gritted their teeth. They couldn't help but think how shameless this monk had to be? Nonetheless, they didn't have any choice but to endure.

After the door to the entrance was opened, many people started to rush into the ancient building. There was a door that allowed them to access level one to eight and there was a different door for the ninth floor, and that door attracted Jiang Chen. He wasn't interested in any ordinary combat techniques or arts, he wanted to find out what was on the ninth floor.

“Come, let's go to the ninth floor and check it out.”

Jiang Chen said as he flew up towards the ninth floor. Nangong Wentian and the others followed suit. They also believed that the good items must be on the highest floor.

Another group of silhouettes appeared and were heading to the ninth floor as well. They were Tan Zhi Bai and a genius of the Tan Family, both being Eighth Grade Combat Emperors.

Two different parties reached and stood opposite of each other at the entrance of the ninth floor.

“Jiang Chen, this ancient tower was found by all of us. We are all entitled to enter and the treasures would be divided evenly, am I right?”

However, his intention to compromise failed to obtain their approval.

“Are you joking? What is the relation between this ninth floor and you, Tan Zhi Bai? This floor has already been taken by us. You

should go to the eighth floor and find something there.”

Mo Sang said with a cold tone. He and Tan Zhi Bai were enemies, so his tone would naturally be rather harsh. He also knew that Jiang Chen wouldn't let Tan Zhi Bai enter the ninth floor.

“Mo Sang, are the things inside here related to your devil religion? Do you think that there are devil arts in this floor?”

Tan Zhi Bai raged.

“I have no idea whether there are any or not, but I'm not letting you in.”

Mo Sang crossed his arms across his chest. A fight would surely begin at any time based on the current situation.

“Tan Zhi Bai, you should go down.”

Jiang Chen said faintly. He initially thought that he could befriend the Tan Family before entering the Death Mountain. Now, he had no favorable feelings towards them anymore.

“Jiang Chen, don't be too excessive! You have already killed two men from my family, I haven't even settled this debt of yours!”

Tan Zhi Bai bellowed. He had already been outside the ancient tower for quite some time. He wanted to see what the ninth floor

contained. However, he had never thought that Jiang Chen and the rest would be the first to arrive at the ninth floor. How could he swallow this insult?

“Is that so? Then let us clear that debt now.”

Jiang Chen's Qi shook as he casted the True Dragon Palm Seal, launching the attack at Tan Zhi Bai. He didn't want to waste any time arguing with Tan Zhi Bai. Also, since his opponent was trying to provoke him, there wasn't anything that was worth discussing. Moreover, he had already created a rift in his relationship with the Tan Family. The number of the Tan Family's disciple that he had killed was merely a number now, it didn't matter to Jiang Chen. In his eyes, Tan Zhi Bai wasn't any different to an ordinary disciple of the Tan Family.

Tan Zhi Bai was infuriated. He raised his head and sent a palm attack, stopping Jiang Chen's incoming dragon claw.

“Brother Guo, brother Mo, Ah Nan, and Big Yellow attack and kill him for me.”

Jiang Chen's Qi was bursting like a wise general controlling the overall situation. Tan Zhi Bai wanted to block his way, so Jiang Chen would return the favor by killing him.

“Alright.”

Guo Shao Fei didn't have the slightest opposition towards Jiang



Chen's command. He immediately rushed to Tan Zhi Bai. He was a notch stronger than Tan Zhi Bai now. He could even advance to the Ninth Grade Combat Emperor at any time. Even if he deliberately suppressed his combat strength, he would still be stronger than Tan Zhi Bai.

Mo Sang, Nangong Wentian and Big Yellow attacked together, encircling him.

None of these four men were weaker than Tan Zhi Bai, and they were even attacking together. Jiang Chen and Tyrant were standing from afar, watching the show. Even if Tan Zhi Bai had three heads and six arms now, he would be a hundred-percent dead.

Argh

A wail of agony was heard as soon as the battle began. A disciple who came with Tan Zhi Bai was killed. He was hit by Big Yellow's head and was shredded into pieces. It was a painful death.

"Bastard, you dare kill my people?"

Tan Zhi Bai raged.

"Who cares about the Tan Family? You have offended us and all offenders will die."

Nangong Wentian gripped his Million Stars Ruler. He didn't care

what the identity of his opponent was. When Jiang Chen gave the order to kill, the target had to be eliminated. Last time, they didn't even hesitate to eradicate a dynasty, so why would they be concerned about a family?

Hong Long

Their combat strength surged to the sky. To prevent the seal from reactivating, Guo Shao Fei forcefully pulled Tan Zhi Bai to the sky. Then, three men and a dog attacked with their full strength simultaneously, causing the half-dead Tan Zhi Bai to spurt blood.

...

# Chapter 693 - Boundless Stars

## Transformation

---

The combined power of four people was too strong. Either Guo Shao Fei or Big Yellow's combat strength surpassed Tan Zhi Bai's, and most of all, they were making a joint attack. The difference wasn't just a grade or two and even if Tan Zhi Bai was the leader of the Tan Family's group for this expedition, he wouldn't be able to defend the attack. He would most likely die if he received these attacks.

Many people looked up to the battlefield, they couldn't help but exude beads of cold sweat, particularly the disciples of the Tan Family. Each of their facial expression was uglier than the other, but the only thing they could do now was to watch the battle. For a battle like this, they couldn't do much to help as it would be the same as seeking death.

“The fight began as soon as the tower opened. This Jiang Chen is surely a savage. He had already killed Li Long of Freedom Palace and Yan Hui of the Skyhill School. Now, he wants to kill Tan Zhi Bai of the Tan Family.”

“That Tan Zhi Bai is surely a fool. It wasn't Jiang Chen who provoked him, he was the one who looked for trouble by getting involved with the treasure on the ninth floor. Isn't he seeking death?”

“Yeah, even an idiot knows that there may be a great treasure in the ninth floor, but no one dared to move up to that floor. This clearly showed everyone's awareness of the situation, they won't

stand a chance even if they go to that floor. It was already considered good if Tan Zhi Bai can get some benefits on the eighth floor. Jiang Chen's team is just too strong, even Guo Shao Fei and Mo Sang are on his side. Even with this fact, Tan Zhi Bai still chose to go against them. Isn't he deliberately putting himself in a predicament? The name of Tan Family intimidates many but it won't work on Jiang Chen."

.....

Discussions filled the crowd. Most of the people realized that Tan Zhi Bai was the one who started the fight. Jiang Chen didn't even intend to fight him until Tan Zhi Bai stubbornly wanted a portion of the treasures in the ninth floor. This would definitely get himself killed. He actually deserved to be beaten half dead.

"Guo Shao Fei, you dare to kill me? I am the leader of the Tan Family's group!"

Tan Zhi Bai covered the bent surface of his chest and bellowed at Guo Shao Fei and the rest. He was afraid that if this continued, his ending wouldn't be pleasant.

"Damn your godly leader!"

Big Yellow didn't care much. He crashed his head against Tan Zhi Bai. His body was as big as a barbaric elephant while his speed was as fast as lightning, and he appeared in front of Tan Zhi Bai in a blink of an eye. Tan Zhi Bai was petrified. He had a taste this dog's fearsomeness just now. He didn't dare to let his guard down, he

waved and struck a hand seal, slapping Big Yellow's head.

\*Bang\*

The hand seal did nothing to Big Yellow's head, it was instantly crushed and turned into powder. Big Yellow didn't slow down, he continued and hit Tan Zhi Bai's body with a 'bang'.

\*Argh\*

Tan Zhi Bai let out a miserable wail and was thrown away like a broken kite. One of his arms was crushed to pieces by Big Yellow. Even though he was injured, he still didn't die after getting attacked by Big Yellow, which meant that he was quite strong.

Guo Shao Fei and Mo Sang exchanged fearful glances with each other, they both agreed that this dog was way too amazing. His head was as powerful as a god weapon.

\*Swoosh\*

Big Yellow and Nangong Wentian would never show any mercy to their opponents. They moved really fast, both of them locked on to Tan Zhi Bai's front and back.

Tan Zhi Bai's eyes glinted with extreme fear. He shouted at Jiang Chen who was looking at him from afar. "Jiang Chen, I don't want to be involved with the ninth floor anymore. From today onwards, we won't interfere with each other's business, okay?"

Tan Zhi Bai had seen through it now. These attackers might be very strong, but they all listened to Jiang Chen. Thus, Jiang Chen was the true leader among them. As long as Jiang Chen granted him mercy, his life would be spared. In truth, Tan Zhi Bai had started to regret his actions, he shouldn't have gone against Jiang Chen in the first place.

“Kill him!”

Nevertheless, Jiang Chen didn't even give Tan Zhi Bai a glance before saying it faintly. His words were akin to the judge of hell, giving Tan Zhi Bai the death sentence.

In Jiang Chen's eyes, Tan Zhi Bai being dead or alive wouldn't make any difference to him, his conflict with the Tan Family was already raised to an irreparable degree. Thus, he should just save his words and eliminate his target.

“What?!”

Tan Zhi Bai exclaimed. He had just realized what Jiang Chen's role was, but it was already too late.

When Big Yellow and Nangong Wentian's attacks reached him, he could sense the unprecedented scent of death. He didn't want to die but he had no other choice.

“Nooooo!!!”

Tan Zhi Bai shouted with all his might until his words faded. He died tragically to the joint attack of Big Yellow and Nangong Wentian.

“God! Tan Zhi Bai is dead! There isn’t anyone in the Death Mountain that will offend Jiang Chen anymore.”

“Yeah, Jiang Chen is too brutal. He is so determined to kill, there is no shred of mercy in him.”

“He is really a cruel man. Ferociously violent. He would kill anyone who obstructed him. From now on, we have to stay away from him as far as possible. Even if we can’t befriend him, we definitely must not offend him.”

.....

Everyone was shocked. Tan Zhi Bai’s death sounded like another alarm to everyone. Jiang Chen’s violent killings had reached a pinnacle. This young man in white looked quite handsome, but once provoked, he was akin to a god of death.

The members of the Tan Family were wailing for their loss. They gritted their teeth at Jiang Chen but couldn’t do anything about it. The disciples of Nebula Sect and the Dark Devil Religion were now at their proudest, they would swagger around the places they had been to. Particularly, when they saw the Freedom Palace and the other two major powers’ disciples. They would immediately swear at them. Once they detect a slight unpleasantness from them, their

arrogance would become tyrannical.

After killing Tan Zhi Bai, Big Yellow and Nangong Wentian went back to Jiang Chen's side. Satisfaction was written all over Big Yellow's face. "Did you see it? That lowly opponent was taken care of by me alone."

"Fine, I'll record this down as part of your contributions. Let's go to the ninth floor and find out what's in it."

Jiang Chen said as he came before the entrance of the ninth floor. The seal had disappeared completely. Jiang Chen gently pushed the door open and an ear-piercing creak was heard. It was probably because it had existed here for a very long time.

A stench of decayed Qi rushed out from inside. They couldn't help but frown because of the unpleasant smell. When they entered, they found out that it was quite spacious inside. Although it appeared to be slightly damp and dim inside, they weren't affected by it at all.

Jiang Chen and the rest looked around the place and found no valuable treasure inside. Only a big bookshelf was placed in the center, and there was at least a dozen of parchments on the shelf. Due to the lack of usage over the long years, dust had accumulated on it, giving people a hard time to see what it was clearly.

"This is truly a Martial Tower, besides the record of combat techniques and arts, there are nothing else here."



Big Yellow felt slightly idle in here. He was thirsting for precious items on this floor, at least expecting to find a chest of holy pills. From the current situation, it seemed like this place was undoubtedly a Martial Tower.

The one who had feelings that were opposite to what Big Yellow had was Guo Shao Fei. His face was full of excitement. He knew that these scrolls were the most valuable stuffs here. He believed that only the fine parchments could be put on this floor and considering that there weren't many of them here, they had to be the best among the parchments.

“Look at these parchments, what was recorded in it?”

Guo Shao Fei was the first to move forward. His palm simply waved to blow away the dust on a parchment and held it in his hand, spreading it open with a ‘Hua La’ sound.

\*Buzz Buzz\*

Countless of golden light rushed out of the parchment as soon as it was opened, turning the initially dim and damp room bright. After it was fully spread open, a buzzing sound was created, and it trembled slightly. This was enough to prove that the records on this parchment had to be something priceless.

Guo Shao Fei's eyes fell upon the first page and saw three big words in the heading ‘Indistinct Sword Art.’ He felt even more excited as he continued to read. Eventually, his body was shaking as if he had obtained a unique treasure.

“Indistinct Sword Art. This is a Saint Grade sword art. I’m afraid that not even Nebula Sect has such a profound sword art. Only those colossal race on the Pure Land would possess such an art. If this news is spread out, it will stir up a big wave. This sword art is many times stronger than the current sword art that I am cultivating. If I cultivate this Indistinct Sword Art, I’m confident that I would be able to breakthrough and reach the Minor Saint grade in just three years.”

“So this is the hidden treasure of the Colossal Sect. If I’m not wrong, all these parchments contains Saint Grade combat techniques and arts.”

Jiang Chen said, but he wasn’t interested in these things at all. As the Greatest Saint, the thing that he would not lack the most were Saint Grade combat techniques and arts. His cultivation of Dragon Transformation Art would surely be more terrifying than any Saint Grade art.

Mo Sang walked forward and pulled out one of the parchments. It was as what Jiang Chen had said, it was another Saint Grade art. However, it wasn’t on par with those advanced devil techniques. Thus, they were useless to the people of the devil religion and Mo Sang didn’t even feel slightly attracted to it.

“Let me see whether there is a suitable cultivation here for me.”

Nangong Wentian chuckled. He simply picked a parchment and spread it open. His Phenomenal Boundless Technique was already

considered a terrifying skill, so he didn't need any other skill. Nevertheless, if he could cultivate a Saint Grade art, it would be very beneficial to his combat strength and grade.

The moment he spread it open, he saw the words 'Boundless Stars Transformation.' These three words caught his attention. After reading the description of the art, he turned a little excited.

“Dammit! This Boundless Stars Transformation is actually a powerful [ruler](#) art. It can absorb the energy of the stars and produce nine times nine (eighty one) styles. It seems like it is perfectly tailored for my Million Stars Ruler!”

Nangong Wentian was really excited. This time, he had really obtained a treasure. Cultivating this Boundless Stars Transformation along with his Million Stars Ruler was a perfect combination.

...

This is the [ruler](#)

# Chapter 694 - The Mysterious Sanskrit, The Edifying Light

---

Jiang Chen scanned through the contents of the Boundless Stars Transformation parchment using his Divine Sense. He too couldn't help but nod with praise, it was a very unusual combat technique. Another good thing about it was that it was perfectly suited with Nangong Wentian's Million Stars Ruler. In short, the art of Boundless Stars Transformation was a complementary skill to Nangong Wentian, it fitted perfectly.

“Ah Nan, this is your fortune. With this Boundless Stars Transformation, your combat strength will be enhanced further. This is a Saint Grade combat technique, it will also help you in your advancement.”

Jiang Chen smiled. Naturally, he felt quite happy that Nangong Wentian had gotten such a great benefit. They were sworn brothers and journeyed together from the Eastern Continent. It will cause Jiang Chen less worry if he grew stronger because the enemies that they would be facing would become more powerful as time goes by.

“Haha, this art belongs to me now.”

Nangong Wentian would never give this parchment to anyone, he immediately kept it. It wasn't easy to find a suitable cultivation technique and art. The one he obtained was a powerful Saint Grade combat art. Both he and Guo Shao Fei's trip to this tower would not be deemed as wasted as both of them acquired a Saint Grade combat technique that suited them well.

“Brother Mo, Tyrant, and you all too, go and find a suitable parchment for yourselves. If there aren’t any, I will keep all of them.”

Jiang Chen said to Mo Sang and Tyrant.

“I don’t need any.”

Tyrant shook his head. His cultivation was the Buddha Sect’s art and Heart Sutra, so he naturally wouldn’t be interested in other combat techniques and arts even if it was of a higher grade.

“The parchments here are obviously unrelated to the devil religion. They will repel my devil techniques, so I don’t need them either.”

Mo Sang smiled. These parchments were supposed to be treasures that one couldn’t reject, but they were all useless to him, or else he wouldn’t let all these precious techniques go.

“In this case, I will keep all the parchments here and bring them back to Nebula Sect for master to manage.”

Jiang Chen waved his palm and kept all the parchments. These parchments were basically one of the hidden treasures of the Colossal Sect. After he brought these parchments back to the sect, it wouldn’t take long for the sect to grow stronger and prosper.

“Excellent. every single one of these parchments would be considered rare to Nebula Sect. Master will be very pleased when he sees these. The benefits they could bring to the sect is immeasurable.”

Guo Shao Fei revealed a pleasantly surprised face. It was imaginable that Nebula Sect’s foundation would be a lot more powerful if the sect possessed these parchments.

“There is another Buddha statue here.”

Big Yellow suddenly looked at the center of the floor and found a God’s statue. This statue was tattered but it still resembled the shape of a monk, this statue was exactly the same as what Jiang Chen and Big Yellow previously saw.

Tyrant was the first to walk towards it. Jiang Chen and the rest followed behind him. This statue was already quite ruined, its face had already become unrecognizable. Tyrant held his palms in front his chest and worshipped the statue.

“Hey? It seems like there is a talisman pattern between the statue’s eyebrows.”

Nangong Wentian sounded slightly surprised. The others listened, raised their heads and saw complex talisman patterns between its eyebrows. These patterns had many twists and turns making it seem like a word.

“This is the Sanskrit of Buddha Sect, the patterns signifies the word ‘The’.”

Jiang Chen said. He used to be quite close to ancestor Greenlotus, he had learnt some Sanskrits and understood them. That was why he could recognize a word out of the talisman patterns.

Tyrant felt slightly shocked at the fact that Jiang Chen could actually make out the Sanskrit, but it made sense to him very quickly as he already knew Jiang Chen for a long time, there was nothing that he didn’t know about, Tyrant was used to it already.

“That’s right, it is a Sanskrit of Buddha Sect, but what did this word ‘The’ mean?”

Tyrant frowned. He and Jiang Chen could distinguish the Sanskrit word, but didn’t know what meaning it carried.”

At this moment, Jiang Chen’s eyes sparkled. He waved his big hand and a Qi wave was created. The dust covering the Buddha statue was blown away. They could see the dense talisman patterns on its body, they were all Sanskrit.

“A lot of Sanskrit, what do all of them mean?”

Nangong Wentian was a little taken aback.

“This Martial Tower was left behind by them a long time ago. This Buddha statue was placed on the ninth floor, so it has to be a

treasure, and these Sanskrit must have immeasurable value. Perhaps it is a very strong Buddha art. With just one look, I can already feel the pressure coming from it.”

Mo Sang said with a solemn tone. As one from the devil religion that cultivated devil arts, his body carried traces of devil aura. The supreme heart sutra of Buddha Sect was their ultimate rival. Mo Sang could feel an unpleasant force just by looking at these Sanskrit, he knew that these Sanskrit were just simple words.

Tyrant’s pupil dilated and shone like the light from the sun and fixed his beady eyes at the Sanskrit on the Buddha statue’s body. There were two more Sanskrit below, they were ‘Edifying’ and ‘Light’.

When these three Sanskrits were combined, they form the phrase ‘The Edifying Light’.

“Tyrant, don’t get excited too early. Look, they are merely words of the art, there isn’t anything that tells you how to cultivate it.”

Jiang Chen reminded his friend.

“These Sanskrit were as dense as spider webs, I can’t make anything out of it, Tyrant, what did it say?”

Big Yellow asked curiously.

“The Edifying Light originated from the supreme Great



Compassion Mantra of Buddha Sect, also known as the Great Compassion Dharani Mantra. This is an ancient mantra that had already disappeared in the history of Buddha Sect, so as the cultivation method of The Edifying Light. Here, it only states the background of the light and the fearsomeness of it after one had completed the cultivation, but there is no mention about the cultivation method.”

Tyrant knitted his eyebrows.

“What’s the use of it then? You already knew these things, without the cultivation method, you are merely nattering it.”

Big Yellow felt slightly irritated and said.

Jiang Chen stepped forward. This is a Martial Tower, anything that was put here must have a great value. How could it be just a basic introduction? He refused to believe the simplicity of the statue. He made two more steps forward, inching closer to the Buddha Statue. When he looked down again, surely enough, at the bottom of the Buddha Statue, he saw another row of Sanskrit. The size of the words was very small, so it couldn’t be seen without attentive eyes.

“The fated one will be able to acquire the cultivation method of The Edifying Light.”

Jiang Chen explained what he saw with a faint tone.

“What are these? There’s still no description about the cultivation method.”

Nangong Wentian started to feel irritated. He didn’t feel anything new from what Jiang Chen had said. Does it mean that only the fated one is able to cultivate it?

“The cultivation of The Edifying Light must be related to this Buddha. If I’m not wrong, that thing must be inside this Buddha Statue. However, this light is a supreme art, only the fated will have the chance to cultivate it. Tyrant, let’s meditate to find out who’s the fated one.”

Jiang Chen said to Tyrant with a smile.

“Okay.”

Tyrant nodded his head. Then he sat down with his legs crossed and his eyes shut. A brilliant light of Buddha spilled out of his body, fully enveloping the Buddha statue with gold light. Jiang Chen also sat on the other side, cross-legged. He circulated his Great Soul Derivation Technique, a spiritual force rushed out and wrapped itself on the Buddha statue like a high tide, seeping into the internal part of the statue.

As for Guo Shao Fei and the rest, all they could do was to stand aside. They didn’t even understand the Sanskrit. They had never come across anything related to Buddha Sect in all the years that they had lived. Thus, the chance of them being the fated one would be very slim, all of them were at least aware of this fact.

“Who do you think will acquire the cultivation method of The Edifying Light?”

Mo Sang asked with curiosity.

“Anyone of them is possible. There are no doubts about little Chen as the impossible always happened to him. Tyrant is an outstanding genius of Buddha Sect, he was the only one who could remove the monument earlier, perhaps he can obtain the cultivation method this time.”

Big Yellow said. He had been with Tyrant for a long time. Despite his arrogance, he had to admit that Tyrant was a rare talent of Buddha Sect. The Edifying Light was a supreme mantra of Buddha Sect. If Tyrant couldn't cultivate it, there wouldn't be another person that could.

As for Jiang Chen, this dude was a freak. Anything that was impossible to anyone was possible to him even if he wasn't a member of Buddha Sect.

\*Weng Weng\*

Jiang Chen's spiritual force and Tyrant's Buddha light had enveloped the Buddha Statue tightly. They were both intelligent enough to try and find an entrance into the statue. Since they couldn't find the cultivation method outside, it should be inside.

The Sanskrit had stated that only the truly fated person would be able to obtain the cultivation method of The Edifying Light. So now, it depended on who could penetrate into the Buddha Statue first and seek the cultivation method.

Jiang Chen's Great Soul Derivation Technique was unmatched in terms of style. One of the reasons that Jiang Chen was able to attain so many achievements was because of this powerful soul derivation technique.

Great Soul Derivation Technique allowed him to sharpen his senses to the peak. He is able to see the tiny cracks and scratches on the Buddha Statue clearly.

Nonetheless, the only way to obtain the cultivation method of The Edifying Light was to use one's spiritual force to penetrate into the Statue, but this is definitely not an easy task. No matter how hard Jiang Chen tried, he still couldn't find the entrance. Tyrant was in the same predicament. He was silently reciting the Lotus Heart Sutra, igniting all the Buddha aura as he attempted to synchronize with the Statue's Buddha aura but to no avail.

However, the both of them weren't done yet. If the cultivation method was easily obtained, they would feel that there's something strange about it.

...

# Chapter 695 - Visualization

---

After a day, cultivators from the first to the eighth floor had left. Most of them had obtained great benefits, especially the intermediary and the minor powers, they had obtained some powerful combat techniques and arts' parchments. Their foundation would grow stronger after those combat techniques were cultivated.

On the ninth floor of the ancient tower, Jiang Chen and Tyrant were as before. They hadn't found an opening for the hollow part of the statue. Big Yellow was bored to death. He was lying on the floor, about to fall asleep. Nangong Wentian was studying the Boundless Star Formation technique. As for Guo Shao Fei, he was putting all of his concentration on the Indistinct Sword Art. Both of them didn't feel that time was slowly passing by. On the other hand, Mo Sang felt uninterested in the parchments here. Also, the Sanskrit on the Buddha Statue gave him an uncomfortable feeling.

“Big Yellow, you stay here and guard them, I will make a move first.”

After saying that, Mo Sang had left the tower and headed to the direction of another spatial zone. With Big Yellow around, the four of them could enter the meditative state without worrying that someone would make a surprise attack on them. Two of the Eighth Grade Combat Emperors of the Tan Family had died, it had given them a blow. Why would they still want to seek them for trouble blindly? That would be no different to seeking death.

Jiang Chen's spiritual force and Tyrant's Buddha light were intertwined together. They were finding their own solution, attempting to obtain The Edifying Light. To Jiang Chen, ordinary combat techniques and arts would not attract him, but this Light had greatly attracted him. If he had the chance to cultivate it, it would bring huge benefits. At that time, he could use the Light to subdue all the devils, and command them.

It was undoubtedly a very difficult task to obtain The Edifying Light. But Jiang Chen and Tyrant didn't give up. They were determined to believe that this Buddha Statue wasn't simply put on the ninth floor for no reason, there had to be a cultivation method here.

As swift as a wink, a day had passed. At this moment, the ancient tower was empty. Everyone had already left after seizing all the valuable materials. Nangong Wentian and Guo Shao Fei were totally immersed in the process of cultivating their combat techniques. Big Yellow was senselessly pacing back and forth on the floor and turned to check out on Jiang Chen and Tyrant at random times. He was disappointed every time. These two dudes were sitting here like fossil rocks, not even having a single sign of waking up soon. It seemed that they hadn't found the cultivation method of The Edifying Light yet.

Jiang Chen's spiritual force had already condensed into an incorporeal form, scanning the entire body of the Buddha Statue for unlimited times. All of a sudden, his spiritual force trembled strongly. There was a crack on the intact Buddha Statue right at the centre, between its eyes.

Weng

A strong buzzing sound was heard. Jiang Chen had no idea whether Tyrant had found the cultivation method, but his spiritual force drilled inside of it like a tidal water.

Inside the Buddha Statue was actually an empty spatial zone. It was like an illusion that didn't seem to truly exist. Jiang Chen had cultivated the Illusion Heart Sutra. Thus, he could instantly conclude that this spatial zone was just an illusion.

Jiang Chen's spiritual force and Divine Sense had fully entered the illusory zone.

Inside here was calm, blue skies and white clouds were above, but suddenly, sinister winds howled and a rumbling sound started to ring. A fierce gale started, black fogs were seen and endless black waves had blotted the skies and sun, even the whole zone seemed like a scene from an apocalypse.

Roar

The sound of roar, howl and wild laughter filled the atmosphere. In an instant, the entire spatial zone was congested with devils and ghosts with scary faces and bare fangs and claws. Countless of them started to wreak havoc in this piece of land. In a few breaths' of time, everything here was destroyed completely and the ground was covered with devil aura.

There was an ancient devil roar that was heard from three hundred meters away. It was a giant enchanted by the devil. It was half a dozen meters tall without any clothes, continuing to roar hoarsely at the sky.

This was an extremely eerie scene. A normal human's mind and body would be completely consumed by it. One would die because of extreme fright as the scene was just too real, as if the spatial zone was a reality. Only some people like Jiang Chen who had cultivated the Great Illusion Realm could see through the deceiving images in this illusion. Also, only he, the reincarnation of the Greatest Saint was able to maintain his composure under these circumstances.

“Na Mo A Li Ye!”

At this time, a sound of an ancient chant was sent from Heavens. Infinite golden Buddha light suddenly appeared above the sky of the spatial zone. Lines of mysterious Sanskrit emerged. Below them were the devils that ruined the land. After being exposed to the golden Buddha Light and hearing the ancient chant, they quickly raised their heads up. Their eyes were filled with fear. They gritted their teeth and grievously howled.

A supreme Buddha appeared in the sky, his body was covered with a golden light from head to toe. He was wearing a Sanskrit robe, but his face was blurry.

That was the Buddha, the Supreme Being in Buddha Sect. After



he appeared, he waved and produced an infinite godly light. These lights separated into many others that landed on the devils like a spotlight. At this instant, all of the devil aura was suppressed, as if the world had been reverted back to its original condition. Those devils whined bitterly and painfully as though they had encountered an unbeatable rival and the fear in their eyes never disappeared.

Jiang Chen's Divine Sense and spiritual force turned into an illusion and drifted to a corner of the spatial zone silently. His eyes didn't blink while staring at the Buddha. Until now, he had already wisely understood that the cultivation method of The Edifying Light required one to visualize. He wanted to record every move of the Buddha in his mind, to recall it in his visualization after that.

The Buddha moved, his mouth was chanting without pause, "Nan Mo he Luo Da Na. Duo Luo Ye Ye."

The Buddha had spat out the profound Sanskrit. Jiang Chen saw it very clearly. A brilliant light as bright as lightning shot out from the fingertip of the Buddha, gliding like a serpent. This ray of light was like the representation of the Supreme Being of the Heaven. It represented light and holiness, totally inhibiting all the blasphemy one might have.

"The Edifying Light."

Jiang Chen exclaimed. He knew that this supreme light was The Edifying Light. His gaze wasn't distracted by anything at all, it was fully condensed by his spiritual force and Divine Sense, focusing on the light.

The blurry face of the Buddha turned and looked at Jiang Chen after casting The Edifying Light. Then, the Buddha waved his big hand, a ray of the edifying light flew out, its width gradually became larger like a brilliant sharp sword. It moved at an extreme speed, piercing countless of devils' bodies in the blink of an eye.

After a few breaths, The Edifying Light disappeared. All the devils didn't dare to act brutally anymore, they had turned docile. Large groups of devils started to kneel down, continually worshipping the Buddha. Eventually, even the giant devil who was far away knelt down. Their faces were filled with pure sincerity and their eyes were filled with repentance.

This scene shocked Jiang Chen. He was deeply startled by the power of The Edifying Light. These devils were all edified by The Edifying Light of the Buddha. After they were edified, they started to realize their wrongdoings in the past, all the wrong deeds that were evil, sinful and unforgivable. It was the Buddha who had saved them. From now on, they would become the volunteered followers of the Buddha, entirely listening to his instructions.

This was way too amazing. If Jiang Chen could possess this Edifying Light, he could use it to edify even a very powerful devil, totally subduing it. It would then be completely loyal to him. Thinking about that divine thought was intoxicating and adrenaline-rushing.

All the devils knelt before the Supreme Buddha. He was the Buddha that had saved the world. He was the legendary Gautama Buddha, the savior of the world. He had recovered the world's

peace and nature from the nearly destroyed world.

Jiang Chen was wholly immersed in that Edifying Light. Before he could really respond, the Buddha and all the devils disappeared with a ‘Hua La’, as if nothing had happened in this place. The entire place had returned to its normal environment. Even those ruined areas were as perfect as before.

His illusion condensed by spiritual force and Divine Sense didn’t leave the spatial zone, he sat cross-legged, combining with the Buddha Statue and started to digest the past Edifying Light.

Each and every one of the Buddha’s movement was replaying in his mind.

Big Yellow saw Jiang Chen’s movement and his eyes sparkled. “Seems like this dude has found the cultivation method. The light in Tyrant’s body also turned brighter, I think he too has found it. This two abnormal beings...”

Big Yellow could detect the changes of Jiang Chen and Tyrant. This was the first change that he had seen these past two days. Big Yellow had reason to believe that they had already acquired the cultivation method of The Edifying Light. This was indeed a thrilling matter mainly because after they had succeeded, he wouldn’t have to stay here and guard them anymore.

Nonetheless, the truth wasn’t as simple as what Big Yellow thought. They might have found the cultivation method, but they would not awaken in a short period of time. Both of them were as

still as fossils and in a flash of an eye, a day has passed.

It had been three days since they started digesting The Edifying Light and finally Jiang Chen's finger started to have unusual motions. A large amount of Buddha light appeared on his body, seemingly as pure as Tyrant. Rays of brilliant light began to condense on his fingertip, gradually becoming denser.

...

# Chapter 696 - The Power of Edifying

---

In the spatial zone in the Buddha Statue, the illusory Jiang Chen wasn't the same as the real Jiang Chen outside. He sat in the sky with a golden light illuminating out of his body. Those were the pure Buddha lights. At this moment, Jiang Chen was like a Buddha. His Qi had undergone tremendous changes and became divine.

Most importantly, it was due to the light coming from Jiang Chen's fingertips. It was The Edifying Light that he had acquired. There was still a big difference between this light and the light that was casted by Buddha. Jiang Chen's Edifying Light was merely an illusion which was constantly solidifying.

Due to the changes that Jiang Chen was going through, the entire ninth floor of the ancient tower was blanketed by a golden light, producing buzzing noises. Nangong Wentian and Guo Shao Fei were shaken, awoken from their state of retreat. They approached Jiang Chen together with Big Yellow.

“A very strong Buddha light. I have never sensed such a strong Buddha aura from little Chen's body before. By the looks of it, he has already cultivated The Edifying Light, turning himself into the embodiment of Buddha.”

Nangong Wentian was startled.

“Brother Jiang really is a rare genius that only appears every ten thousand years. There is nothing that he can't master. Tyrant, on

the other hand, is a true genius of Buddha Sect, his cultivation speed was the fastest, even before condensing The Edifying Light. This made people speechless.”

Guo Shao Fei couldn't help but shook his head as he heaved a sigh. As a core disciple and a popular figure of Sky Ranking, he had a distinguished reputation in the sect. Despite the fact that he had already heard of Jiang Chen's name before when he turned the inner sect upside down, he didn't put that matter at heart because their gap was just too wide. However, after getting in touch with Jiang Chen in the Death Mountain, he had truly witnessed Jiang Chen's fearsomeness. Also, he was confident that with Jiang Chen's presence, the sect would become a super large sect some time in the future.

“Look at his finger, guys. Seems like this is the Edifying Light. As expected, it looks very holy.”

Big Yellow said. Both his and Nangong Wentian's gaze were fixed on Jiang Chen's golden finger. It was The Edifying Light condensed by Jiang Chen. It was as weak as a small serpent now, but the Buddha light became richer while the Edifying Light became brighter gradually.

That was an extremely brilliant light. Seeing the light for a period of time brought a stinging sensation to their eyes. This was the supreme light in the Buddha Sect. The light that could edify all sentient living things. The three of them could feel the holiness of the light, unlike Mo Sang, who felt suppressed by it. In short, this light could only affect devils and crooked beings. It didn't have any suppressive effects on the three of them. This was the path of the

Edifying Light, specifically used against the devils.

“Tyrant’s body also has some movements, but not as big as Jiang Chen’s. Seems like he has also obtained the cultivation method but hasn’t solidified it yet.”

Big Yellow looked at Tyrant who was sitting cross-legged. He had to say, no matter how you look at it, Tyrant really looked like a noble senior monk while cultivating. People who didn’t know him well would be captivated by his deceitful impression and would be entrapped by it eventually.

In a blink of an eye, a few hours had passed. The Edifying Light on Jiang Chen’s fingertip had become visible. In the illusory zone, inside the Buddha Statue, the illusion of Jiang Chen slowly opened his eyes. At the same time, the Jiang Chen on the ninth floor too opened his eyes, as two rays of light flowed out of it, his mouth revealing a smirk. After the long hours of retreat, he was finally able to grasp The Edifying Light and condensed it fully.

\*Swoosh\*

Jiang Chen withdrew his spiritual force and Divine Sense in the Buddha statue. The Buddha light disappeared and entered his body.

“Haha, Little Chen, you are truly amazing, you can even master The Edifying Light.”

Big Yellow laughed with an excited face. Although he didn't know the power of the Edifying Light, he believed that it would be extraordinary as it was found on the ninth floor. Not to mention, Jiang Chen and Tyrant thought highly of it.

“The Edifying Light...”

As Jiang Chen just started to speak, his face changed instantly. A brilliant light rushed out of the Buddha statue. It was so fast that Jiang Chen didn't have the chance to react. Very quickly, he was totally enveloped by it.

The next moment, the light swoosh and faded., it disappeared along with Jiang Chen.

“Little Chen.”

“Junior Jiang.”

Nangong Wentian and Guo Shao Fei exclaimed with a panicked expression. They had no idea what just happened. It happened too quickly. If they were him, they would also be unable to react.

“Dammit, what? What happened? The light rushed out from the Buddha statue and little Chen was taken by it.”

Big Yellow also couldn't figure out what just happened as it was just too fast. Furthermore, they were caught unprepared. Who would have thought that something like this would happen? They



separately casted their Divine Sense to find any clues about the previous incident, but they couldn't find one.

“What now? Will junior Jiang in danger?”

Guo Shao Fei sounded a little worried.

“Danger is everywhere under the Death Mountain and is hard to anticipate, but little Chen is really exceptional and always had good luck. He can overcome any obstacles, so it may not be that troublesome.”

Nangong Wentian nodded. Despite saying that, he still felt a sense of worry. This was the Death Mountain after all and it was full of uncertainties. For instance, when he was trapped in the herb garden. If the Death Mountain wasn't opened every thirty years, he might have stayed here forever.

“I don't think we need to be worried. The Death Mountain only opens once every thirty years. The danger of the future events in Death Mountain will be a lot less now. Most of the dangers were the ancient sealing formations and the dark souls. No formation can stop little Chen and as for the Dark Souls, I guess you guys have already witnessed the power of his flames, which is very deadly to the dark souls. Plus, they have already condensed The Edifying Light and this light is also deadly to the evil dark souls.”

Big Yellow said. He was very confident on his friend. Up till now, his confidence for Jiang Chen had never wavered. He knew how much of a freak Jiang Chen was, he was someone who possessed an

extraordinary amount of luck. If he could die so easily, he would have died a few hundred times by now.

“Then, what do we do now?”

Nangong Wentian asked.

“There is still half a month left before the next opening of the Death Mountain. Thus, we have to move on, we have to go deeper into the Death Mountain to gather as much treasure as possible.”

Big Yellow said.

“I agree. Not to mention, the exit of the Death Mountain will be at the center most part. So, if we can’t reach the inner part of the mountain, we don’t even need to think about getting out of here.”

Guo Shao Fei said. His knowledge about the legendary Death Mountain would naturally be more accurate than the others since he was a native of Mysterious Domain.

“We have to wait for Tyrant to awaken before leaving. We can’t leave him alone here. This dude has already started to grasp The Edifying Light, if we leave now, he wouldn’t have any protection. If someone interrupts him, he would suffer great losses.”

Big Yellow said. When Jiang Chen wasn’t around, he had to be the backbone of the team. This dog could be imprudent in their everyday lives, but he paid attention to every single detail.

Nangong Wentian and Guo Shao Fei nodded. They glanced at Tyrant to check his status and decided that it's not yet the right time to leave. Leaving Tyrant here all by himself was going to worry them.

.....

Jiang Chen was taken away by a ray of light. It brought him to another spatial zone without harming him.

He was thrown into a spatial zone. After stabilizing his body, he started to analyse the environment. He saw numerous mountains with black summits everywhere, surrounding the entire place. Every summit seemed to have existed since the ancient times. Some were in ruins. Dark and death Qi filled the air, precisely matching with the Qi in the other spatial zones of the Death Mountain.

“Seems like this is also a spatial zone of the Death Mountain. I have no idea what that light beam was. What is the purpose of bringing me here? it is probably related to the matter of mastering The Edifying Light.”

Jiang Chen anticipated silently. Everything here looked very strange, there wasn't anything else here but him alone. Despite that fact, he didn't look panicked or nervous. As the Greatest Saint, he had a firm spirit and composure which is incomparable to any ordinary human being.

He still hadn't found anything. He couldn't continue to stay here passively, waiting for something to happen, he needed to find a way out.

With a single jump, he travelled a hundred miles and reached the center most part of the spatial zone, he entered within the mountains. Being an audacious man, he didn't give a damn to the dark and death Qi here before entering the gloomy mountains.

\*Jia\*

As expected, a hoarse sound was heard. It wasn't anything new to him, it was the sound of the dark souls. He raised his head and saw three terrifying dark souls not too far away from here. Their hollow eyes were filled with ghostly fire. They were all formed by the death Qi. The eyes of the dark souls were completely fixed on Jiang Chen.

“These dark souls are of evil property. The Edifying Light can edify any sentient living creatures including devils and ghosts, even crooked beings can be edified. The death and dark Qi here has already reached to such a terrifying extent, so there should be many dark souls residing here. Did the light beam bring me here to test the power of the Edifying Light? For me to edify these dark souls?”

Jiang Chen guessed silently.

\*Howl\*

The three dark souls roared hoarsely. They were very fast and they lunged at Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen didn't have any time to contemplate. He had to put away the thoughts of why or how he came here. Since he had cultivated The Edifying Light, he should test it out on these dark souls.

...

## Chapter 697 - Dark Souls of Minor Saint

---

The three powerful dark souls launched their most ferocious attack at the sudden intruder. They had almost integrated with the environment, rendering them untraceable. Literally like haunting spectres, they appeared in front of Jiang Chen in a split second.

However, the difference of power between Jiang Chen and these dark souls was too big. Jiang Chen was calmly casting his spell when the Dark Souls arrived before him. A ray of brilliant light appeared at his fingertips. It was The Edifying Light.

“Go.”

Jiang Chen ordered. With a swoosh, the light raced out of his fingertips. It went through one of the dark soul's eyebrows and came out from its skull, it then went for another dark soul. It was so fast that in a breaths time, the light had went through all three dark souls.

After that, the initially violent dark souls stopped their movements, petrified and rooted to the ground. A moment later, the ferociousness in their eyes started to fade slowly. The green-coloured ghost fire beneath their skull flickered twice and the three dark souls looked at Jiang Chen simultaneously. Then, their knees fell to the ground with a puff and prostrated with their trembling bodies and were thoroughly subdued.

After seeing their changes, Jiang Chen's disposition became so cheerful he almost jumped. This Edifying Light was really a treasure. Three ferocious dark souls instantly surrendered and they would follow Jiang Chen's order from now on, becoming Jiang Chen's loyal followers.

This power was undoubtedly heaven defying. The Edifying Light was the inescapable nightmare of all the devils in the heavens and earth. The power of the light wasn't about the ability to kill them, but getting the devils edified by abandoning the evil inside them and returning to righteousness, and thus completely giving in to the master of The Edifying Light. Even if Jiang Chen instructed them to kill themselves now, they would execute his order immediately without a second thought.

“The Edifying Light evolved from the supreme heart sutra of Buddha Sect, its power was truly unimaginable. So this wasn’t just a mere description. I’m not sure if Tyrant had obtained The Edifying Light. I have already entered this spatial zone, I have to use these dark souls to test the power of The Edifying Light.”

Jiang Chen’s mouth revealed a faint smile. He gave the three dark souls a glance and said, “Stand up.”

Miraculously, the three of them could understand Jiang Chen and didn’t have any objections. They quickly stood up respectfully.

Jiang Chen shook his body and continued to fly towards the inner part of the spatial zone.

*\*Jia Jia\**

In the Dark, a gloomy voice resounded. This time, a dozen powerful dark souls emerged, blocking his path. These dark souls brought a brutal Qi with them and the sound they produced gave people a sense of numbness on their skin.

Jiang Chen used his Divine Sense after realising his circumstance. The three dark souls who followed him suddenly lunged at the other dark souls while wildly howling at them, they were risking their lives in this attack.

Those newly-emerged dark souls were frozen after seeing their comrades launching an attack at them, but the three edified dark souls didn’t slow down and blew three of the opposing dark souls on the spot, then they continued to charge towards the rest of them.

*\*Jia\**

The rest of the dark souls finally regained their composure. Even if they still didn’t know why their comrades were attacking them, they didn’t dare to let their guards down. With some clatter of noises, they surrounded the three dark souls.

“ Edifying Light.”

Jiang Chen shouted once more. The Edifying Light was casted by him, it raced towards the dark souls. The light was gradually increasing its size to fully cover all the dark souls.

*\*Whizz Whizz\**

The light was like a meteor shower that passed through the bodies of the dark souls. All of them were edified instantly, totally subdued by Jiang Chen. Their knees fell to the ground.

The situation made Jiang Chen very pleased. These dark souls have the combat strength of Combat Emperors, they could be quite scary when they launch their attacks in unison. But after Jiang Chen had edified them, he started to gain a better understanding of it. The Edifying Light couldn't edify every single devil in the world, it could only edify devils that were relatively close to his strength.

The Edifying Light could only easily edify devils if it has the same grade as him. If he encountered devils which are stronger than him, it would become very difficult for the light to work. For example, Jiang Chen was a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor, but he was powerful enough to kill a Seventh Grade Combat Emperor or even an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor, so if he encountered an Eighth Grade Devil Emperor, The Edifying Light can easily subdue it without any problems. However, if he was confronted by a Ninth Grade Devil Emperor, it wouldn't be easy to subdue it and if he wants to kill it, he had to give it his all to find a good chance to settle it.

If he were to encounter a Minor Saint devil, the chances of him killing it would be zero, unless he is lucky and caught the devil totally off guard, only then could he succeed.

*\*Jia Jia\**

More dark souls raged and roared. In half an hour time, Jiang Chen edified roughly a hundred powerful dark souls. They had all surrendered themselves to Jiang Chen. entirely



following his orders.

At this time, Jiang Chen was surprised to find that his Edifying Light had reached the maximum limit. He couldn't edify any more dark soul, he immediately understood that it was because of his own strength. In short, there was a limit to the number of devils that could be edified. Without a doubt, it was impossible to edify all sentient living creatures like the Buddha before in the illusory zone.

Also, the devils he would be facing would only become stronger. The devils he edified would be scarier and their number would be smaller.

"Seems like I have to focus on my level of grade. This Edifying Light is used to edify all sentient living things and because I'm not a member of Buddha Sect, it can't help me enhance my level of grade even if I have successfully cultivated it."

Jiang Chen sighed. He initially thought that after cultivating the light, he could use it to improve his level of grade, but now, it seemed virtually impossible. If Tyrant had cultivated it, he might be able to obtain the blessings from The Edifying Light and increase his level of grade.

In reality, if anyone outside knew that Jiang Chen had edified over a hundred dark souls, and they were all following his commands, most of them would faint from extreme shock. However, this bastard still wasn't satisfied with the result, he truly lacks a beating.

A hundred dark souls made a terrifying army. Jiang Chen was leading this big army now, he had virtually wiped out the entire spatial zone. Now, he was searching for a way to exit this spatial zone. He had already tested the power of The Edifying Light and was quite satisfied with it. He guessed that the reason he was brought here was that he needed a place to test the power of The Edifying Light. In that case, he didn't have any reason to stay here anymore.

*\*Hong Long\**

Combat movements were everywhere. The newly-appeared dark souls were all defeated

miserably, most of them were shredded into pieces which made the battle scene slightly intense.

Jiang Chen's arms were crossed in front of his chest. He was very happy to see such a scene. This edifying light was really a paramount treasure.

*\*Howl\**

At this moment, a howl suddenly sounded from the air. This mere sound trembled the entire spatial zone intensely. All of the dark souls who were still fighting fell to the ground. Jiang Chen's soul also trembled slightly, he could feel his ears turning temporarily deaf. If he didn't use the Great Soul Derivation Technique to block a part of the sound wave, he would also fall to the ground like the other dark souls.

"Minor Saint dark soul."

Jiang Chen's face instantly turned ugly. He had never thought that the light beam would bring him to a spatial zone which had a Minor Saint dark soul. He felt the urge to curse at that light beam.

With his current strength, facing a Minor Saint would cost him his life. Not even his broken pot could handle it unless he use the Talisman of Origin Combat Power given to him by Great Master Ran Feng, but the combat strength talisman was very precious. He couldn't use it, not until he was truly faced with a life-and-death situation. It would be a waste to use it here under the Death Mountain.

Furthermore, the highest level of grade allowed to enter the Death Mountain was an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor. Guo Shao Fei suppressed his advancement because he didn't want to create an accident in the Death Mountain. If Jiang Chen released the strong force of the talisman, it would immediately reactivate the sealing formation of the Death Mountain.

This dark soul was different. It might be a Minor Saint but it was a non-living thing, so it wouldn't bring any impact towards the mountain's formation.

*\*Dong\**

A huge figure emerged after a series of howling. It was a giant human skeleton that is fifty meters large. Its body was covered with death Qi. It looked very gruesome. Its eyes were like two ghost fires that could frighten one to death. This large dark soul merely made a step on the summit of a mountain and it crushed the mountain into powder.

“It has the strength of a First Grade Minor Saint.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes turned red. He had already estimated its power to be at least a First Grade Minor Saint.

It might be a Minor Saint, but it is still considered a Saint. It was a big leap to enter the Saint realm. Anyone who was a Minor Saint had surpassed one’s expertise. His power would become so strong that it was regarded as invincible.

The Minor Saint dark soul in front could only release death and dark Qi. Both its expertise and his power of expertise was gone, but the combat strength of Minor Saint still existed inside of it. Even if it had its expertise with it, it couldn’t do much help as its only priority now was to kill without conscience.

*\*Howl\**

The Minor Saint dark soul continued to howl. It opened its big mouth and blew out a death qi which is similar to piercing blades. These death Qi instantly blanketed all the other dark souls.

*\*Ka Ka\**

Like a wild thunderstorm. All the dark souls instantly turned into powder. The death Qi was replaced by a strong wind. All the powdered dark souls swirled into the Minor Saint dark soul’s mouth and were swallowed by it. This scene was so ghastly, it gave frightening

chills to anyone.

## Chapter 698 - The Moment of Life-And-Death

---

The facial expression of Jiang Chen completely changed. He got the urge to express his anger. If this Edifying Light brought him here to test him, it wouldn't have let him fight this big guy. How could he possibly edify this giant dude using The Edifying Light with his current grade? It was certainly impossible.

His True Dragon Fire, True Thunder Fire and his Dragon Transformation Art could suppress all evil creatures, but the suppressive power of these skills were totally useless in front of this evil giant human skeleton. Even if he casted all of his fiery skills and attack with all of his strength, without a doubt, he wouldn't deal a considerable amount of damage to this big guy. The difference between a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor and a First Grade Minor Saint was akin to heaven and earth.

What is a Saint? As the sages used to say, once one achieved the enlightenment, one would become a Saint. Even a Minor Saint was considered a Saint. Thus, the gap between a Combat Emperor and a Minor Saint was undoubtedly huge. Even a powerful cultivator at the peak of Ninth Grade Combat Emperor would simply be killed by a true First Grade Minor Saint with just a slap.

It didn't even cross his mind that there would be such a powerful Minor Saint dark soul inside this spatial zone. He had already thought that he wouldn't stand a chance against it unless he used the talisman of Great Master Ran Feng. However, if he really used that talisman, the Minor Saint dark soul would naturally be killed. But this would also bring a very big calamity, not only to him, but to everyone under the Death Mountain.

Thus, the talisman of Origin Combat Power was unusable here. He had to use other means to deal with this guy.

Run!

That was the most sensible solution if one couldn't defeat his enemy. Jiang Chen's body swayed and pushed the skill of the Nine Phantom Wolves and Spatial Shift to its limits. He

turned into a green smoke and disappeared in a twinkle. He had moved at least two hundred miles. However, he was terrified when he sensed that the death Qi was still wrapping him. He turned and saw the scary dark soul still standing not far away from him. The distances of two hundred miles that he travelled didn't bring him any further from the Dark Soul.

Jiang Chen circulated his Great Soul Derivation Technique and realised that a shapeless force had sealed this entire place. It was sealed by the dark soul using the thick dark and death Qi. In other words, this spatial zone had become a prison cell that he couldn't escape from, even if he was a smart one.

“Dammit!”

Jiang Chen cursed. The Edifying Light had put him in such a predicament. He had encountered an unbeatable opponent.

*Howl*

That giant dark soul produced another howl, walking ever closer to Jiang Chen. The ghostly fire in its hollowed eyes was circulating, indicating that it wasn't hurried to kill Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen could read the meaning from its eyes. He almost spurted blood because of the insult. This giant thing actually viewed him as a prey? That kind of eye expression was akin to playing pranks and tricks. If the dark soul wanted to kill Jiang Chen from the very beginning, it could just end his life as easy as squeezing an ant, but it didn't make any killing move which meant that it wanted to toy Jiang Chen.

“Go and f\*\*\* yourself, you dare to play tricks on me?”

Jiang Chen raged and instantly casted the Fire Dragon Seal. A giant fire dragon with a long tail charged at the dark soul.

As if it was able to feel the intense flames charging forward, its eye showed a stunned expression as it didn't think that the outsider would be able to cast a fiery skill. It gave off some kind of pressure, the feeling of its greatest rival.

Nonetheless, the dark soul wasn't concerned that much. It raised its cattail-leaf-fan-like hand and softly gripped the incoming flames, crushing Jiang Chen's Fire Dragon instantly, making it dissipate in the air.

The result was as expected. He didn't want to continue battling with it because he knew that their difference in power was just too great. He was certainly not its match, so he better turn tail and ran.

*Hong Long*

While fleeing, he was constantly casting his Fire Dragon Seal, but too bad, it didn't have any effect on the dark soul at all. Every strike of the Fire Dragon was instantly crushed by it. Another infuriating thing was that no matter how fast Jiang Chen ran, he couldn't leave it behind. It always stuck to him.

The dark soul didn't attempt to attack, it just crushed Jiang Chen's Fire Dragon strike continuously. This situation was a huge humiliation for Jiang Chen. He had the feeling of being toyed. This dark soul could kill him with just a simple attack, but it hadn't attacked until now. It seemed like it would only kill him after it was satisfied with its toy.

"This isn't going anywhere. I can't escape from its grip, seems like I can only confront it head-on."

Jiang Chen's eyes revealed a violent expression. His death was certain, facing such a circumstance. If he was replaced by an ordinary human, he would be paralyzed from extreme shock or would even be in despair. Jiang Chen, the Greatest Saint of the world, could undoubtedly maintain his calmness and cool-headedness under such a life-threatening situation. It is because only a calm mind could handle things properly.

*Swoosh*

Jiang Chen immediately stopped and turned to face the dark soul. He pointed at the dark soul and said loudly, "Big dude, I dare you to have a real fight with me!"

Jiang Chen knew that the dark soul understood him. A Minor Saint grade being. Even it was dead, its soul was conscious. In other words, the dark soul was also a living creature but in a special way. The dark soul in front of him was only a mere human skeleton, but its intelligence was not any lower than a human being or else it wouldn't be able to toy with Jiang Chen.

The dark soul didn't expect that this human would suddenly halt and dare to challenge him. From its point of view, its opponent should be running away for his life. Now, it seemed like the human had already known his end, so he had completely given up his life.

*Jia*

The dark soul made a deep howl. The toying intention in its eyes disappeared and was replaced by a strong killing intent. Since its opponent had provoked it, he was definitely seeking death, so it should just fulfill his death wish as anymore toying would be meaningless.

A cold energy shot out from its body, instantly locking Jiang Chen, eliminating all of his chances to escape. The next moment, it raised its giant palm and slammed on Jiang Chen.

"Humph!"

Jiang Chen made a cold humph. He could feel the force that was as heavy as a mountain weighing down on him, but he too made a counter-attack because he was aware that if he didn't make any attempts, he would be slammed to death.

Also, he could feel that this strike from the dark soul wasn't its most powerful attack. Perhaps, it thought that killing someone like him wouldn't require its full strength and this had given Jiang Chen a chance.



Jiang Chen exerted his full strength, and circulated the Dragon Transformation Art to the fullest, striking out with a True Dragon Palm. A giant blood-red dragon claw rushed out, blocking the incoming the dark soul's giant sharp claw.

### *Hong Long*

The heaven and earth were shaken. Jiang Chen's True Dragon Palm was directly destroyed and the giant palm crushed down on him. He let out a wail when his body was slammed by it.

The solid ground was slammed into a big pit. In the big pit was a man stained with blood, with many parts of his body shredded, having sustained serious injuries. He was Jiang Chen. If it were someone else, he would be crushed into meat paste and die instantly.

However, Jiang Chen's strong physique wasn't merely because of the Dragon Transformation Art. Passing the tribulation three times was also another reason for it. Every lightning tribulation had strengthened and toughened his physique by a notch. This was why he chose to face the dark soul head on. To say it bluntly, Jiang Chen was risking his life.

At this moment, Jiang Chen forcefully bore the pain in his body. He laid there, motionless. He had kept all of his Qi. He was no different from a dead man, based on seeing him from a distance. However, under his body, a brilliant light was glimmering between his fingers.

This was Jiang Chen's last resort. If the dark soul was not duped by it, he had no other choice but to use the Talisman of Origin Combat Power as he couldn't die here, no matter what.

### *Jia*

The dark soul produced a satisfied sound. It came to the edge of the big pit. After seeing Jiang Chen's condition, it had no doubt about it. Its skeletal mouth opened a few times. Obviously, it was laughing heartily.

From the looks of it, it had confirmed that Jiang Chen was certainly dead. There were no doubts about it because their gap in power was just way too wide. It was very confident that the palm attack had slammed a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor to death even without even using its full strength.

### *Hua La*

The death and dark Qi surrounding it was kept inside its body. It was like what Jiang Chen had expected. The dark soul had completely loosened its guard now. Its body bent down and extended its giant arm towards Jiang Chen's heart, wanting to eat it.

The moment the sharp claw of the dark soul touched Jiang Chen, the supposedly dead Jiang Chen moved. He forcefully bore the pain from his injuries and twisted with lightning speed. His finger was like a sword as The Edifying Light shot out like a meteor shower. This sudden change caught the dark soul unprepared. It was stunned, causing Jiang Chen to succeed. The Edifying Light shot between its eyebrows, akin to a serpent drilling in.

### *Howl*

A moment later, the dark soul howled madly. Both of its hands were grabbing its skull and constantly hammering it, wanting to squeeze out The Edifying Light. It could feel the fearsomeness of that thing and it was going to forcefully subdue him.

Jiang Chen took the chance and jumped out of the big pit. Without saying a word, he quickly retrieved a large amount of Saint Grade healing medicine and a fine holy medicine obtained from the herb garden and swallowed it all in one shot. At the same time, he circulated his Dragon Transformation Art, starting to treat his own injuries.

The injury was very serious. All of his internal organs were shaken badly, but he was fortunate to have the Dragon Transformation Art that was recovering his injuries incessantly. Including a large amount of pills, his speed of recovery was amazing.

*Howl*

The dark soul roared. It was battling intensely with The Edifying Light, determined to get it out of its head.

## Chapter 699 - No Way to Retreat

---

The process of defeating the dark soul was entirely based on Jiang Chen's resourcefulness and bravery in his attempt. His battle strategy was marvellous. He had already known that, besides using the Talisman of Origin Combat Power, he could also depend on the strength of The Edifying Light. It would be the worst choice to use the talisman unless he was faced with a truly life-threatening situation.

Thus, he had planned to use The Edifying Light to get rid of it by provoking and letting it strike first. His True Dragon Palm had defended a part of its attack and the remaining was borne by his body. He had estimated the power of the dark soul and his physical endurance at the same time. He would be able to bear it using his physique.

He had also planned to act dead so that the dark soul would let its guard down. When it wanted to dig his heart out for consumption, it would be caught unprepared for any unexpected attacks, which was the moment that Jiang Chen had betted on. He then used The Edifying Light to shoot through its body at lightning speed. If the dark soul was on guard, his Edifying Light wouldn't be able to get near it.

The truth was, all of these was according to Jiang Chen's plan. The Dark Soul had underestimated him and was surprise-attacked by him.

The Edifying Light was the greatest foe of all evil creatures. Even an evil Minor Saint couldn't escape its fate after being edified by the light.

However, it's either that the dark soul was just too strong or Jiang Chen's level of grade was just too weak. The Edifying Light was not as powerful as he had thought. After the light had entered its body, it wasn't edified immediately like the previous dark souls.

*Howl Howl*

The dark soul shouted madly, causing this piece of land to be ruined. Both of its hands were holding its skull, scratching and rubbing its head. The ghostly fire in its hollowed eyes

had become blood-red. It seemed very ferocious and looked as if it was in a very agonising situation, suffering an unprecedented torture. It didn't even dare to relax as a slight relaxation would cause it to be edified.

Jiang Chen was standing far away, healing his wounds. His eyes were observing the dark soul's response without even a blinking. He too didn't dare to loosen his guard.

*Jia Jia*

The movement of the dark soul became quicker. It was constantly hammering its skull using its sharp claw. It produced the sound of tingling metals. Every pounding produced a big spark. Its pounding had actually made The Edifying Light visible between its eyebrows, seemingly being forced out at any time.

Jiang Chen's facial expression changed upon seeing the situation. "This big dude is just too scary and very difficult to handle. I can't let it force The Edifying Light out. Once the light is out, it would be impossible to edify it again and I will be finished. I have to bet on it and see who's greater."

Jiang Chen gritted his teeth. He didn't dare to relax his movements. He had to do his best to edify the monster completely even if his injuries weren't healed yet. Without caring about what the benefits of the dark soul were, it could at least guarantee his life.

He didn't have any hesitations as the consequences would be devastating if the light was forced out. He sat cross-legged, not far away from the dark soul and circulated his Great Soul Derivation Technique. His powerful spiritual force sprang out like a tidal wave, completely blanketing the dark soul. He wanted to use his spiritual force to distract the dark soul's mind, rendering it difficult to force the light out.

"True Dragon Fire, True Thunder Fire, get out now."

Jiang Chen bellowed. He casted a sea of fire that immediately enveloped the dark soul and trapping it.

## *Howl*

Its wail became louder as it was affected by the foreign spiritual force and flames. It sounded like it was suffering an endless torture. The sound was shouted out at full force. Part of the light that was hammered out entered into its body once more.

Jiang Chen was circulating his spiritual force and flames while controlling The Edifying Light. He wanted to use The Edifying Light to completely destroy the dark soul's evil mind and edify it, totally subduing it.

However, the difference was just too wide. This was destined to be not an easy task. Jiang Chen and the dark soul had reached a stalemate. A winner couldn't be determined in this short period of time.

Given this circumstance, Jiang Chen and the dark soul didn't have any routes of retreat. The dark soul didn't spare any effort to deal with Jiang Chen as it needed to fully concentrate on getting rid of The Edifying Light. Once the light had destroyed the dark soul's final mental line of defence, it would be finished. Jiang Chen was in the same situation, he too didn't have any other routes. He had to use The Edifying Light to edify this monster. If he failed to do so, he would be left with only an unpleasant solution, the Talisman of Origin Combat Power and that would certainly cause greater troubles.

## *Howl*

The dark soul's howl was non-stop. There were traces of blood on the side of Jiang Chen's mouth. He was controlling the raging flames to deal with the dark soul while refining the medicine he took in his body and was also circulating the Dragon Transformation Art at the same time to heal his wounds. Their battle was still in a stalemate. None of them were willing to give in.

Meanwhile, in the ninth floor of the ancient tower. Big Yellow and the others were guarding Tyrant and felt worried for Jiang Chen. However, they understood that it was impossible for him to return after being brought in by the light beam into the Buddha

statue. Even if he did, he wouldn't come out from this Buddha statue.

"Where has Little Chen gone to? I am clueless about what is happening to him right now. Furthermore, Tyrant hasn't awakened yet."

Nangong Wentian sighed. Jiang Chen's disappearance had dampened his effort to cultivate the Boundless Stars Transformation.

*Weng Weng*

As soon as Nangong Wentian's voice faded, a golden light glowed out from Tyrant's body. The pure Buddha light was like a tidal wave that had enveloped it. He shouted lightly and opened his eyes. On his fingertip was a brilliant ray of light circulating, but it was weaker compared to Jiang Chen's.

"Haha...The Edifying Light. I have finally obtained it."

Tyrant laughed. There wasn't any reason to be unhappy about it. As a member of Buddha Sect. He knew better than the others what The Edifying Light actually represented.

He was truly a rarely seen genius of Buddha Sect to be able to successfully condense The Edifying Light.

"Tyrant, you have finally awakened. I feel happy that you have successfully condensed The Edifying Light."

Big Yellow said.

Tyrant turned his head and found Jiang Chen missing beside him. He looked around to find him but he was nowhere to be found. In the end, he couldn't help but wonder where he was. He kept his Edifying Light then stood up and asked, "Where is Little Chen?"

When he stood up, it made them stunned. Nangong Wentian looked at the Buddha statue and couldn't help but ask, "How come you are fine?"

"Why would I be not fine? I have found The Edifying Light and will reach the Fourth Grade Combat Emperor in no time. I am fine."

Tyrant gestured his hands pompously.

"Dammit! Why did it become like this? Little Chen has also condensed The Edifying Light but a mysterious light beam rushed out of the Buddha Statue and pulled him in, causing him to disappear, but you are fine..."

Big Yellow was full of doubts now.



## Chapter 700 - A Plot

---

“What? You said Little Chen had also obtained The Edifying Light?”

Tyrant couldn't help but feel shock, then he rolled his eyes, admitting silently that Jiang Chen was a monster grade being. Jiang Chen had acquired The Edifying Light despite the fact that he wasn't a member of the Buddha Sect. This was truly a miracle. Tyrant could also not stand Jiang Chen obtaining The Edifying Light earlier than him, this gave him quite a blow.

However, he still felt relieved about it as he had known Jiang Chen for quite a while. Tyrant knew the miracles that Jiang Chen had created all this while, it was senseless to be compared with him.

“But, why would a light beam rush out and take Little Chen away? Where did it brought him? Is it related to edifying?”

Tyrant had many doubts that needed to be answered. If there were peculiar things that happened, it should've happened to the both of them since they obtained The Edifying Light together. Instead, the light beam had only taken Jiang Chen away, it truly sounded strange.

“The Edifying Light is a supreme existence. Is it because junior Jiang isn't a Buddha Sect's disciple and the light beam is there to punish him for cultivating The Edifying Light?”

Guo Shao Fei said while frowning. Big Yellow and Nangong Wentian were silent for a moment. What Guo Shao Fei said wasn't unreasonable. Jiang Chen wasn't a member of Buddha Sect but Tyrant was, so it was natural that he wouldn't encounter any problems while cultivating The Edifying Light, but only Jiang Chen disappeared without any reason.

“Don't worry. That kid won't die. He can deal with anything even if it is an extremely difficult problem. We don't have to stay here worrying about him, even if we exhaust all our minds worrying for him, it will not solve anything. Moreover, we don't even know where he has gone to, which makes it impossible for us to help him.”

Big Yellow shook his head. Although he was also worried for Jiang Chen, he had confidence in him because he followed Jiang Chen the longest. Thus, he naturally knew his friend's capability. They had encountered many life threatening situations, but they still survived and continued on their path.

"That's right, not even the lightning tribulation can kill Little Chen. He is a heaven defying being, he won't die easily. We don't have to worry. We should take care of ourselves now. We have been in this ancient tower for three days. Half of the period had already passed since the opening of the Death Mountain. We should continue moving into the deeper regions of the Death Mountain or we'll be finished if we are not at the exit when the next opening comes. I don't want to be trapped here for another thirty years. I think Little Chen will meet us there when that time comes."

Nangong Wentian said. He had already gotten bored of staying under this mountain, any longer would really drive him mad. He wanted to go out of the mountain so badly and look at the situation and environment of the Divine Continent. If he had to stay in this mountain for another thirty years, he would rather die.

"Hold on for a moment, let me advance first."

Tyrant sat down quickly. A wave of Qi started to fluctuate in his body. The scene rendered the three of them to have the urge to beat him up.

However, he was really abnormal. When he said advance, he really did advance. Buddha light glowed out from his body. Then, he reached the Fourth Grade Combat Emperor. However, his Qi didn't pause after that, it continued to rise until he reached the peak of the Fourth Grade.

It was The Edifying Light that assisted Tyrant in his advancement. The Edifying Light originated from the Great Compassion Mantra, it could bring endless benefits to any disciple of Buddha Sect. Tyrant was different from Jiang Chen as he was a legitimate disciple of the Buddha Sect who was always filled with Buddha light and without a single impurity. That was why he could obtain such great benefits from it. It could be said that the first being that The Edifying Light cleansed after it was fully condensed was Tyrant's soul.

“Alright, I have finished my advancement, we can go now.”

Tyrant gently patted his backside and stood up. With a sway of his body, he flew out of the ancient tower. Big Yellow wasn't affected by it but Nangong Wentian and Guo Shao Fei were totally speechless. The look of the monk really needed some beatings, he made the advancement look so simple as if it was something that could be done effortlessly. This truly gave them a blow.

.....

On the other side—in the spatial zone—Jiang Chen's battle with the dark soul was still ongoing. The dark soul had gone ballistic, the entire spatial zone was filled with its howl. It was using its sharp claws to continuously pound its head—but too bad—he was disrupted by Jiang Chen's flames and spiritual force, which gave it a hard time in focusing its efforts on forcing The Edifying Light out.

Jiang Chen was sitting cross-legged on the opposite side. His entire body was fully blanketed with a pure Buddha light. His eyes were tightly shut, focusing all of his attention in fighting the dark soul. This type of battle was the most dangerous, showing any signs of weaknesses would lead to death.

With the constant circulation of the Dragon Transformation Art and with the help of numerous powerful herbs and medicines, his injuries were being repaired at a very fast rate. The other thing that he felt joyful about was—that as his injuries were recovering—new dragon marks were also condensing in his Qi Sea.

Jiang Chen understood that this was a blessing in disguise. The previous battle with the dark soul had pushed him to his limits—once again activating a part of his potential strength. In the process of recovery, his body was also constantly absorbing the essences of the medicines. These essences were converted into pure energy and was absorbed by Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen estimated that as long as he had completed recovering, he would be able to

edify this dark soul successfully and advance his cultivation simultaneously.

Nonetheless, he wasn't in a hurry. He was firm and calm as he knew that he couldn't be careless or hasty while dealing with such a dark soul. It was fated that this battle would be a lengthy one.

He was trapped in this endless battle while the others were already seeking for potential treasures. However, to Jiang Chen there was no treasure that could attract him now, the giant dark soul in front of him was the most attractive to him.

If Jiang Chen could edify this Minor Saint dark soul and totally subdue it. It would become another trump card of his that could be used without limits—unlike the Talisman of Origin Combat Power of Great Master Ran Feng, which only could be used once.

.....

At the top of a huge castle in the Freedom Palace, Freedom King was sitting on his precious throne. He closed his eyes slightly, traces of golden light was shimmering between his eyebrows. The surrounding was filled with a strong aura with him at the centre. This shapeless aura was of a Minor Saint grade, anyone who stepped into this area would be totally manipulated by him.

At the bottom of the hall, a sturdy White Tiger was lying on the floor with its indifferent look, but Freedom King didn't dare to provoke it. If the White Tiger goes mad, he wouldn't stand a chance—the White Tiger was a lot stronger than him.

At this moment, the air in the hall trembled, followed by a ray of golden light. It turned into a man, Nan Bei Chao.

Nan Bei Chao's face screamed murder. His Qi was slightly unstable and his eyes were insidious.

"Prince Nan Bei, how was it? Have you killed that Jiang Chen?"

Freedom King saw Nan Bei Chao appear and asked promptly.

“Humph! That bastard was already a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor but his combat strength is on par with mine. And he still has a scary weapon in his hand that can unleash a terrifying magma. If I wasn’t strong enough, I would have been incinerated in our battle.”

Nan Bei Chao made a cold humph. He felt very gloomy and aggrieved when he thought of the battle in the Death Mountain. This is the second time that he had failed to kill Jiang Chen. He swore that he wouldn’t let another failure happen.

“What? Fourth Grade Combat Emperor? He was merely a Second Grade Combat Emperor when he entered the mountain. How long has it been for him to reach the Fourth Grade? This Jiang Chen is truly scary, he needs to be killed as soon as possible.”

Freedom King’s face changed slightly. Jiang Chen’s speed of advancement was too quick and scary. He thought that Jiang Chen’s death would be certain when Nan Bei Chao attacked, but Nan Bei Chao was the one who suffered instead.

The fact was that Nan Bei Chao possessed the true Immortal Physique. An extraordinary genius like him was one of a kind, but Jiang Chen was way too scary when they were compared. Jiang Chen, a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor, was on par with Nan Bei Chao—a Sixth Grade Combat Emperor.

“That man will die under my hands sooner or later. Tomorrow, I will go to the Immortal Possessive Mountain to obtain the Immortal legacy. By that time, my progress of advancement will be astonishing. A mere Jiang Chen won’t be worthy enough to be put in my eyes.”

Nan Bei Chao said.

“Alright. If Prince Nan Bei really obtained the legacy, I believe you will become more powerful. Our plan for conquering the Mysterious Domain can be executed ahead of time.”

Freedom King's face was full of surprise. He knew what kind of benefits Nan Bei Chao would get if he entered the Immortal Possessive Mountain.

The Immortal Possessive Mountain was one of the forbidden areas in the Divine Continent. The legend said that the Immortal's possession lied beneath the mountain but those who entered in search for the Immortal's treasure died within. Only a few of them came out, but they had all turned mad.

Therefore, this mountain had become forbidden. However, Nan Bei Chao was a reincarnation of an Immortal Soul, which carried the will of the Immortals. Thus, he could go in or out of the mountain as he pleased.

"Not just the Mysterious Domain, there are also a few large domains that must be under my control. Our first step towards conquering the Mysterious Domain is to eliminate the four major powers' geniuses."

Nan Bei Chao revealed a cold smile.

Freedom King was startled for a few seconds, he couldn't grasp what Nan Bei Chao meant.

"Most of the geniuses of the major powers are currently in the Death Mountain and the highest grade to enter was only an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor. If we secretly send a Ninth Grade Combat Emperor into it and allowed him to release his power, it could possibly ignite the reformation of the seal—bringing disaster to everyone under the mountain."

Nan Bei Chao said coldly.

*\*Hiss\**

Such words had rendered Freedom King to heave a cold sigh. This method was too sinister. If such an accident were to happen in the Death Mountain, no one would be able to

escape from the mountain. To the whole Mysterious Domain, it would be a disaster.